

-
$t$
3
-

## A N <br> $\begin{array}{lllllll}A & C & C & O & U & N & T\end{array}$ <br> OF THE <br> <br> V <br> <br> V <br> <br> 0 Y <br> <br> 0 Y <br> <br> A <br> <br> A <br> <br> G <br> <br> G <br> <br> E <br> <br> E <br> <br> S <br> <br> S <br> UNDERTAKEN BY THE <br> ORDER OF HIS PRESENT MAJESTY <br> FOR MAKING <br> Difcoveries in the Southern Hemifphere,

And fucceffively performed by
COMMODORE BYRON, || CAPTAIN GARTERET, Captain wallis, and Captain cook,

In the DOLPHIN, the SWALLOW, and the ENDEAVOUR: DRAWN UP
From the Journals which were kept by the feveral Commanders, And from the Papers of JOSEPH BANKS, Efq;
By JOHN HAWKESWORTH, LL.D.

## IN THREE VOLUMES.

Illuftrated with CUTS, and a great Variety of CHARTS and MAPS relative to Countries now firf difcovered, or hitherto but imperfectly known.
V O L. II.

> LONDON:

Printed for W. STRAHAN; and T. CADELL in the Strand. M DCC LXXIII.

# $\begin{array}{llllllll}\mathrm{C} & \mathrm{O} & \mathbf{N} & \mathrm{T} & \mathrm{E} & \mathbf{N} & \mathrm{T} & \mathrm{S}\end{array}$ <br> OFTHE <br> <br> S E C O N D V O L U M E. 

 <br> <br> S E C O N D V O L U M E.}

## B O O K I. <br> C H A P. I.

The Paflage from Plymouth to Madeira, with fome Account of that Iland.

> C H A P. II.

The Paffage from Madeira to Rio de Janeiro, with fome Account of the Country, and the Incidents that bappened there.

C H A P. III.
Tbe Paflage from Rio de faneiro to the Entrance of the Streight of
Le Maire, with a Defcription of fome of the Inbabitants of Terra del Fuego.

C H A P. IV.
An Account of what bappened in afcending a Mountain to Search for Plants.
C H A P. V.

The Paffage through the Streight of Le Maire, and a further Defcription of the Inhabitants of Terra del Fuego, and its Productions. 54

$$
\mathrm{CH} \dot{\mathrm{~A}} \mathrm{P} . \mathrm{VI.}
$$

Ageneral Defcription of the foutb eaft Part of Terra del Fuego, and the Streight of Le Maire; with fome Remarks on Lord Anfon's Account

## C O N T E N T S.

Account of them, and Directions for the Pafage Weftward, round this Part of America, into the South Seas.

62

## C H A P. VII.

The Sequel of the Paffage from Cape Horn to the newly difcovered Iflands in the South Seas, with a Defcription of their Figure and Appearance; fome Account of the Inbabitants, and feveral Insidents that happened during the Courfe, and at the Ship's Arrival among them.

## C H A P. VIII.

The Arrival of the Endeavour at Otabeite, called by Captain Wallis, King George the III.'s Ifland. Rules efablifhed for Traffic with the Natives, and an Account of feveral Incidents which bappened in a Vifit to Tootabab and Toubourai Tamaida, two Cbiefs.

## C H A P. IX.

A Place fixed upon for an Obfervatory and Fort: an Excurfion into the Woods, and its Confequences. The Fort erected: a Vifit from Several Chiefs on board and at the Fort, with fome Account of the Mufic of the Natives, and the Manner in which they difpofe of their Dead.

## C H A P. X.

An Excurfion to the Eaftward, an Acconnt of Several Incidents that bappened both on Board and on Shore, and of the firt Interview with Oberea, the Perfon who, when the Dolphin was bere, was fuppofed to be Queen of the Ifland, with a Defcription of the Fort.

## C H A P. XI.

The Obfervatory fet up; the 乌uadrant folen, and Confequences of the Theft: A Vifit to Tootabab: Defcription of a Wrefling-match: European Seeds foren: Names given to our People by the Indians.

## C O NTENTS.

## C H A P. XII.

Some Ladies vifft the Fort with very uncommon Ceremonies: The Indians attend Divine Service, and in the Evening exbibit a moft extraordinary Spectacle: Tubourai Tamaide falls into Temptation. 124

## C H A P. XIII.

Another Vi/ht to Tootabah, with various Adventures: Extraordinary Amufement of the Indians, with Remarks upon it: Preparations to obferve the Tranfit of Venus, and what happened in the mean time at the Fort.

> C H A P. XIV.

The Ceremonies of an Indian Funeral particularly defcribed: General Obfervations on the Subject: A Cbaracter found among the Indians to which the Ancients paid great Veneration: A Robbery at the Fort, and its Confequences; with a Specimen of Indian Cookery, and various Incidents.

## C H A P. XV.

An Account of the Circumnavigation of the Ifand, and various Incidents that happened during the Expedition; with a Defcription of a Burying-place and Place of Wor/hip, called a Morai.

## C H A P. XVI.

An Expedition of Mr. Banks to trace the River: Marks of Jubterraneous Fire: Preparations for leaving the Ifland: An Account of Tupia.

> C H A P. XVII.

A particular Defcription of the Ifland; its Produce and Inbabitants: their Drefs, Habitations, Food, domeftic Life and Amufements. 184

## C H A P. XVIII.

Of the Manufactures, Boats, and Navigation of Otabeite. $210^{\circ}$
CHAP.

## $\mathrm{C} O \quad \mathrm{~N}$ T E N T S.

C H A P. XIX.
Of the Divifon of Time in Otabeite; Numeration, Computation of Difance, Language, Difeafes, Difpofal of the Dead, Religion, War, Weapons, and Government; with fome general Obfervations for the USe of future Navigators.

> C H A P. XX.

A Defcription of feveral other Iflands in the Neighbourhood of Otabeite, with various Incidents; a dramatic Entertainment; and many Particulars relative to the Cuftoms and Manners of the Int babitants.

## B O O K II.

C H A P. I.
The Paffage from Oteroab to New Zealand; Incidents which bappened on going a-Jhore there, and while the Ship lay in Poverty Bay.

28 ᄃ
C H A P. II.
A Defcription of Poverty Bay, and the Face of the adjacent Country. The Range from thence to Cape Turnagain, and back to Tolaga; with fome Account of the People and the Country, and Several Incidents that bappened on that Part of the Conft.

C H A P. III.
The Range from Tolaga to Mercury Bay, with an Account of many Incidents that bappened both on board and afhore: A Defcription of feveral Views exhibited by the Country, and of the Heppabs, or fortified Villages of the Inbabitants.

C H A P. IV.
The Range from Mercury Bay to the Bay of Iflands: An Expedition ap the River Thames: Some Account of the Indians wobo inbabit

## C O N TENTS.

its Banks, and the fine Timber that grows there : Several Interviews with the Natives on different Parts of the Coaft, and a Skirmifb with them upon an Ifand.

C H A P. V.
Range from the Bay of Iflands round North Cape to Queen Cbarlotte's Sound; and a Defcription of that Part of the Coaft.

C H A P. VI.
Tranfactions in Queen Cbarlotte's Sound: Paffage through the Streight which divides the two Iflands, and back to Cape Turnagain: Horrid Cuftom of the Inbabitants: Remarkable Melody of Birds: A Vifit to a Heppah, and many other Particulars. 385

## A N

# $\begin{array}{lllllll}A & C & C & O & U & N & T\end{array}$ OFA <br> VOYAGE round the WORLD, <br> IN THE YEARS <br> MDCCLXVIII, MDCCLXIX, MDCCLXX, and MDCCLXXI. 

By Lieutenant JAMES COOK,<br>Commander of his Majefty's Bark the Endeavour?

## I NTRODUCTION.

IHave in the General Introduction to this work mentioned the reafons why the Narratives of the feveral Voyages are written in the perfon of the Commanders, upon what ground liberty has been taken to introduce fuch fentiments as the events fuggefted to me, and what the materials were from which my work has been drawn up. It has alfo been faid, that with refpect to the Voyage of the Endeavour, I had fill farther affiftance, and of this I am now to give an account.

On board this veffel embarked Jofeph Banks Efquirc, a Gentleman poffeffed of confiderable landed property in Lincolnfhire. He received the education of a fcholar rather to qualify him for the enjoyments than the labours of life; yet an ardent defire to know more of Nature than could be learnt from books, determined him, at a very early age, to forego what are generally thought to be the principal advantages of a liberal fortune, and to apply his revenue not in procuring the pleafures of leifure and eafe, but in the purfuit of his favourite ftudy, through a feries of fatigue and danger, which, in fuch circumflances, have very feldom been voluntarily incurred,
except to gratify the reftlefs and infatiable defires of avarice or ambition.

Upon his leaving the univerfity of Oxford, in the year工 763 , he croffed the Atlantic, and vifited the coafts of Newfoundland and Labradore. The danger, difficulty, and inconvenience that attend long voyages are very different in idea and experience; Mr. Banks however returned, undifcouraged, from his firft expedition; and when hefound that the Endeavour was equipping for a voyage to the South Seas, in order to obferve the Tranfit of Venus, and afterwards attempt farther difcoveries, he determined to embark in the expedition, that he might enrich his native country with a tribute of knowlege from thofe which have been hitherto unknown, and not without hope of leaving among the rude and uncultivated nations that he might difcover, fomething that would render life of more: value, and enrich them perhaps in a certain degree with the knowlege, or at leaft with the productions, of Europe.

As he was determined to fpare no expence in the cxecution of his plan, he engaged Dr. Sulander to accompany? him in the voyage. This Gentleman, by birth a Swede, was educated under the celebrated Linnæus, from whon he brought letters of recommendation into England, and his merit, being foon known, he obtained an appointment in the Britifh Mufæum, a public inftitution which was then juft eftablifhed; fuch a companion Mr. Banks confidered as an acquifition of no fmall importance, and to his great fatisfarion the event abundantly proved that

## INTRODUCTION.

he was not miftaken. He alfo took with him two draftsmen, one to delineate views and figures, the other to paint fuch fubjects of natural hiftory as might offer; together with a fecretary and four fervants, two of whom were negroes.

Mr. Banks kept an accurate and circumftantial journal of the voyage, and, foon after I had received that of Captain Cook from the Admiralty, was fo obliging as to put it into my hands, with permiffion to take out of it whatever I thought would improve or embellifh the narrative. This was an offer of which I gladly and thankfully accepted: I knew the advantage would be great, for few philofophers have furnifhed materials for accounts of voyages undertaken to difcover new countries. The adventurers in fuch expeditions have generally looked only upon the great ourline of Na ture, without attending to the variety of fhades within, which give life and beauty to the piece.

The papers of Captain Cook contained a very particular account of all the nautical incidents of the voyage, and a very minute defcription of the figure and extent of tive countries he had vifited, with the bearings of the headlands and bays that diveriffy the coafts, the fituation of the harbours in which hipping may obtain refreflhments, with the depth of water wherever there were foundings; the latitudes, longitudes, variation of the needle, and fuch other particulars as lay in his department; and abundantly friewed him to be an excellent officer, and fkilful navi-
gator. But in the papers which were communicated to me by Mr. Banks, I found a great variety of incidents which had not come under the notice of Captain Cook, with defcriptions of countries and people, their productions, manners, cuftoms, religion, policy, and language, much more full and particular than were expected from a Gentleman whofe ftation and office naturally turned his principal attention to other objects; for thefe particulars, therefore, befides many practical obfervations, the Public is indebted to Mr. Banks. To Mr. Banks alfo the Public is indebted for the defigns of the engravings which illufflrate and adorn the account of this voyage, all of them, except the maps, charts, and views of the coafts as they appear at fea, being copied from his valuable drawings, and fome of them from fuch as were made for the ufe of the artifts at his expence.

As the materials furnifhed by Mr. Banks were fo interefting and copious, there arofe an objection againft writing an account of this voyage in the perfon of the Commander, which could have no place with refpect to the others; the defcriptions and obfervations of Mr. Banks would be abforbed without any diftinction, in a general narrative given under another name: but this objection he generoufly over-ruled, and it therefore became neceffary to give fome account of the obligations which he has laid upon the Public and myfelf in this place. It is indeed fortunate for mankind, when wealth and fcience, and a
I NTRODUCTION.
flrong inclination to exert the powers of both for purpofes of public benefit, unite in the fame perfon; and I cannot but congratulate my country upon the profpect of further pleafure and advantage from the fame Gentleman, to whom we are indebted for fo confiderable a part of this narrative.

## $\mathrm{E} R \mathrm{R} A \mathrm{~T} \mathrm{~A}$ 。 <br> V O L. II.

P. 13.1.8. from the bottom, for Charearias, read Carcharias.
P. 18. parag. 2. 1. 3, 4, for Trio, read Frio.
P. 29. 1. 6. from the bottom, for within, read without.
P. 124. I. 7. from the bottom, for him, read Mr. Banks.
P. 125. 1. I. for brought them, read brought fix of them.
P. 256. 1. 13. for has, read had.

1. 14. for have, read had.
1. 15. for remain, read remained; and for will, read would.

> V O L. III.
P. 429.1.3. from the bottom, for is, read are.
P. 457. 1. 16. for whole, read bole.
P. 501. 1. 3. from the bottom, for were, read had; and dele that each bado
P. 5 10. 1. 19. for confierable, read confiderable.
P. 626. 1. 10. from the bottom, for tracts, read tracks.
P. 753. 1. 8. from the bottom, for grove, read groove.
P. 762. 1. 9. for or depofited, read or materials that are depofited.

## A N

## A C C O U N.T

 O F A
## VOYAGE round the WORLD.

## $\mathrm{B} O \mathrm{O}$ K I .

C HAP. I.

## The Pafage from Plymoutb to Madeira, with fone account of that IJfand.

HAVING received my commiffion, which was dated the 25th of May 1768, I went on board on the 27 th, hoifted the pennant, and took charge of the fhip, which then lay in the bafon in Deptford Yard. She was fitted for fea with all expedition; and ftores and provifions being taken on board, failed down the river on the 30th of Sat. July 30. July, and on the $13^{\text {th }}$ of Auguft anchored in Plymouth Sat. Aug. $1_{3}$. Sound.

While we lay here waiting for a wind, the articles of war and the act of parliament were read to the fhip's company, who were paid two months wages in advance, and told that they were to expect no additional pay for the performance of the royage.

On Friday the 26th of Auguf, the wind becoming fair, Friday 26 . we got under fail, and put to fea. On the 3 ift, we faw Wednef. jto feveral of the birds which the failors call Mother Carey's Vol. II.

B
Chickens,
1768. Chickens, and which they fuppofe to be the forerunners of

September. Thurfday 1. a florm; and on the next day we had avery hard gale, which brought us under our courfes, wafhed over-board a fmall. boat belonging to the Boatfwain, and drowned three or four dozen of our poultry, which we regretted fill more.
Friday 2. On Friday the 2d of September we faw land, between Cape Finifter and Cape Ortegal, on the coaft of Gallicia, in Monday 5. Spain; and on the $5^{\text {th }}$, by an obfervation of the fun and moon, we found the latitude of Cape Finifter to be $42^{\circ} 53^{\prime}$ North, and its longitude $8^{\circ} 4^{\prime}$ Weft, our firft meridian being always fuppofed to pafs through Greenwich; variation of the needle $2 I^{\circ} 4^{\prime}$ Weft.

During this courfe, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander had an opportunity of obferving many marine animals, of which no naturalif has hitherto taken notice ; particularly, a new fpecies of the Onifous, which was found adhering to the Medufa Pelagica; and an animal of an angular figure, about three inches long and one thick, with a hollow paffing quite through it, and a brown fpot on one end, which they conjectured might be its ftomach; four of thefe adhered together by their fides when they were taken, fo that at firft they were thought to be one animal, but upon being put into a glafs of water they foon feparated, and fwam about very brifkly. Thefe animals are of a new genus, to which Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander gave the name of Dagy/a, from the likenefs of one fpecies of them to a gem: feveral fpecimens of them were taken adhering together fometimes to the length of a yard or more, and fhining in the water with very beautiful colours. Another animal of a new genus they alfo difcovered, which fhone in the water with colours ftill more beautiful and vivid, and which indeed exceeded in variety and brightnefs any thing that we had ever feen: the colouring and fplendour of thefe animals were equal to thofe
of an Opal, and from their refemblance to that gem, the genus was called Carcinium Opalinum. One of them lived feveral hours in a glafs of falt water, fwimming about with great agility, and at every motion difplaying a change of colours almoft infinitely various. We caught alfo among the rigging of the fhip, when we were at the diftance of about ten leagues from Cape Finifter, feveral birds which have not been deferibed by Linnæus; they were fuppofed to have come from Spain, and our gentlemen called the fpecies Motacilla velificans, as they faid none but failors would venture themfelves on board a fhip that was going round the world: one of them was fo exhaufted that it died in Mr. Banks's hand, almoft as foon as it was brought to him.

It was thought extraordinary that no naturalift had hitherto taken notice of the $\operatorname{Dagy} \sqrt{a}$, as the fea abounds with them not twenty leagues from the coaft of Spain; but, unfortunately for the caufe of fcience, there are but very few of thofe who traverfe the fea, that are either difpofed or qualificd to remark the curiofities of which Nature has made it the repofitory.

On the rath we difcovered the iflands of Porto Santo and Madeira, and on the next day anchored in Funchiale road, and moored with the ftream-anchor: but, in the night, the bend of the hawfer of the ftream-anchor flipped, owing to the negligence of the perfon who had been employed to make it faft. In the morning the anchor was heaved up into the boat, and carried out to the fouthward; but in heaving it again, Mr. Weir, the mafter's mate, was carried overboard by the buoy-rope, and went to the bottom with the anchor: the people in the fhip faw the accident, and got the anchor up with all poffible expedition; it was however too late, the body came up intangled in the buoy-rope, but it was dead.
1768. September.

When the ifland of Madeira is firft approached from the fea, it has a very beautiful appearance; the fides of the hills being intirely covered with vines almoft as high as the eye can diftinguifh, and the vines are green when every kind of herbage, except where they fhade the ground, and here and there by the fides of a rill, is intirely burnt up, which was the cafe at this time.

Tuefday $\mathrm{I}_{3}$. On the $\mathrm{I}_{3}$ th, about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, a boat, which our failors call the product boat, came on board from the officers of health, without whofe permiffion no perfon is fuffered to land from on board a fhip. As foon as this permiffion was obtained, we went on fhore at Funchiale, the capital of the ifland, and proceeded directly to the houfe of Mr. Cheap, who is the Englifh conful there, and one of the moft confiderable merchants of the place. This gentleman received us, with the kindnefs of a brother, and the liberality of a prince; he infifted upon our taking poffeffion of his houfe, in which he furnifhed us with every poffible accommodation during our fay upon the ifland: he procured leave for Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander to fearch the ifland for fuch natural curiofities as they fhould think worth their notice; employed perfons to take fifh and gather fhells, which time would not have permitted them to collect for themfelves; and he provided horfes and guides to take them to any pare of the country which they fhould chufe to vifit. With all thefe advantages, however, their excurfions were feldom puthed farther than three miles from the town, as they were only five days on thore; one of which they fpent at home, in receiving the honour of a vifit from the governor. The feafon was the worft in the year for their purpofe, as it was neither that of plants nor infects; a few of the plants, however, were procured in flower, by the kind attention of Dr. Heberden,

Feberden, the chief phyfician of the illand, and brother to D. Heberden of London, who alfo gave them fuch fpeci-
1768. September. mens as he had in his poffeffion, and a copy of his Botanical Obfervations; containing, among other things, a particular defcription of the trees of the ifland. Mr. Banks enquired after the wood which has been imported into England for cabinet work, and is here called Madeira mahogany: he learnt that no wood was exported from the ifland under that name, but he found a tree called by the natives Vigniatico, the Laurus indicus of Linnzus, the wood of which cannot eafily be ditinguifhed from mahogany. Dr. Heberden has a book-cafe in which the vigniatico and mahogany are mixed, and they are no otherwife to be known from each other than by the colour, which, upon a nice examination, appears to be fomewhat le?s brown in the vigniatico than the mahogany; it is therefore in the higheft degree probable, that the wood known in England by the name of Madeira mahogany, is the vigniatico.

There is great reafon to fuppofe that this whole ifland was, at fome remote period, thrown up by the explofion of fubterraneous fire, as every fone, whether whole or in fragments, that we faw upon it appeared to have been burnt, and even the fand itfelf to be nothing more than afhes: we did not, indeed, fee much of the country, but the people informed us that what we did fee was a very exact fpecimen of the reft.

The only article of trade in this ifland is wine, and the manner in which it is made is fo fimple, that it might have been ufed by Noalh, who is faid to have planted the firft vineyard after the flood: the grapes are put into a fquare wooden veffel, the dimenfions of which are proportioned to the fize of the vineyard to which it belongs; the fervants

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1768. then, having taken off their ftockings and jackets, get into September. $\xrightarrow{\text { Sepremern }}$ it, and with their feet and clbows, prefs out as much of the juice as they can: the flalks are afterwards collected, and being tied together with a rope, are put under a fquare picce of wood, which is preffed down upon them by a lever with a flone tied to the end of it. The inhabitants have made fo little improvement in knowlege or arr, that they have but very lately brought all the fruit of a vineyard to be of one fort, by engrafting their vines: there feems to be in mind as there is in matter, a kind of vis inertix, which refifts the firlt impulfe to change. He who propofes to affirt the artificer or the hufbandman by a new application of the principles of philofophy, or the powers of mechanifm, will find, that his having hitherto done without them, will be a flonger motive for continuing to do without them fill, than any advantage, however manifeft and confiderable, for adopting the improvement. Wherever there is ignorance there is prcjudice; and the common people of all nations are, with refpect to improvements, like the parilh poor of England with refpect to a maintenance, for whom the law muft not only make a provifion, but compel them to accept it, or elfe they will be ftill found begging in the freets. Ii was therefore with great difficulty that the people of Madeira were perfuaded to engraft their vines, and fome of them ftill obfinately refufe to adopt the practice, though a whole vintage is very often fpoiled by the number of bad grapes which are mixed in the vat, and which they will not throw out, becaufe they increafe the quantity of the wine: an inflance of the force of habit, which is the more extraordinary, as they have adopted the practice of engrafting with refpect to their chefnut-trees, an object of much lefs importance, which, however, are thus brought to bear fooner than they would otherwife have done.

We faw no wheel-carriages of any fort in the place, which perhaps is not more owing to the want of ingenuity to invent
1768. September. them, than to the want of induftry to mend the roads, which, at prefent, is is impoffible that any wheel-carriage thould pafs: the inhabitants have horfes and mules indeed, excellently adapted to fuch ways; but their wine is, notwithftanding, brought to town from the vineyards where it is made, in veffels of goat-fkins, which are carried by men upon their heads. The only imitation of a carriage among thefe people is a board, made fomewhat hollow in the middle, to one end of which a pole is tied, by a flrap of whitleather: this wretched fledge approaches about as near to an Englifh cart, as an Indian canoe to a fhip's long-boat; and even this would probably never have been thought of, if the Englifh had not introduced wine veffels which are too big to be carried by hand, and which, therefore, are dragged about the town upon thefe machines.

One reafon, perhaps, why art and induftry have done fo little for Madeira is, Nature's having done fo much. The foil is very rich, and there is fuch a difference of climate between the plains and the hills, that there is fcarcely a fingle object of luxury that grows either in Europe or the Indies, that might not be produced here. When we went to vifit Dr. Heberden, who lives upon a confiderable afcent, about two miles from town, we left the thermometer at 74, and when we arrived at his houfe, we found it at 66. The hills produce, almoft fpontancoufly, walnuts, chefinuts, and apples in great abundance; and in the town there are many plants which are the natives both of the Eaft and Weft Indies, particularly the banana, the guava, the pine-apple or anana, and the mango, whicli flourifh almoft without culture. The corn of this country is of a moft excellent quality, large grained and very fine, and the inland would produce
1768. it in great plenty; yet moft of what is confumed by the inSeptember. $\underbrace{\text { 保 }}$ habitants is imported. The mutton, pork, and beef are alfo very good; the beef in particular, which we took on board here, was univerfally allowed to be fcarcely inferior to our own; the lean part was very like it, both in colour and grain, though the beafts are much fmaller, but the fat is as white as the fat of mutton.

The town of Funchiale derives its name from Funcho, the Portuguefe name for fennel, which grows in great plenty upon the neighbouring rocks, and, by the obfervation of Dr. Heberden, lies in the latitude of $32^{\circ} 33^{\prime} 33^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{N}$. and longitude $16^{\circ} 49^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. It is fituated in the bottom of a bay, and though larger than the extent of the ifland feems to deferve, is very ill built; the houfes of the principal inhabitants are large, thofe of the common people are fmall, the frects are narrow, and worfe paved than any I ever faw. The churches are loaded with ornaments, among which are many pictures, and images of favourite faints, but the pictures are in general wretchedly painted, and the faints are dreffed in laced clothes. Some of the convents are in a better tafte, efpecially that of the Francifcans, which is plain, fimple, and neat in the higheft degree. The infirmary in particular drew our attention as a model which might be adopted in other countries with great adrantage. It confifts of a long room, on one fide of which are the windows, and an altar for the convenience of adminiftering the facrament to the fick: the other fide is divided into wards, each of which is juft big enough to contain a bed, and neatly lined with gally-tiles; behind thefe wards, and parallel to the room in which they fland, there runs a long gallery, with which each waid communicates by a door, fo that the fick may be feparately fupplied with whatever they want without difturbing their neighbours. In this convent there is alfo a
fingular curiofity of another kind ; a finall chapel, the whole lining of which, both fides and ceiling, is compofed of hu-
1768. September. man fculls and thigh bones; the thigh bones are laid acrofs each orher, and a fcull is placed in each of the four angles. Among the fculls one is very remarkable; the upper and the lower jaw, on one fide, perfectly and firmly cohere; how the offification which unites them was formed, it is not perhaps very eafy to conceive, but it is certain that the patient muft have lived fome time without opening his mouth: what nourifhment he received was conveyed through a holewhich we difcovered to have been made on the other fide, by forcing out fome of the teeth, in doing which the jaw alfo feems to have been injured.

We vifited the good Fathers of this convent on a Thurfday evening, juft before fupper-time, and they received us with great politenefs; "We will not afk you, faid they, to fup " with us, becaufe we are not prepared, but if you will " come to-morrow, though it is a faft with us, we will have " a turkey roafted for you." This invitation, which fhewed a liberality of fentiment not to have been expected in a convent of Portuguefe Friars at this place, gratified us much, though it was not in our power to accept it.

We vifited alfo a convent of nuns, dedicated to Santia Clara, and the Ladies did us the honour to exprefs a particular pleafure in feeing us there: they had heard that there were great philofophers among us, and not at all knowing what were the objects of philofophical knowlege, they anked us feveral queftions that were abfurd and extravagant in the higheft degree ; one was, when it would thunder ; and another, whether a fpring of frefh water was to be found any where within the walls of their convent, of which it feems they were in great want. It will naturally be fuppofed that our anfwers to fuch queftions were neither fatisfactory to Vol. II.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1768. Scptember.
the Ladies, nor, in their eflimation, honourable to us; yer their difappointment did not in the leaft leffen their civility, and they talked, without ceafing, during the whole of our vifit, which lafted about half an hour.
The hills of this country are very high; the higheft, Pico Ruivo, rifes 5,068 feet, near an Englifh mile, perpendicularly from its bafe, which is much higher than any land that has been meafured in Great Britain. The fides of thefe hills are covered with vines to a certain height, above which there are woods of chefnut and pine of immenfe extent, and above them forefts of wild timber of various kinds not known in Europe; particularly two, called by the Portuguefe Mirmulano and Paobranco, the leaves of both which, particularly the Paobranco, are fo beautiful, that thefe trees would be a great ornament to the gardens of Europe.

The number of inhabitants in this ifland is fuppofed to be about 80,000 , and the cuftom-houfe duties produce a revenue to the king of Portugal of 20,000 pounds a-year, clear of all expences, which might eafily be doubled by the product of the ifland, exclufive of the vines, if advantage was taken of the excellence of the climate, and the amazing fertility of the foil ; but this object is utterly neglected by the Portuguefe. In the trade of the inhabitants of Madeira with Lifbon the balance is againft them, fo that all the Portuguefe money naturally going thither, the currency of the ifland is Spanifh; there are indeed a few Portuguefe pieces of copper, but they are fo fearce that we did not fee one of them : the Spanifh coin is of three denominations; Piftereens, worth about a fhilling; Bitts, worth about fix pence; and Half-bitts, three pence.

The tides at this place flow at the full and change of the moon, north and fouth; the fpring tides rife feven feet perpendicular,

## ROUND THE WORLD.

pendicular, and the neap tides four. By Dr. Heberden's obfervation, the variation of the compafs here is now $15^{\circ} 30^{\prime}$ Weft, and decreafing; but I have fome doubt whether he is not miftaken with refpect to its decreafe: we found that the North point of the dipping needle belonging to the Royal Society dipped $77^{\circ} 18^{\prime \prime}$.

The refrefhments to be had here, are water; wine, fruit of feveral forts, onions in plenty, and fome fweetmeats; frefh meat and poultry are not to be had without leave from the governor, and the payment of a very high price.

We took in 270 lb . of frefh beef, and a live bullock, charged at $613 \mathrm{Fb} .3,032$ gallons of water, and ten tuns of wine ; and in the night, between Sunday the 18 th and Mon- Sunday 18. day the $19 t h$ of September, we fet fail in profecution of Monday 19 . our voyage.

When Funchiale bore North, $1_{3}$ Eaft, at the diftance of 76 miles, the variation appeared by feveral azimuths to be $16^{\circ} 30^{\prime}$ Weft.

## LIEUTENANTCOOK's VOYAGE

## C H A P. II.

The Paffage from Madeira to Rio de Faneiro, with Some account of the Country, and the Incidents that bappened there.
> 1768. Scptember. Wednef. 21.

ON the 21 ft of September we faw the iflands called the Salvages, to the north of the Canaries; when the principal of thefe bore S. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. at the diftance of about 5 leagues we found the variation of the compafs by an azimuth to be $17^{\circ} 50^{\circ}$. I make thefe iflands to lie in latitude $30^{\circ} 11^{\prime}$ North, and diftant 58 leagues from Funchiale in Madeira, in the direction of S. 16 E .

Eriday 23. On Friday the 23d we faw the Peak of Teneriffe bearing W. by $S . \frac{1}{2}$ S. and found the variation of the compafs to be from $17^{\circ} 22^{\prime}$ to $16^{\circ} 30^{\prime}$. The height of this mountain, from which I_took a new departure, has been determined by Dr. Heberden, who has been upon it, to be 15,396 feet, which is but 148 yards lefs than three miles, reckoning the mile at 1760 yards. Its appearance at funfet was very ftriking; when the fun was below the horizon, and the reft of the ifland appeared of a deep black, the mountain fill reflected his rays, and glowed with a warmth of colour which no painting can exprefs. There is no eruption of vifible fire from it, but a heat iffues from the chinks near the top, too ftrong to be borne by the hand when it is held near them. We had received from Dr. Heberden, among other favours, fome falt which he collected on the top of the mountain, where it is found in large quantities, and which he fuppofes to be the true natrum or nitrum of the ancients: he gave us
alfo fome native fulphur exceedingly pure, which he had likewife found upon the furface in great plenty.
1768.

September.
On the next day, Saturday the 24th, we came into tite north-eaft trade wind, and on Friday the 3oth faw Bona Vifta, one of the Cape de Verd Iflands; we ranged the eaft fide of it, at the diftance of three or four miles from the fhore, till we were obliged to haul off to avoid a ledge of rocks which ftretch out S. W. by W. from the body, or S. E. point of the ifland, to the extent of a league and an half. Bona Vifta by our obfervation lies in latitude 16 N . and longitude $2 \mathrm{I}^{\circ} 5 \mathrm{I}^{\circ}$ Weft.

On the firft of October, in latitude $14^{\circ} 6^{\prime} \mathrm{N}$. and longitude $22^{\circ} 10^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. we found the variation by a very good azimuth to be $10^{\circ} 37^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and the next morning it appeared to be $10^{\circ}$. This day we found the fhip five miles a-head of the log, and the next day feven. On the third, hoifted out the boat to difcover whether there was a current, and found one to the eaftward, at the rate of three quarters of a mile an hour.

During our courfe from Teneriffe to Bona Vifta we faw great numbers of flying fifh, which from the cabbin windows appear beautiful beyond imagination, their fides having the colour and brightnefs of burnifhed filver; when they are feen from the deck they do not appear to fo much advantage, becaufe their backs are of a dark colour. We alfo took a Shark, which proved to be the Squalus Cbarearias of Linnæus.

Having loft the trade wind on the third, in latitude $12^{\circ} 14^{\circ}$ and longitude $22^{\circ} 10^{\prime}$, the wind became fomewhat variable, and we had light airs and calms by turns.

On the feventh, Mr. Banks went out in the boat and took what the feamen call a Portuguefe man of war; it is the Holotburia Phyfalis of Linnreus, and a fpecies of the Mollufca.

OEtober: Saturday I. Sunday $z_{i}$ Monday 3:



It confifted of a fmall bladder about feven inches long, very much refembling the air-bladder of fifhes, from the bottom of which defcended a number of ftrings, of a bright blue and red, fome of them three or four feet in length, which upon being touched fting like a nettle, but with much more force. On the top of the bladder is a membrane which is ufed as a fail, and turned fo as to receive the wind which way foever it blows: this membrane is marked in fine pink coloured veins, and the animal is in every refpect an object exquifitely curious and beautiful.

We alfo took feveral of the fhell-fifhes, or teftaceous animals, which are always found floating upon the water, particularly the Helix Fantbina and Violacea; they are about the fize of a fnail, and are fupported upon the furface of the water by a fmall clufter of bubbles, which are filled with air and confift of a tenaceous flimy fubftance that will not eafily part with its contents; the animal is oviparous, and thefe bubbles ferve alfo as a nidus for its eggs. It is probable that it never goes down to the bottom, nor willingly approaches any fhore; for the fhell is exceedingly brittle, and that of few frefh water fnails is fo thin: every fhell contains about a tea-fpoonful of liquor, which it eafily difcharges upon being touched, and which is of the moft beautiful red purple that can be conceived. It dies linen cloth, and it may perhaps be worth enquiry, as the fhell is certainly found in the Mediterranean, whether it be not the Purpura of the ancients.
Saturday 9. On the 8 th, in latitude $8^{\circ} 25^{\prime}$ North, longitude $22^{\circ} 4^{\prime}$ Weft, we found a current fetting to the fouthward, which the next day in latitude $7^{\circ} 5^{8^{\prime}}$ longitude $22^{\circ} 13^{\prime}$ fhifted to the N. N. W. ${ }_{3}^{3} \mathrm{~W}$. at the rate of one mile and a furlong an hour. The variation here, by the mean of feveral azimuths, appeared to be $8^{\circ} 39^{\prime} \mathrm{Weft}$.

## ROUND THE WORLD.

On the tenth, Mr. Banks fhot the black-toed gull, not yct defcribed according to Linnæus's fyltem ; he gave it the name of Larus crepidatus: it is remarkable that the dung of this bird is of a lively red, fomewhat like that of the liquor procured from the fhells, only not fo full; its principal food therefore is probably the Helix juft mentioned. A current to the N. W. prevailed more or lefs till Monday the 24 th , Monday 24 . when we were in latitude $1^{\circ} 7^{\prime} \mathrm{N}$. and longitude $28^{\circ} 50^{\prime}$.

On the 25 th, we croffed the line with the ufual ceremonies Tuefday 25 . in longitude $29^{\circ} 30^{\circ}$, when, by the refult of feveral very good azimuths, the variation was $2^{\circ} 24^{\prime}$.

On the 28 th , at noon, being in the latitude of Ferdinand Friday $z 8$. Noronba, and, by the mean of feveral obfervations by Mr. Green and myfelf, in longitude $32^{\circ} 5^{\prime} 16^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{W}$. which is to the weftward of it by fome charts, and to the eaftward by others, we expected to fee the ifland, or fome of the fhoals that are laid down in the charts between it and the main, but we faw neither one nor the other.

In the evening of the 2gth, we obferved that luminous Saturday zo appearance of the fea which has been fo often mentioned by navigators, and of which fuch various caufes have been affigned; fome fuppofing it to be occafioned by fifh, which agitated the water by darting at their prey, fome by the putrefaction of fifh and other marine animals, fome by electricity, and others referring it into a great variety of different caufes. It appeared to emit flafhes of light exactly refembling thofe of lightning, only not fo confiderable, but they were fo frequent that fometimes eight or ten were vifible almoft at the fame moment. We were of opinion that they proceeded from fome luminous animal, and upon throwing out the cafting net our opinion was confirmed : it brought up a fpecies of the Medufa, which when it came on
1768. October.

November.
Wednef. 2.

Sunday 6.

Monday 70

board had the appearance of metal violently heated, and emitted a white light : with thefe animals were taken fome very fmall crabs, of three different fpecies, each of which gave as much light as a glow-worm, though the creature was not fo large by nine tenths: upon examination of thefe animals Mr. Banks had the fatisfaction to find that they were all entirely new. paffage outwards: at four the next morning we had no ground with 100 fathom.

As feveral articles of our flock and provifions now began to fall fhort, I determined to put into Rio de Janciro, rather than at any port in Brazil or Falkland's Iflands, knowing that it could better fupply us with what we wanted, and making no doubt but that we fhould be well received.
Tueflay 8. On the 8th, at day-break, we faw the coaft of Brazil, and about ten o'clock we brought to, and fpoke with a fifhing-
boat; the people on board told us that the land which we faw, lay to the fouthward of Sancto E/pirito, but belonged to
1768.

November. the captainfhip of that place.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went on board this veffel, in which they found eleven men, nine of whom were Blacks; they all fifhed with lines, and their frefh cargo, the chicf part of which Mr. Banks bought, confifted of dolphins, large pelagic fcombers of two kinds, fea bream, and fome of the filh which in the Weft Indies are called Welfhmen. Mr. Banks had taken Spanifh filver with him, which he imagined to be the currency of the continent, but to his great furprize the people afked him for Englifh fhillings; he gave them two which he happened to have about him, and it was not without fome difpute that they took the reft of the money in piftereens. Their bufinefs feemed to be to catch large fifh at a good diftance from the fhore, which they falted in bulk, in a place made for that purpofe in the middle of their boat: of this merchandize they had about two quintals on board, which they offered for about 16 fhillings, and would probably have fold for half the money. The frefh fifh, which was bought for about nineteen fhillings and fix pence, ferved the whole fhip's company; the falt was not wanted.

The fea provifion of thefe fifhermen confifted of nothing more than a cafk of water, and a bag of Caffada flour, which they called Farinba de Pao, or wooden flour, which indeed is a name which very well fuits its tafte and appearance. Their water cafk was large, as wide as their boat, and exactly fitted a place that was made for it in the ballaft; it was impoffible therefore to draw out any of its contents by a tap, the fides being, from the bottom to the top, wholly inacceffible; neither could any be taken out by dipping a Vol. II.

$$
\mathrm{D}
$$

velfel
1768. veffel in at the head, for an opening fufficiently wide for November. $\xrightarrow{\longrightarrow}$ that purpofe would have endangered the lofs of great part of it by the rolling of the veffel : their expedient to get at their water, fo fituated, was curious; when one of them wanted to drink, he applied to his neighbour, who accompanied him to the water cafk with a hollow cane about three feet long, which was open at both ends; this he thruft into the cafk through a fmall hole in the top, and then, ftopping. the upper end with the palm of his hand, drew it out ; the preffure of the air againft the other end keeping in the water which it contained; to this end the perfon who wanted. to drink applied his mouth, and the affiftant then taking his hand from the other, and admitting the air above, the cane: immediately parted with its contents, which the drinker: drew off till he was fatisfied.

Saturday $32 . \quad$ We ftood off and on along the fhore: till the $12 t h$, and fucceffively faw a remarkable hill near Santo Efpirito, then Cape St. Thomas, and then an ifland juft without Cape Trio; which in fome maps is called the ifland of Trio, and which: being high, with a hollow in the middle, has the appearance of two iflands when feen ar a diftance. On this day we ftood along the fhore for Rio de Janeiro, and at nine the Sunday ${ }_{3}$. next morning made fail for the harbour. I then fent Mr. Hicks, my firf Lieutenant, before us in the pinnace, up to: the city, to acquaint the Governor, that we put in there to procure water and refreflments; and to defire the affiftance of a pilot to bring us into proper anchoring ground. I continued to ftand up the river, trufting to Mr. Bellifle's draught, publifhed in the Petit Atlas maritime, Vol. II. $\mathrm{N}^{\circ} 54$, which we found very good, till five o'clock in the evening, expecting the return of my Lieutenant; and juft as I was. about to anchor, above the ifland of Cobras, which lies be-
fore the city, the pinnace came back without him, having on board a Portuguefe officer, but no pilot. The people in the boat told me, that my Lieutenant was detained by the Viceroy till I fhould go on fhore. We came immediately to an anchor; and, almoft at the fame time, a ten oared boat, full of foldiers, came up and kept rowing round the flip, without exchanging a word: in lefs than a quarter of an hour, another boat came on board with feveral of the Viceroy's officers, who afked, Whence we came; what was our cargo ; the number of men and guns on board ; the object of our voyage, and feveral other queftions, which we directly and truly anfwered: they then told me, as a kind of apology for detaining my Lieutenant, and putting an officer on board my pinnace, that it was the invariable cultom of the place, to detain the firft officer who came on fhore from any fhip on her arrival, till a boat from the Viceroy had vifited her, and to fuffer no boat to go either from or to a fhip, while the lay there, without having a foldier on board. They faid that I might go on fhore when I pleafed; but wifhed that every other perfon might remain on board till the paper which they fhould draw up had been delivered to the Viceroy, promifing that, immediately upon their return, the Lieutenant fhould be fent on board.

This promife was performed; and, on the next morning, the I4th, I went on fhore, and obtained leave of the Viceroy to purchafe provifions and refrefhments for the fhip, provided I would employ one of their own people as a factor, but not otherwife. I made fome objections to this, but he infifted upon it as the cuftom of the place. I objected alfo againft the putting a foldier into the boat every time fhe went between the fhip and the flore; but he told me, that this was done by the exprefs orders of his court, with which he could in no cafe difpenfe. I then requelted, that the Gentlemen


## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1768. 

November. November.
whom I had on board might refide on fhore during our ftay, and that Mr. Banks might go up the country to gather plants; but this he abfolutely refufed. I judged from his extremecaution, and the feverity of thefe reftrictions, that he fufpected we were come to trade; I therefore took fome pains to convince him of the contrary. I told him, that we were bound to the fouthward, by the order of his Britannic Majefty, to obferve a tranfit of the planet Venus over the Sun, an aftronomical phrnomenon of great importance to navigation. Of the tranfit of Venus, however, he could form noother conception, than that it was the paffing of the North Star through the South Pole; for thefe are the very words of his interpreter, who was a Swede, and fpoke Englifh very well. I did not think it neceffary to afk permiffion for the Gentlemen to come on Shore during the day, or that, when: I was on fhore myfelf, I might be at liberty, taking for: granted that nothing was intended to the contrary; but in this I was unfortunately miftaken. As foon as I took leaveof his Excellency, I found an officer who had orders to attend me wherever I went: of this I defired an explanation, and was told that it was meant as a compliment; I earneftly defired to be excufed from accepting fuch an honour, but the good Viceroy would by no means fuffer it to be difpenfed with.

With this officer, therefore, I returned on board, about: twelve o'clock, where I was impatiently expected by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, who made no doubt but that a fair. account of us having been given by the officers who had been on board the evening before, in their paper called a Practica, and every feruple of the Viceroy removed in my conference with his Excellency, they fhould immediately be at liberty to go on fhore, and difpofe of themfelves as they pleafed. Their difappointment at receiving my report may
eafily be conceived; and it was fill increafed by an account, that it had been refolved, not only to prevent their refiding
1768. November. on fhore, and going up the country, but even their leaving the fhip; orders having been given, that no perfon except the Captain, and fuch common failors as were required to be upon duty, fhould be permitted to land; and that there was probably a particular view to the paffengers in this prohibition, as they were reported to be Gentlemen fent abroad to make obfervations and difcoveries, and were uncommonly qualified for that purpofe. In the evening, however, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander dreffed themfelves, and attempted to go on fhore, in order to make a vifit to the Viceroy; but they were ftopped by the guard-boat which had come off with our pinnace, and which kept hovering round the fhip all the while fhe lay here, for that purpofe; the officer on board faying, that he had particular orders; which he could not difobey, to fuffer no paffenger, nor any officer, except the Captain, to pafs the boat. After much expoftulation to no purpofe, they were obliged, with whatever reluctance and mortification, to return on board. I then went on fhore myfelf, but found the Viceroy inflexible; he had one anfwer ready for every thing I could fay, That the reftrictions under which he had laid us, were in obedience to the King of Portugal's commands, and therefore indifpenfible.

In this fituation I determined, rather than be made a prifoner in my own boat, to go on fhore no more; for the officer who, under pretence of a compliment, attended me when I was afhore, infifted alfo upon going with me to and from the fhip: but ftill imagining, that the fcrupulous vigilance of the Viceroy muft proceed from fome miftaken notion about us, which might more eafily be removed by writing than in converfation, I drew up a memorial, and Mr. Banks drew up another, which we fent on fhore. Thefe memorials
1768. were both anfwered, but by no means to our fatisfaction; November. $\xrightarrow{\text { Nomernern }}$ we therefore replied: in confequence of which, feveral other papers were interchanged between us and the Viceroy, but ftill without effect. However, as I thought fome degree of force, on the part of the Viceroy, to enforce thefe reftrictions, neceffary to juftify my acquiefcence in them to the admiralty; I gave orders to my Lieutenant, Mr. Hicks, when Surday 20. I fent him with our laft reply on Sunday the 20th, in the evening, not to fuffer a guard to be put into his boat. When the officer on board the guard-boat found that Mr. Hicks was determined to obey my orders, he did not proceed to force, but attended him to the landing-place, and reported the matter to the Viceroy. Upon this his Excellency refufed to receive the memorial, and ordered Mr. Hicks to return to the fhip; when he came back to the boat, he found that a guard had been put on board in his abfence, but he abfolutely refufed to return till the foldier was removed : the officer then proceeded to enforce the Viceroy's orders; he feized ail the boat's crew, and fent them under an armed force to prifon, putting Mr. Hicks at the fame time into one of their own boats, and fending him under a guard back to the fhip. As foon as he had reported thefe particulars, I wrote again to the Viccroy, demanding my boat and crew, and in my letter inclofed the memorial which he had refufed to receive from Mr. Hicks: thefe papers I fent by a petty officer, that I might wave the difpute about a guard, againft which I had never objected except when there was a commiffioned officer on board the boat. The petty officer was permitted to go on fhore with his guard, and, having delivered his letter, was told that an anfwer would be fent the next day.

About eight o'clock this evening it began to blow very hard in fudden gufts from the South, and our long-boat

## ROUND THE WORLD.

coming on board juft at this time with four pipes of rum, the rope which was thrown to her from the fhip, and which
1768. November. $\underbrace{\text { November. }}$ was taken hold of by the people on board, unfortunately broke, and the boat, which had come to the fhip before the wind, went adrift to windward of her, with a fmall fkiff of Mr. Banks's that was faftened to her ftern. This was a great misfortune, as the pinnace being detained on fhore, we had no boat on board but a four oar'd yawl : the yawl, however, was immediately manned and fent to her affiltance; but, notwithftanding the utmoft effort of the people in both boats, they were very foon out of fight: far indeed we could not fee at that time in the evening, but the diftance was enough to convince us that they were not under command, which gave us great uneafinefs, as we knew they muft drive directly upon a reef of rocks which ran out juft to leeward of where we lay: after waiting fome hours in the utmoft anxiety, we gave them over for loft, but about three o'clock the next morning had the fatisfaction to fee all the Monday 2 zat people come on board in the yawl. From them we learnt, that the long-boat having filled with water, they had brought her to a grappling and left her; and that, having fallen in with the reef of rocks in their return to the fhip; they had been obliged to cut Mr. Banks's little boat adrift. As the lofs of our long-boat, which we had now too much reafon to apprehend, would have been an unfpeakable difadvantage to as, confidering the nature of our expedition, I fent another letter to the Viceroy, as foon as I thought he could be feen, acquainting him with our misfortune, and requefting the affiftance of a boat from the fhore for the recovery of our own; I alfo renewed my demand that the pinnace and her crew hould be no longer detained: after fome delay, his Excellency thought fit to comply both with my requeft and demand; and the fame day we happily recovered borh the
1768. November. Wednef. 23.
long-boat and fkiff, with the rum, but every thing elfe that was on board was loft. On the 23 d , the Viceroy, in his anfwer to my remonftrance againft feizing my men and detraining the boat, acknowledged that I had been treated with forme incivility, but faid that the refiftance of my officers, to what he had declared to be the King's orders, made it abfolutely neceffary; he alfo expreffed forme doubts whether the Endeavour, confidering her ftructure and other circumftances, was in the fervice of his Majefty, though I had before flawed him my commiffion: to this I anfwered in writing, That, to remove all fcruples, I was ready to produce my commiffion again. His Excellency's fcruples however fill remained, and in his reply to my letter he not only exprefled them in fill plainer terms, but accufed my people of frugsling. This charge, I am confident, was without the leaft foundation in truth. Mr. Banks's fervants had indeed found means to go on fore on the 22d at day-break, and flay till it was dark in the evening, but they brought on board only plants and infects, having been fent for no other purpofe. And I had the greateft reafon to believe that not a fingle article was fmuggled by any of our people who were admitted on fore, though many artful means were ufed to tempt them even by the very officers that were under his Excellency's roof, which made the charge fill more injurious and provoking. I have indeed fore reason to fufpect that one poor fellow bought a fingle bottle of rum with dome of the clothes upon his back; and in my anfwer I requefted of his Excellency, that, if fuck an attempt at illicit trade fhould be repeated, he would without fcruple order the offender to be taken into cuftody. And thus ended our altercation, both by conference and writing, with the Viceroy of Rio de Janciro.

## ROUND THE WORLD.

A friar in the town having requefted the afliftance of our furgeon, Dr. Solander cafily got admittance in that character on the 25 th, and received many marks of civility
1768. November. Friday 25. from the people. On the 26th, before day-break, Mr. Saturday 26 . Banks alfo found means to elude the vigilance of the people in the guard-boat, and got on thore ; lie did not however go into the town, for the principal objects of his curiofity were to be found in the fields : to him alfo the people behaved with great civility, many of them invited him to their houfes, and he bought a porker and fome other things of them for the fhip's company; the porker, which was by no means lean, coft him cleven fhillings, and he paid fomething lefs than two for a Mufcovy duck.

On the 27 th, when the boats returned from watering, the Sunday 27 . people told us there was a report in town, that fearch was making after fome perfons who had been on fhore from the fhip without the Viceroy's permiffion ; thefe perfons we conjectured to be Dr. Solander and Mr. Banks, and therefore they determined to go on flore no more.

On the ift of December, having got our water and other neceffaries on board, I fent to the Viceroy for a pilot to carry us to fea, who came off to us; but the wind preventing us from getting out, we took on board a plentiful fupply of frefh becf, yams and greens for the fhip's company. On the 2d, a Spanifh packet arrived, with letters from Friday 2. Bucnos Ayres for Spain, commanded by Don Antonio de Monte Negro y Velafco, who with great politenefs offered to take our letters to Europe: I accepted the favour, and gave him a packet for the Sccretary of the Admiralty, containing copies of all the papers that had paffed between me and the Viceroy; leaving alfo duplicates with the Viceroy, to be by him forwarded to Lifbon.
1768. $\underbrace{\text { December. }}$ Monday 5 .

On Monday the 5 th, it being a dead calm, we weighed anchor and towed down the bay; but, to our great aftonifhment, when we got abreaft of Santa Cruz, the principal fortification, two fhot were fired at us. We immediately caft anchor, and fent to the fort to enquire the reafon of what had happened: our people brought us word, That the Commandant had received no order from the Viceroy to let us pafs; and that, without fuch an order, no veffel was ever fuffered to go below the fort. It was now, therefore, become neceffary that we fhould fend to the Viceroy, to enquire why the neceffary order had not been given, as he had notice of our departure, and had thought fit to write me a polite letter, wifhing me a good voyage. Our meffenger foon re~ turned with an account, that the order had been written fome days, but by an unaccountable negligence not fent.
Federef 7 . We did not get under fail till the 7 th ; and, when we had paffed the fort, the pilot defired to be difeharged. As foon as he was difmiffed, we were left by our guard-boat, which had hovered about us from the firt hour of our being in this. place to the laft: and Mr. Banks, having been prevented from going afhore at Rio de Janciro, availed himfelf of her departure to examine the neighbouring inlands, where, particularly on one in the mouth of the harbour called Raza, he gathered many fpecies of plants, and caught a variety of infects.

It is remarkable, that, during the laft three or four days of our ftaying in this harbour, the air was loaded with butterflies: they were chiefly of one fort, but in fuch numbers that thoufands were in view in every direction, and the greateft part of them above our mafthead.

We lay here from the $14^{\text {th }}$ of November to the 7 th of December, fomething more than three weeks, during which time
time Mr. Monkhoufe, our Surgeon, was on fhore every day to buy our provifions; Dr. Solander was on fhore once; I was feveral times on thore myfelf, and Mr. Banks alfo found means to get into the country, notwithflanding the watch that was fet over us. I fhall, therefore, with the intelligence obtained from thefe Gentlemen, and my own obfervations, give fome account of the town, and the country adjacent.

Rio de Janciro, or the river of Januarius, was probably fo called from its having been difcovered on the feaft-day of that faint ; and the town, which is the capital of the Portuguefe dominions in America, derives its name from the river, which indeed is rather an arm of the fea, for it did not appear to receive any confiderable ftream of frefh water: it ftands on a plain, clofe to the flore, on the weft fide of the bay, at the foot of feveral high mountains which rife behind it. It is neither ill defigned nor ill built; the houfes, in general, are of ftone, and two fories high; every houfe having, after the manner of the Portuguefe, a little balcony before its windows, and a lattice of wood before the balcony. I computed its circuit to be about three miles; for it appears to be equal in fize to the largelt country towns in England, Britol and Liverpool not excepted ; the ftreets are flaight, and of a convenient breadth, interfecting each other at right angles; the greater part, however, lie in a line with the citadel, called St. Scbaftian, which flands on the top of a hill that commands the town.

It is fupplied with water from the neighbouring hills, by an aqueduct, which is raifed upon two flories of arches, and is faid in fome places to be at a great height from the ground, from which the water is conveyed by pipes into a fountain in the great fquare that exactly fronts the Viceroy's palace. At this fountain great numbers of people are
1768. December.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1;68. continually waiting for their turn to draw water; and the December. $\xrightarrow{\text { December. }}$ foldiers, who are pofted at the Governor's door, find it very difficult to maintain any regularity among them. The water at this fountain however is fo bad, that we, who had been two months at fea, confined to that in our cafks, which was almoft always foul, could not drink it with pleafure. Water of a better quality is laid into fome other part of the town, but I could not learn by what means.

The churches are very fine, and there is more religious parade in this place than in any of the Popifh countries in Europe: there is a proceffion of fome parifh every day, with various infignia, all fplendid and coftly in the higheft degree: they beg money, and fay prayers in great form, at the corner of every flreet.

While we lay here, one of the churches was rebuilding ; and to defray the expence, the parifh to which it belonged had leave to beg in proceflion through the whole city once a weck, by which very confiderable fums were coilected. At this ceremony, which was performed by night, all the boys of a certain age were obliged to affift, the fons of Gentlemen not.being excufed. Each of thefe boys was dreffed in a black caffock, with a fhort red cloak, hanging about as low as the waift, and carried in his hand a pole about fix or feven feet long, at the end of which was tied a lantern: the number of lanterns was generally above two hundred, and the light they gave was fo great, that the people who faw it from the cabbin windows thought the town had been on fire.

The inhabitants, however, may pay their devotions at the fhrine of any faint in the calendar, without waiting till there is a proceffion; for before almoft every houfe there is a little cupboard, furnifhed with a glafs window, in which one of thefe tutelary powers is waiting to be gracious ; and to prevent
vent his being out of mind, by being out of fight, a lamp is kept conftantly burning before the window of his tabernacle in the night. The people indeed are by no means remifs in their devotions, for before thefe faints they pray and fing hymns with fuch vehemence, that in the night they were very diftinetly heard on board the fhip, though flee lay at the diftance of at leaft half a mile from the town.

The government here, as to its form, is mixed; it is notwithftanding very defpotic in fact. It confifts of the Viceroy; the Governor of the town, and a council, the number of which I could not learn: without the confent of this council, in which the Viccroy has a cafting vote, no judicial act fhould be performed; yet both the Viceroy and Governor frequently commit perfons to prifon at their own pleafure, and fometimes fend them to Lifbon, without acquainting their friends or family with what is laid to their charge, or where they may be found.

To reftrain the people from travelling into the country, aid getting into any diftrict where gold or diamonds may be found, of both which there is much more than the government can otherwife fecure, certain bounds are prefcribed them, at the difcretion of the Viceroy, fometimes at a few, and fometimes at many miles diftance from the city. On the verge of thefe limits a guard conftantly patroles, and whoever is found beyond it, is immediately feized and thrown into prifon: and if a man is, upon any pretence, taken up by the guard within the limits, he will be fent to prifon, tho' it fhould appear that he did not know their extent.

The inhabitants, which are very numerous, confift of Portuguefe, Negroes, and Indians, the original natives of the country. The townfhip of Rio, which, as I was told, is but a fmall part of the Capitanea, or province, is faid to contain.
1768. December.

37,000 White perfons, and 629,000 Blacks, many of whom are free; making together 666,000, in the proportion of feventeen to one. The Indians, who are employed to do the King's work in this neighbourhood, can fcarcely be confidered as inhabitants; their refidence is at a diftance, from whence they come by turns to their tafk, which they are obliged to perform for a fmall pay. The guard-boat was conftantly rowed by thefe people, who are of a light copper colour, and have long black hair.

The military eftablifhment here confifts of twelve regiments of regular troops, fix of which are Portuguefe and fix Creoles; and twelve other regiments of provincial militia. To the regulars the inhabitants behave with the utmoft humility and fubmiffion; and I was told, that if any of them fhould neglect to take off his hat upon meeting an officer, he would immediately be knocked down. Thefe haughty feverities render the people extremely civil to any ftranger who has the appearance of a Gentleman. But the fubordination of the officers themfelves to the Viceroy is enforced with circumftances equally mortifying, for they are obliged to attend in his hall three times every day to afk his commands: the anfwer conftantly is, "There is nothing new." I have been told, that this fervile attendance is exacted to prevent their going into the country; and if fo, it effectually anfwers the purpofe.

It is, I believe, univerfally allowed, that the women, both of the Spanifh and Portugucfe fettlements in South America, make lefs difficulty of granting perfonal favours, than thofe of any other civilized country in the world. Of the Ladies of this town fome have formed fo unfavourable an opinion as to declare, that they did not believe there was a modeft one among them. This cenfure is certainly too general;
neral; but what Dr. Solander faw of them when he was on flore, gave him no very exalted idea of their chaftity : he
1768. December. told me, that as foon as it was dark, one or more of them appeared in every window, and diftinguifhed thofe whom they liked, among the Gentlemen that walked paft them, by giving them nofegays; that he, and two Gentlemen who were with him, received fo many of thefe favours, that, at the end of their walk, which was not a long one, they threw. whole hatfuls of them away. Great allowance muft certainly be made for local cuftoms; that which in one country would be an indecent familiarity, is a mere act of general courtefy in another; of the fact, therefore, which I have related, I fhall fay nothing, but that I am confident it is true.

Neither will I take upon me to affirm, that murders are frequently committed here ; but the churches afford an afylum to the criminal: and as our cockfwain was one day looking at two men, who appeared to be talking together in a friendly manner, one of them fuddenly drew a knife and ftabbed the other; who not infantly falling, the murderer withdrew the weapon, and ftabbed him a fecond time. He then ran away, and was purfued by fome Negroes who were alfo witneffes of the fact; but whether he efcaped or was. taken I never heard.

The country, at a fmall diftance round the town, which is all that any of us faw, is beautiful in the higheft degree; the wildeft fpots being varied with a greater luxuriance of flowers, both as to number and beauty, than the beft gardens in England.

Upon the trees and bufhes fat an almoft endlefs varicty of birds, efpecially fmall ones, many of them covered with the moft elegant plumage; among which were the humming-
${ }^{17}$ 1768. bird. Of infects too there was a great variety, and fome of December.

## $\xrightarrow{\text { (1) }}$

 them very beautiful ; but they were much more nimble than thofe of Europe, efpecially the butterflies, moft of which flew near the tops of the trees, and were therefore very difficult to be caught, except when the fea brecze blew frefh, which kept them nearer to the ground.The banks of the fea, and of the fmall brooks which water this part of the country, are almoft covered with the fmall crabs called Cancer vocans; fome of thefe had one of the claws, called by naturalits the hand, very large; others had them both remarkably fmall, and of equal fize, a difference which is faid to diftinguifh the fexes, that with the large claw being the male.

There is the appearance of but little cultivation; the greater part of the land is wholly uncultivated, and very little care and labour feem to have been beftowed upon the reft ; there are indeed little patches or gardens, in which many kinds of European garden ftuff are produced, particularly cabbages, peas, beans, kidney-beans, turnips, and white radifhes, but all much inferior to our own: water melons and pine apples are alfo produced in thefe fpots, and they are the only fruits that we faw cultivated, though the country produces mufk melons, oranges, limes, lemons, fwect lemons, citrons, plantains, bananas, mangos, mamane apples, acajou or cafhou apples and nuts; jamboira of two kinds, one of which bears a fmall black firuit; cocoa nuts, mangos, palm nuts of two kinds, one long, the other round; and paim berries, all which were in feaion while we were there.

Of thefe fruits the water melons and oranges are the beft in their kind; the pine apples are mucli inferior to thofe that I have eaten in England; they are indeed more juicy

## ROUND THE WORLD.

and fweet, but have no flavour; I believe them to be natives of this country, though we heard of none that at this time grow wild; they have, however, very little care beftowed upon them, the plants being fet between beds of any kind of garden-ftuff, and fuffered to take the chance of the feafon. The melons are ftill worfe, at leaft thofe that we tafted, which were mealy and infipid; but the water melons are excellent; they have a flavour, at leaft a degree of acidity, which ours have not. We faw alfo feveral fpecies of the prickle pear, and fome European fruits, particularly the apple and peach, both which were very mealy and infipid. In thefe gardens alfo grow yams, and mandihoca, which in the Weft Indies is called Caffada or Caffava, and to the flour of which the people here, as I have before obferved, give the name of Farinba de Pao, which may not improperly be tranflated, Powder of poft. The foil, though it produces tobacco and fugar, will not produce bread-corn; fo that the people here have no wheat-flour, but what is brought from Portugal, and fold at the rate of a fhilling a pound, though it is generally fpoiled by being heated in its paffage. Mr. Banks is of opinion, that all the products of our Weft Indian iflands would grow here; notwithftanding which, the inhabitants import their coffee and chocolate from Lifbon.

Moft of the land, as far as we faw of the country, is laid down in grafs, upon which cattle are paftured in great plenty; but they are folean, that an Englifhman will fcarcely eat of their flefh: the herbage of thefe paftures conifts principally of creffes, and confequently is fo thort, that though it may afford a bite for horfes and fheep, it can fcarcely bc grazed by horned cattle in a fufficient quantity to keep them alive.

This country may poffibly produce many valuable drugs; but we could not find any in the apothecaries fhops, except Vol. II.

## LIEUTENANT COOK'S VOYAGE

1768. December.
pareira brava, and balfam capivi; both of which were excellent in their kind, and fold at a very low price. The drug trade is probably carried on to the northward, as well as that of the dying woods, for we could get no intelligence of either of them here.

As to manufactures, we neither faw nor heard of any, except that of cotton hammocks, in which people are carried about here, as they are with us in fedan chairs; and thefe are principally, if not wholly, fabricated by the Indians.

The riches of the place confifts chiefly in the mines, which we fuppoied to lie far up the country, though we could never learn where, or at what diftance; for the fituation is concealed as much as poffible, and troops are continually employed in guarding the roads that lead to them : it is almoft impoffible for any man to get a fight of them, except thofe who are employed there ; and indeed the ftrongeft curiofity would farcely induce any man to attempt it, for whoever is found upon the road to them, if he cannot give undeniable evidence of his having bufinefs there, is immediately hanged up upon the next tree.

Much gold is certainly brought from thefe mines, but at an expence of life, that muft frike every man, to whom cuftom has not made it familiar, with horror. No lefs than forty thoufand negroes are annually imported, on the king's account, to dig the mines; and we were credibly informed, that, the laft year but one before we arrived here, this number fell fo fhort, probably from fome epidemic difeafe, that twenty thoufand more were draughted from the town of Rio.

Precious fones are alfo found here in fuch plenty, that a certain quantity only is allowed to be collected in a year; to collect this quantity, a number of people are fent into the
country where they are found, and when it is got together, which fometimes happens in a month, fometimes in lefs and fometimes in more, they return; and after that, whoever is found in thefe precious diftricts, on any pretence, before the next year, is immediately put to death.

The jewels found here, are diamonds, topazes of feveral kinds, and amethyfts. We did not fee any of the diamonds, but were informed that the Viceroy had a large quantity by him, which he would fell on the King of Portugal's account, but not at a lefs price than they are fold for in Europe. Mr. Banks bought a few topazes and amethyfts as fpecimens: of the topazes there are three forts, of very different value, which are diftinguifhed here by the names of Pinga d'agua qualidade primeiro, Pinga d'agua qualidade fecundo, and Chryftallos armerillos: they are fold, large and fmail, good and bad together, by octavos, or the eighth part of an ounce; the beft at 4 s .9 d . All dealing, however, in thefe ftones is prohibited to the fubject, under the fevereft penalties: there were jewellers here formerly, who purchafed and worked them on their own account; but about fourteen months before our arrival, orders cance from the court of Portugal, that no more ftones fhould be wrought here, except on the King's account: the jewellers were ordered to bring all their tools to the Viceroy, and left without any means of fubfiftence. The perfons employed here to work fones for the King are flaves.

The coin that is current here, is cither that of Portugal, confifting chicfly of thirty-fix fhillings pieces; or pieces, both of gold and filver, which are ftruck at this place: the pieces of filver, which are very much debafed, are called Petacks, and are of different value, and eafily diftinguifhed by the number of rees that is marked on the outfide. Here is alfo
1768. a copper coin, like that in Portugal, of five and ten ree pieces. A ree is a nominal coin of Portugal, ten of which are equal in value to about thrce farthings fterling.

The harbour of Rio de Janeiro is fituated W. by N. is leagues from Cape Trio, and may be known by a remarkable hill, in the form of a fugar-loaf, at the weft point of the bay; but as all the coaft is very high, and rifes in many peaks, the entrance of this harbour may be more certainly diftinguifhed by the illands that lie before it ; one of which, called Rodonda, is high and round like a hay-ftack, and lies at the diftance of two leagues and an half from the entrance of the bay, in the direction of S. by W. ; but the firf illands which are met with, coming from the eaft, or Cape Trio, are two that have a rocky appearance, lying near to each other, and at the diftance of about four miles from the fhore: there are alfo at the diftance of three leagues to the weftward of thefe, two other iffands which lie near to each other, a little without the bay on the eaft fide, and very near the thore. This harbour is certainly a good one ; the entrance indeed is not wide, but the fea breeze, which blows every day from ten or twelve o'clock till funfet, makes it eafy for any fhip to go in before the wind; and it grows wider as the town is approached, fo that abreaft of it there is roomfor the largen fleet, in five or fix fathom water, with an oozy bottom. At the narrow part, the entrance is defended by two forts. The principal is Santa Cruz, which flands on the eaft point of the bay, and has been mentioned before; that on the weft fide is called fort Lozia, and is built upon a rock that lies clofe to the main; the diftance between them is about $\frac{3}{4}$ of a mile, but the channel is not quite fo broad, becaufe there are funken rocks which lie off each fort, and in this part alone there is danger: the narrownefs of the channel caufes the tides, both flood and ebb, to run with confi-
derable ftrength, fo that they cannot be ftemmed without a frefh breeze. The rockynefs of the bottom makes it alfo unfafe to anchor here; but all danger may be avoided by keeping in the middle of the channel. Within the entrance, the courfe up the bay is firf N. by W. $\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{~W}$. and N.N.W. fomething more than a league; this will bring the veffel the length of the great road; and N.W. and W.N. W. one league more will carry her to the Ifle dos Cobras, which lies before the city: fhe fhould then keep the north fide of this ifland clofe on board, and anchor above it, before a monaftery of Benedictines which ftands upon a hill at the N. W. end of the city.

The river, and indeed the whole coaft, abounds with a greater variety of fifh than we had ever feen; a day feldom paffed in which one or more of a new fpecies were not brought to Mr. Banks: the bay alfo is as well adapted for catching thefe fifh as can be conceived ; for it is full of fmall iflands, between which there is fhallow water, and proper beaches for drawing the feine. The fea, without the bay, abounds with dolphins, and large mackrel of different kinds, which readily bite at a hook, and the inhabitants always tow one after their boats for that purpofe.

Though the climate is hot, the fituation of this place is certainly wholefome; while we ftayed here the thermometer never rofe higher than $8_{3}$, though we had frequent rains, and once a very hard gale of wind.

Ships water here at the fountain in the great fquare, though, as I have obferved, the water is not good; they land their cafks upon a fmootl fandy beach, which is not more than a hundred yards diftant from the fountain, and upon application to the Viceroy, a centinel will be appointed to look after
1768.
Decenter. them, and clear the way to the fountain where they are to be filled.

Upon the whole, Rio de Janciro is a very good place for fhips to put in at that want refrefhment: the harbour is fafe and commodious; and provifions, except wheaten bread and flour, may be eafily procured: as a fuccedaneum for bread, there are yams and caffada in plenty; beef, both frefh and jerked, may be bought at about two pence farthing a pound; though, as I have before remarked, it is very lean. The people here jerk their beef by taking out the bones, cutting it into large but thin flices; then curing it with falt, and drying it in the flade: it eats very well, and, if kept dry, will remain good a long time at fea. Mutton is fcarcely to be procured, and hogs and poultry are dear ; of garden-ftuff and fruit there is abundance, of which, however, none can be preferved at fea but the pumpkin; rum, fugar, and molaffes, all excellent in their kind, may be had at a reafonable price; tobacco alfo is cheap, but it is not good. Here is a yard for building flipping, and a fmall hulk to heave down by ; for, as the tide never rifes above fix or feven foot, there is noother way of coming at a fhip's bottom.

When the boat which had been fent on fhore returned, we hoifted her on board, and flood out to fea.


## C H A P. III.

## The Paffage from Rio de Faneiro to the Entrance of the Streight of Le Maire, with a Defcription of fome of the Inbabitants of Terra del Fuego.

ON the gth of December, we obferved the fea to be covered with broad flreaks of a yellowifh colour, feveral of them a mile long, and three or four hundred yards wide: fome of the water thus coloured was taken up, and found to be full of innumerable atoms pointed ar the end, of a yellowifh colour, and none more than a quarter of a line, or the fortieth part of an inch long: in the microfcope they appeared to be Fafciculi of fmall fibres interwoven with each other, not unlike the nidus of fome of the Phyganeas, called Caddices; but whether they were animal or vegetable fubflances, whence they came, or for what they were defigned, neither Mr. Banks nor Dr. Solander could guefs. The fame appearance had been obferved before, when we firt difcovered the continent of South America.
On the 1 th we hooked a fhark, and while we were play- Sunday 1 . ing it under the cabbin window, it threw out, and drew in again feveral times what appeared to be its fomach: it proved to be a female, and upon being opened fix young ones were taken out of it; five of them were alive and fwam brifkly in a tub of water, but the fixth appeared to have been dead fome time.

Nothing remarkable happened till the $30 t h$, except that Friday 30 : we prepared for the bad weather, which we were fhortly to expect, by bending a new fuit of fails; but on this day we

$2 \cdot y^{3} \cdot{ }^{3}$




## C H A P. III.

## The Paffage from Rio de Faneiro to the Entrance of the Streight of Le Maire, witb a Defcription of Some of the Inbabitants of Terra del Fuego.

ON the 9 th of December, we obferved the fea to be covered with broad ftreaks of a yellowifh colour, feveral of them a mile long, and three or four hundred yards wide:
1768. December.

Friday 9. fome of the water thus coloured was taken up, and found to be full of innumerable atoms pointed at the end, of a yellowifh colour, and none more than a quarter of a line, or the fortieth part of an inch long: in the microfcope they appeared to be Fafciculi of fmall fibres interwoven with each other, not unlike the nidus of fome of the Pbyganeas, called Caddices; but whether they were animal or vegetable fubflances, whence they came, or for what they were defigned, neither Mr. Banks nor Dr. Solander could guefs. The fame appearance had been obferved before, when we firft difcovered the continent of South America:

On the 1 ith we hooked a fhark, and while we were play- Sunday t. ing it under the cabbin window, it threw out, and drew in again feveral times what appeared to be its flomach: it proved to be a female, and upon being opened fix young ones were taken out of it; five of them were alive and fwam brifkly in a tub of water, but the fixth appeared to have been dead fome time.

Nothing remarkable lappened till the 30 th, except that Friday 30 : we prepared for the bad weather, which we were fhortly toexpect, by bending a new fuit of fails; but on this day we
1768. ran a courfe of one hundred and fixty miles by the $\log$, December. through innumerable land infects of various kinds, fome upon the wing, and more upon the water, many of which were alive; they appeared to be exactly the fame with the Carabi, the Grylli, the Pbalane, Aranea, and other flies that are feen in England, though at this time we could not be lefs than thirty leagues from land; and fome of thefe infeets, particularly the Grylli and Aranea, never voluntarily leave it at a greater diflance than twenty yards. We judged ourfelves to be now nearly oppofite to Baye fans fond, where Mr. Dalrymple fuppofes there is a paffage quite through the continent of America; and we thought from the infects that there might be at leaft a very large river, and that it had overflowed its banks.
1769. On the 3d of January, 1769 , being in latitude $47^{\circ} \mathrm{r} 7^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and January. Tuefday 3. longitude $6 I^{\circ} 29^{\prime} 45^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{W}$. we were all looking out for Pepys' ifland, and for fome time an appearance was feen in the eaft which fo much refembled land, that we bore away for it; and it was more than two hours and an half before we were convinced that it was nothing but what failors call a Fogbank.

The people now beginning to complain of cold, each of them received what is called a Magellanic jacket, and a pair of trowfers. The jacket is made of a thick woollen-ituff, called Fearnought, which is provided by the government. We faw, from time to time, a great number of penguins, albatroffes, and heer waters, feals, whales, and porpoifes: and Wednef. 11 . on the inth, having paffed Falkland's iflands, we difcovered the coall of Terra del Fuego, at the diftance of about four leagues, extending from the W. to S.E. by S. We had here five and thirty fathom, the ground foft, fmall flate fones. As we ranged along the fhore to the S.E. at the diftance of
two or three leagues, we perceived fmoke in feveral places, which was made by the natives, probably as a fignal, for they did not continue it after we had paffed by. This day we difcovered that the fhip had got near a degree of longitude to the weftward of the $\log$, which, in this latitude, is 35 minutes of a degree on the equator: probably there is a fmall current fetting to the weftward, which may be caufed by the wefterly current coming round Cape Horn, and through the Streight of Le Maire, and the indraught of the Streight of Magellan *.

Having continued to range the coaft, on the ifth we entered the Streight of Le Maire ; but the tide turning againt us, drove us out with great violence, and raifed fuch a fea

Saturday 14. Enter the Streight of Le Maire. off Cape St. Diego, that the waves had exactly the fame appearance as they would have had if they had broke over a ledge of rocks; and when the fhip was in this torrent, fhe frequently pitched, fo that the bowfprit was under water. About noon, we got under the land between Cape St. Diego and Cape St. Vincent, where I intended to have anchored; but finding the ground every where hard and rocky, and Thallowing from thirty to twelve fathoms, I fent the Mafter to examine a little cove which lay at a fmall diftance to the eaftward of Cape St. Vincent. When he returned, he reported, that there was anchorage in four fathom, and a good bottorn, clofe to the caftward of the firt bluff point, on the eaft of Cape St. Vincent, at the very cntrance of the cove, to which I gave the name of Vincent's Bay: before this an-

[^0]${ }^{17} 69$. January. $\underbrace{\text { J.-. }}$
choring ground, however, lay feveral rocky ledges, that were covered with fea-weed; but I was told that there was not lefs than eight and nine fathom over all of them. It will probably be thought flange, that where weeds, which grow at the bottom, appear above the furface, there fhould be this depth of water; but the weeds which grow upon rocky ground in thefe countries, and which always diftinguifh it from fand and ooze, are of an enormous fize. The leaves are four foot long, and fome of the flalks, though not thicker than a man's thumb, above one hundred and twenty: Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander examined fome of them, over which we founded and had fourteen fathom, which is eightyfour feet; and, as they made a very acute angle with the bottom, they were thought to be at leaft one half longer: the foot ftalks were fwelled into an air veffel, and Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander called this plant Fucus giganteus. Upon the report of the Mafter, I food in with the fhip; but not truft ing implicitly to his intelligence, I continued to found, and found but four fathom upon the finf ledge that I went over; concluding, therefore, that I could not anchor here without rifk, I determined to feek fome port in the Streight, where I might get on board fuch wood and water as we wanted.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, however, being very defirous to go on fhore, I fent a boat with them and their people, while I kept plying as near as poffible with the fhip.

Having been on fhore four hours, they returned about nine in the evening, with above an hundred different plants and flowers, all of them wholly unknown to the botanifts of Europe. They found the country about the bay to be in general flat, the bottom of it in particular was a plain, covered with grafs, which might eafily have been made into a large quantity of hay; they found alfo abundance of good
wood and water, and fowl in great plenty. Among other things, of which Nature has been liberal in this place, is Winter's bark, Winteranea aromatica; which may eafily be known by its broad leaf, fhaped like the laurel, of a light green colour without, and inclining to blue within : the bark is eafily.ftripped with a bone or a ftick, and its virtues are well known : it may be ufed for culinary purpofes as a fpice, and is not lefs pleafant than wholefome : here is alfo plenty of wild celery and fcurvy grafs. The trees are chiefly of onc kind, a fpecies of the birch, called Betula antarctica; the ftem is from thirty to forty feet long, and from two to three feet in diameter, fo that in a cafe of neceflity they might poffibly fupply a fhip with top-mafts: they are a light white wood, bear a fmall leaf, and cleave very ftraight. Cranberries were alfo found here in great plenty, both white and red.

The perfons who landed faw none of the inhabitants, but fell in with two of their deferted huts, one in a thick wood, and the other clofe by the beach.

Having taken the boat on board, I made fail into the Streight, and at thrce in the morning of the 15 th, I anchored Sunday 15 . in twelve fathom and an half, upon coral rocks, before a fmall cove, which we took for Port Maurice, at the diftance of about half a mile from the fhore. Two of the natives came down to the beach, expecting us to land; but this fpot afforded fo little fhelter, that I at length determined not to examine it: I therefore got under fail again about ten o'clock, and the favages retired into the woods.

At two o'clock, we anchored in the bay of Good Succefs; and after dinner I went on thore, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, to look for a watering-place, and fpeak to the Indians, feveral of whom had come in fight. We landed on the farboard fide of the hay near fome rocks, which
1769. made fmooth water and good landing; thirty or forty of the Indians foon made their appearance at the end of a fandy beach on the other fide of the bay, but feeing our number, which was ten or twelve, they retreated. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander then advanced about one hundred yards before us, upon which two of the Indians returned, and, having advanced fome paces towards them, fat down; as foon as they came up, the Indians rofe, and each of them having. a fmall ftick in his hand threw it away, in a direction both from themfelves and the ftrangers, which was confidered as the renunciation of weapons in token of peace: they then walked brifkly towards their companions, who had halted at about fifty yards behind them, and beckoned the Gentlemen to follow, which they did. They were received with many uncouth figns of friendhip ; and, in return, they diftributed among them fome beads and ribbons, which had been brought on fhore for that purpofe, and with which they were greatly delighted. A mutual confidence and good-will being thus produced, our parties joined; the converfation, fuch as it was, became general; and three of them accompanied us back to the fhip. When they came on board, one of them, whom we took to be a prieft, performed much the fame ceremonies which M. Bougainville defcribes, and fuppoles to be an exorcifm. When he was introduced into a new part of the hip, or when any thing that he had not feen before caught his attention, he fhouted with all his force for fome minutes, without directing his voice either to us or his companions.

They eat fome bread and fome beef, but not apparently with much pleafure, though fuch part of what was given them as they did not eat they took away with them; but they would not fwallow a drop either of wine or fpirits: they put the glafs to their lips, but, having tafted the liquor, they
they returned it, with ftrong expreffions of difguft. Curiofity feems to be one of the few paffions which diftinguifh men from brutes; and of this our guefts appeared to have very little. They went from one part of the fhip to another, and looked at the vaft variety of new objects that every moment prefented themfelves, without any expreflion either of wonder or pleafure, for the vociferation of our exorcift feemed to be neither.

After having been on board about two hours, they expreffed a defire to go afhore. A boat was immediately ordered, and Mr. Banks thought fit to accompany them: he landed them in fafety, and conducted them to their companions, among whom he remarked the fame vacant indifference, as in thofe who had been on board; for as on one fide there appeared no eagernefs to relate, fo on the other there feemed to be no curiofity to hear, how they had beerr received, or what they had feen. In about half an hour, Mr. Banks returned to the fhip, and the Indians retired from the fhore.

## C H A P. IV.

## An Account of what bappened in afcending a Mountain to Search for Plants.

x769. N the 16th, early in the morning, Mr. Banks and Dr. january. Solander, with their attendants and fervants, and two feamen to affift in carrying the baggage, accompanied by Mr. Monkhoufe the Surgeon, and Mr. Green the Aftronomer, fet out from the fhip, with a view to penetrate as far as they could into the country, and return at night. The hills, when viewed at a diftance, feemed to be partly a wood, partly a plain, and above them a bare rock. Mr. Banks hoped to get through the wood, and made no doubt, but that, beyond it, he fhould, in a country which no botanift had ever yet vifited, find alpine plants which would abundantly compenfate his labour. They entered the wood at a fmall fandy beach, a little to the weftward of the watering-place, and continued to afcend the hill, through the pathlefs wildernefs, till three o'clock, before they got a near view of the places which they intended to vifit. Soon after they reached what they had taken for a plain ; but, to their great difappointment, found it a fwamp, covered with low bufhes of birch, about three feet high, interwoven with each other, and fo flubborn that they could not be bent out of the way; it was therefore neceffary to lift the leg over them, which at every flep was buried, ancle deep, in the foil. To aggravate the pain and difficulty of fuch travelling, the weather, which hitherto had been very fine, much like one of our bright days in May, became gloomy and cold; with fudden
blafts of a moft piercing wind, accompanied with fnow. They pufhed forward, however, in good firits, notwithftanding their fatigue, hoping the worft of the way was paft, and that the bare rock which they had feen from the tops of the lower hills was not more than a mile before them ; but when they had got about two thirds over this woody fwamp, Mr. Buchan, one of Mr. Banks's draughtmen, was unhappily feized with a fit. This made it neceffary for the whole company to halt, and as it was impoffible that he fhould go any farther, a fire was kindled, and thofe who were moft fatigued were left behind to take care of him. Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Green, and Mr. Monkhoufe went on, and in a fhort time reached the fummit. As botanifts, their expectations were here abundantly gratified; for they found a great variety of plants, which, with refpect to the alpine plants in Europe, are exactly what thofe plants are with refpect to fuch as grow in the plain.

The cold was now become more fevere, and the fnowblafts more frequent; the day alfo was fo far fpent, that it was found impolible to get back to the fhip before the next morning: to pafs the night upon fuch a mountain, in fuch a climate, was not only comfortlefs, but dreadful; it was impoffible however to be avoided, and they were to provide for it as well as they could.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, while they were improving an opportunity which they had, with fo much danger and difficulty, procured, by gathering the plants which they found upon the mountain, fent Mr. Green and Mr. Monk-.. houfe back to Mr. Buchan and the people that were with him, with dircctions to bring them to a hill, which they thought lay in a better rout for returning to the wood, and which was therefore appointed as a general rendezvous. It
1769. January. Monday 16.
1769. was propofed, that from this hill they fhould pufh through the fwamp, which feemed by the new rout not to be more than half a mile over, into the fhelter of the wood, and there build their wigwam, and make a fire: this, as their way was all down hill, it feemed eafy to accomplifh. Their whole company affembled at the rendezvous, and, though pinched with the cold, were in health and fpirits, Mr. Buchan himfelf having recovered his ftrength in a much greater degree than could have been expected. It was now near eight o'clock in the evening, but fill good day-light, and they fet forward for the neareft valley, Mr. Banks himfelf undertaking to bring up the rear, and fee that no flaggler was left behind: this may perhaps be thought a fuperfluous caution, but it will foon appear to be otherwife. Dr. Solander, who had more than once croffed the mountains which divide Sweden from Norway, well knew that extreme cold, efpecially when joined with fatigue, produces a torpor and fleepinefs that are almoft irrefiftible: he therefore conjured the company to keep moving, whatever pain it might coft them, and whatever relief they might be promifed by an inclination to reft: Whoever fits down, fays he, will fleep; and whoever fleeps, will wake no morc. Thus, at once admonifhed and alarmed, they fet forward; but while they were ftill upon the naked rock, and before they had got among the bufhes, the cold became fuddenly fo intenfe, as to produce the effects that had been moft dreaded. Dr. Solander himfelf was the firft who found the inclination, againft which he had warned others, irrefifible; and infifted upon being fuffered to lie down. Mr. Banks intreated and remonftrated in vain, down he lay upon the ground, though it was covered with fnow; and it was with great diffeculty that his friend kept him from fleeping. Richmond alfo, one of the black fervants,

## ROUND THE WORLD.

fervants, began to linger, having fuffered from the cold in the fame manner as the Doctor. Mr. Banks, therefore, fent five of the company, among whom was Mr. Buchan, forward to get a fire ready at the firf convenient place they could find; and himfelf, with four others, remained with the Doctor and Richmond, whom partly by perfuafion and entreaty, and partly by force, they brought on; but when they had got through the greateft part of the birch and fwamp, they both declared they could go no farther. Mr. Banks had recourfe again to entreaty and expoftulation, but they produced no effect: when Richmond was told, that if he did not go on he would in a fhort time be frozen to death; he anfwered, That. he defired nothing but to lie down and die: the Doctor did not fo explicitly renounce his life ; he faid he was willing to go on, but that he muft firft take fome fleep, though he had before told the company that to fleep was to perifh. Mr. Banks and the reft found it impoffible to carry them, and there being no remedy they were both fuffered to fit down, being partly fupported by the bufhes, and in a few minutes they fell into a profound fleep: foon after, fome of the people who had been fent forward returned, with the welcome news that a fire was kindled about a quarter of a mile farther on the way. Mr. Banks then endeavoured to wake Dr. Solander and happily fucceeded: but, though he had not flept five minutes, he had almoft loft the ufe of his limbs, and the mufcles were fo flurunk that his fhoes fell from his feet; he confented to go forward with fuch affiftance as could be given him, but no attempts to relieve poor Richmond were fuccefsful. It being found impoflible to make him ftir, after fome time liad been loft in the attempt, Mr. Banks left his other black fervant and a feaman, who feemed to have fuffered leaft by the cold, to look after him; promifing, that as foon as two others fhould be fufficiently warmed, they fhould Vol. II.
1769.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

$\underbrace{\begin{array}{c}1769 . \\ \text { January. }\end{array}}$ Monday 16.
be relieved. Mr. Banks, with much difficulty, at length got the Doctor to the fire ; and fool after lent two of the people who had been refrefhed, in hopes that, with the affiftance of thofe who had been left behind, they would be able to bring Richmond, even though it fhould fill be found impoffible to wake him. In about half an hour, however, they had the mortification to fee thee two men return alone; they faid, that they had been all round the place to which they had been directed, but could neither find Richmond nor thole who had been left with him; and that though they had flouted many times, no voice had replied. This was matter of equal furprife and concern, particularly to Mr. Banks, who, while he was wondering how it could happen, miffed a bottle of rum, the company's whole flock, which they now concluded to be in the knapfack of one of the abfentees. It was conjectured, that with this Richmond had been rouzed by the two perfons who had been left with him, and that, having perhaps drank too freely of it themfelves, they had all rambled from the place where they had been left, in fearch of the fire, inftead of waiting for those who fhould have been their affiftants and guides. Another fall of now now came on, and continued inceffantly for two hours, fo that all hope of feeing them again, at leaf alive, were given up; but about twelve o'clock, to the great joy of thole at the fire, a flouting was heard at forme diftance. Mr. Banks, with four more, immediately went out, and found the feaman with jut frength enough left to flagger along, and call out for afliftance: Mr . Banks Cent him immediately to the fire, and, by his direction, proceeded in fearch of the other two, whom he foo after found. Richmond was upon his legs, but not able to put one before the other; his companion was lying upon the ground, as infenfible as a fore. All hands

## ROUND THE WORLD.

were now called from the fire, and an attempt was made to carry them to it; but this, notwithftanding the united efforts of the whole company, was found to be impoffible. The night was extremely dark, the fnow was now very deep, and, under thefe additional difadvantages, they found it very difficult to make way through the bufhes and the bog for themfelves, all of them getting many falls in the attempt. The only alternative was to make a fire upon the fpot ; but the fnow which had fallen, and was ftill falling, befides what was every moment hlaken in flakes from the trees, rendered it equally impracticable, to kindle one there, and to bring any part of that which had been kindled in the wood thither: they were, therefore, reduced to the fad neceffity of leaving the unhappy wretches to their fate; having firft made them a bed of boughs from the trees, and fpread a covering of the fame kind over them to a confiderable height.

Having now been expofed to the cold and the fnow near an hour and an half, fome of the reft began to lofe their fenfibility; and one Brifcoe, another of Mr. Banks's fervants, was fo ill, that it was thought he muft die before he could be got to the fire.

At the fire, however, at length they arrived; and paffed the night in a fituation, which, however dreadful in itfelf, was rendered more afflicting by the remembrance of what was paft, and the uncertainty of what was to come. Of twelve, the number that fet out together in health and fpirits, two were fuppofed to be already dead; a third was fo ill, that it was very doubtful whether he would be able to go forward in the morning; and a fourth, Mr. Buchan, was in danger of a return of his fits, by frefh fatigue after fo uncomfortable a night: they were diftant from the fhip a long day's

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. journey, through pathlefs woods, in which it was too prot- bable they might be bewildered till they were overtaken by the next night; and, not havirg prepared for a journey of more than eight or ten hours, they were wholly deftitute of provifions, except a vulture, which they happened to fhoot while they were out, and which, if equally divided, would not afford each of them half a meal; and they knew not how much more they might fuffer from the cold, as the fnow ftill continued to fall. A dreadful teftimony of the feverity of the climate, as it was now the midft of fummer in this part of the world, the twenty-firt of December being here the longeft day; and every thing might jufly be dreaded from a phænomenon which, in the correfponding feafon, is unknown even in Norway and Lapland.
Tueflay 17 . When the morning dawned, they faw nothing round themr, as far as the eye could reach, but fnow, which feemed to lie as thick upon the trees as upon the ground; and the blafts returned fo frequently, and wittli fuch violence; that they found it impoffible for them to fet out: how long this might laft they knew not, and they had but too much reafon to apprehend that it would confine them in that defolate foreft till they perithed with hunger and cold.
After having fuffered the mifery and terror of this fituation till fix oclock in the morning, they conceived fome hope of deliverance by difcovering the place of the fun through the clouds, which were become thinner, and began to break away. Their fiut care was to fee whether the poor wretches whom they had been obliged to leave among the bufhes were yet alive; three of the company were difpatched for that purpofe, and very foon afterwards returned with the melancholy newss, that they were dead.

Notwithfanding the flattering appearance of the fky, the fnow fill continued to fall fo thick that they could not venture out upon their journey to the hip; but about 8 o'clock a fmall regular brecze fprung up, which, with the prevailing influence of the fun, at length cleared the air ; and they foon after, with great joy, faw the fnow fall in large fakes from the trees, a cortain fign of an approaching thaw : they now examined more critically the fate of their invalids; Brifcoe was ftill very ill, but faid, that he thought himfelf. able to walk; and Mr. Buchan was much better than either lic or his friends had any reafon to expect. They were now, however, preffed by the calls of hunger, to which, after long fafting, every confideration of future good or evil immediately gives way. Before they fet forward, therefore, it was unanimoufly agreed, that they fhould eat their vulture ; the bird was accordingly fkinned, and, it being thought beft to divide it before it was fit to be caten, it was cut into ten portions, and every man cooked his own as he thought fit. After this repan, which furnifhed each of them with about thiree mouthfuls, they prepared to fet out; but it was ten o'clock before the fnow was fufficiently gone off to render a march practicable. After a walk of about three hours, they were very agreeably furprifed to find themfelves upon the beach, and much nearer to the fhip than they had any reafon to expect. Upon reviewing their track from the veffel, they perceived, that, inftead of afcending the hill in a line, fo as to penetrate into the country, they had made almoft a circle round it. When they came on board, they congratulated each other upon their fafcty, with a joy that no man can feel who has not been expofed to equal danger; and as I had fuffered great anxiety at their not returning in the evening of the day on which they fer out, I was not wholly without my fhare.

## C H A P. V.

The Paffage through the Streight of Le Maire, and a further Defcription of the Inbabitants of Terra del Frego, and its Productions.
1769. January.

Wednef. Is. Thurfday 19. Eriday 20.

ON the 18 th and 1 gth, we were delayed in getting on board our wood and water by a fwell: but on the $20 t h$, the weather being more moderate, we again fent the boat on fhore, and Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went in it. They landed in the bottom of the bay, and while my people were employed in cutting brooms, they purfued their great object, the improvement of natural knowlege, with fuccefs, collecting many fhells and plants which hitherto have been altogether unknown: they came on board to dinner, and afterwards went again on fhore to vifit an Indian town, which fome of the people had reported to lie about two miles up the country. They found the diftance not more than by the account, and they approached it by what appeared to be the common road, yet they were above an hour in getting thither, for they were frequently up to their knees in mud; when they got within a fmall diftance, two of the people came out to meet them, with fuch fate as they could allume; when they joined them, they began to hollow as they had done on board the flip, without addrefing themfelves either to the ftrangers or their companions; and having continued this ftrange vociferation fome time, they conducted them to the town. It was fituated on a dry knoll, or fmall hill, covered with woorl, none of which feemed to have been cleared away, and confifted of about twelve or fourteen hovels, of the moft

ride and inartificial ftructure that can be imagined. They were nothing more than a few poles fet up fo as to incline
1769. January. towards each other, and meet at the top, forming a kind of a cone, like fome of our bee-hives: on the weather fide they were covered with a few boughs, and a little grafs; and on the lee fide about one eighth of the circle was left open, both for a door and a fire place; and of this kind were the huts that had been feen in St. Vincent's bay, in one of which the embers of a fire were ftill remaining. Furniture they had none ; a little grafs, which lay round the infide of the hovel, ferved both for chairs and beds; and of all the utenfils which neceffity and ingenuity have concurred to produce among. other favage nations, they faw only a bafket to carry in the land, a fatchel to hang at the back, and the bladder of fome beaft to hold water, which the natives drink through a hole that is made near the top for that purpofe.

The inhabitants of this town were a fmall tribe, not more than fifty in number, of both fexes and of every age. Their colour refembles that of the ruft of iron mixed with oil, and they have long black hair: the men are large, but clumfily built; their flature is from five feet eight to five feet ten; the women are much lefs, few of them being more than five feet high. Their whole apparel conffifts of the fkin of a guanicoe, or feal, which is thrown over their fhoulders, exactly in the flate in which it came from the animal's back; a piece of the fame fkin, which is drawn over their feet, and gathered about the ancles like a purfe, and a fimall flap, which is worn by the women as a fuccedaneum for a figleaf. The men wear their cloak open, the women tic it about their waift with a thong. But although they are content to be naked, they are very ambitious to be fine. Their faces were painted in various forms : the region of the eye-


## ROUND THE WORLD.

ride and inartificial fructure that can be imagined. They were nothing more than a few poles fet up fo as to incline towards each other, and meet at the top, forming a kind of a cone, like fome of our bee-hives: on the weather fide they were covered with a few boughs, and a little grafs; and on the lee fide about one eighth of the circle was left open, both for a door and a fire place; and of this kind were the huts that had been feen in St. Vincent's bay, in one of which the embers of a fire were ftill remaining. Furniture they had none; a little grafs, which lay round the infide of the hovel, ferved both for chairs and beds; and of all the utenfils which neceffity and ingenuity have concurred to produce among. other favage nations, they faw only a bafket to carry in the Irand, a fatchel to hang at the back, and the bladder of fome beaft to hold water, which the natives drink through a hole that is inade near the top for that purpofe.
The inhabitants of this town were a fmall tribe, not more than fifty in number, of both fexes and of every age. Their colour refembles that of the ruft of iron mixed with oil, and they have long black hair: the men are large, but clumfily built; their flature is from five feet eight to five feet ten; the women are much lefs, few of them being more than five feet high. Their whole apparel confifts of the fkin of a guanicoe, or feal, which is thrown over their fhoulders ${ }_{2}$ exactly in the flate in which it came from the animal's back; a piece of the fame fkin, which is drawn over their feet, and gathered about the ancles like a purfe, and a finall flap, which is worn by the women as a fuccedancum for a figleaf. The men wear their cloak open, the women tie it about their waift with a thong. But although they are content to be naked, they are very ambitious to be fine. Their faces were painted in various forms : the region of the eye-
was in general white, and the reft of the face adorned with horizontal ftreaks of red and black; yet fcarcely any two were exactly alike. This decoration feems to be more profufe and claborate upon particular occafions, for the two Gentlemen who introduced Mr. Banks and the Doctor into the town, were almoft covered with ftreaks of black in all directions, fo as to make a very ftriking appearance. Both men and women wore bracelets of fuch beads as they could make themfelves of fmall fhells or bones; the women both upon their wrifts and ancles, the men upon their wrifts only; but to compenfate for the want of bracelets on their legs, they wore a kind of fillet of brown worfted round their heads. They feemed to fet a particular value upon any thing that *was red, and preferred beads even to a knife or a hatchet.

Their language in general is guttural, and they exprefs fome of their words by a found exactly like that which we make to clear the throat when any thing happens to obftruct it; yet they have words which would be deemed foft in the better languages of Europe. Mr. Banks learnt what he fuppofes to be their name for beads and water. When they wanted beads, inftead of ribbons or other trifles, they faid balle"áa; and when they were taken on fhore from the fhip, and by figns afked where water might be found, they made the fign of drinking, and pointing as well to the cafks as the watering place, cried Oodâ.

We faw no appearance of their having any food but hellfifh; for though feals were frequently feen near the fhore, they feemed to have no implements for taking them. The fhell-fifh is collected by the women, whofe bufinefs it feems to be to attend at low water, with a bafket in one hand, a ftick, pointed and barbed, in the other, and a fatchel at their backs: they loofen the limpets, and other fifh that adhere to
the rocks, with the ftick, and put them into the barket; which, when full, they empty into the fatchel.
The only things that we found among them in which there was the leaft appearance of neatnefs or ingenuity, were their weapons, which confifted of a bow and arrows. The bow was not inclegantly made, and the arrows were the neatef that we had ever feen: they were of wood, polifhed to the higheft degree ; and the point, which was of giafs or flint, and barbed, was formed and fitted with wonderful dexterity. We faw alfo fome pieces of glafs and flint among them unwrought, befides rings, buttons, cloth, and canvafs, with other European commodities ; they muft therefore fometimes travel to the northward, for it is many years fince any fhip has been fo far fouth as this part of Terra del Fuego. We obferved alfo, that they fhewed no furprife at our firearms, with the ufe of which they appeared to be well acquainted ; for they made figns to Mr. Banks to fhoot a feal which followed the boat as they were going on fhore from the fhip.
M. de Bougainville, who, in January $1 ; 68$, juft one year before us, had been on fhore upon this coaft in latitude $53^{\circ} 40^{\prime} 41^{\prime \prime}$, had, among other things, given glafs to the people whom he found here ; for he fays, that a boy about twelve years old took it into his head to eat fome of it : by this unhappy accident he died in great mifery; but the endeavours of the good father, the French Aumonier, were more fuccefsful than thofe of the Surgeon; for though the Surgeon could not fave his life, the charitable Prieft found means to fleal a Chriftian baptifm upon him fo fecretly, that none of his Pagan relations knew any thing of the matter. Thefe people might probably have fome of the very glafs which Bougainville left behind him, either from other natives, or perhaps Vol. II.
from
1769. January.
176. from himfelf; for they appeared rather to be a travelling hord, than to have any fixed habitation. Their houfes are built to fland but for a fhort time; they have no utenfil or furniture but the bafket and fatchel, which have been mentioncd before, and which have handles adapted to the carrying them about, in the hand and upon the back; the only cloathing they had here was fcarcely fufficient to prevent their perifhing with cold in the fummer of this country, much lefs in the extreme feverity of winter; the fhell-fifh which feems to be their only food muft foon be exhaufted at any one place; and we had feen houfes upon what appeared to be a deferted ftation in St. Vincent's bay.
It is alfo probable that the place where we found them was only a temporary refidence, from their having here nothing like a boat or canoe, of which it can fcarcely be fuppofed that they were wholly deftitute, efpecially as they were not fea-fick, or particularly affected, either in our boat or on board the fhip. We conjectured that there might be a ftreight or inlet, running from the fea through great part of this inland, from the Streight of Magellan, whence thefe people might come, leaving their canoes where fuch inlet terminated.
They did not appear to have among them any government or fubordination: none was more refpected than another; yet they feemed to live together in the utmoft harmony and good fellowfhip. Neither did we difcover any appearance of religion among them, except the noifes which have been mentioned, and which we fuppofed to be a fupertitious ceremony, merely becaufe we could refer them to nothing clfe: they were ufed only by one of thofe who came on board the fhip, and the two who conducted Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander to the town, whom we therefore conjectured to be
priefts. Upon the whole, thefe people appeared to be the moft deftitute and forlorn, as well as the mot flupid of all human beings ; the outcafts of Nature, who fpent their lives in wandering about the dreary waftes, where two of our people perifhed with cold in the midtt of fummer; with no dwelling but a wretched hovel of fticks and grafs, which would not only admit the wind, but the fnow and the rain ; almoft naked; and deftitute of every convenience that is furnifhed by the rudeft art, having no implement even to drefs their food : yet they were content. They feemed to have no wifh for any thing more than they poffeffed, nor did any thing that we offered them appear acceptable but beads, as an ornamental fuperfluity of life. What bodily pain they might fuffer from the feverities of their winter we could not know; but it is cercain, that they fuffered nothing from the want of the innumerable articles which we confider, not as the luxuries and conveniencies only, but the neceffaries of life: as their defires are few, they probably enjoy them all; and how much they may be gainers by an exemption from the care, labour and folicitude, which arife from a perpetual and unfuccefsful effort to gratify that infinite varicty of defires; which the refinements of artificial life have produced among us, is not very eafy to determine: poffibly this may counterbalance all the real difadvantages of their fituation in comparifon with ours, and make the feales by which good and cvil are diftributed to man, hang even between us.

In this place we faw no quadruped except feals, fea-lions, and logs; of the dogs it is remarkable that they bark, which thofe that are originally bred in America do not. And this is a further proof, that the people we faw here had, either immediately or remotely, communicated with the inhabitants of Europe. There are, however, other quadrupeds in this part of the country ; for when Mr. Banks was at the top

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

176 g .
January. the woods, he faw the footfteps of a large beaft imprinted upon the furface of a bog, though he could not with any probability guefs of what kind it might be.

Of land-birds there are but few; Mr. Banks faw none larger than an Englifh blackbird, except fome hawks and a vulture; but of water-fowl there is great plenty, particularly ducks. Of fifh we faw fcarce any, and with our hooks could catch none that was fit to eat; but fhell-fifh, limpets, clams, and mufcles were to be found in abundance.

Among the infects, which were not numerous, there was neither gnat nor mufquito, nor any other fpecies that was either hurtful or troublefome, which perhaps is more than can be faid of any other uncleared chsentry. During the fnow-blafts, which happened every day while we were here, they hide themfelves; and the moment it is fair they appear again, as nimble and vigorous as the warmeft weather could make them.

Of plants, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander found a vaft variety; the far greater part wholly different from any that have been hitherto defcribed. Befides the birch, and winter's bark, which have been mentioned already, there is the beach, Fagus antarEficus, which, as well as the birch, may be ufed for timber. The plants cannot be enumerated here; but as the fcurvy-grafs, Cardamine antifcorbutica, and the wild celery, Apium antariticum, probably contain antifcorbutic qualities, which may be of great benefit to the crews of fuch fhips as fhall hereafter touch at this place, the following fhort defcription is inferted :

The fcurvy-grafs will be found in plenty in damp places, near fprings of water, and in general in all places that lie near the beach, efpecially at the watering-place in the Bay
of Good Succefs: when it is young, the ftate of its greatef perfection, it lies flat upon the ground, having many leaves of a bright green, fanding in pairs oppofite to each other, with a fingle one at the end, which generally makes the fifth upon a foot falk : the plant, paffing from this ftate, fhoots up in falks that are fometimes two fect high, at the top of which are fmall white bloffoms, and thefe are fucceeded by long pods: the whole plant greatly refembles that which in England is called Lady's fmock, or Cuckow-flower. The wild celery is very like the celery in our gardens, the flowers are white, and ftand in the fame manner, in fmall tufts at the top of the branches, but the leaves are of a deeper green. It grows in great abundance near the beach, and generally upon the foil that lies next above the fpring tides. It may indeed eafily be known by the tafte, which is between that of celery and parfley. We ufed the celery in large quantities, particularly in our foup, which, thus medicated, produced the fame good effects which feamen generally derive from a vegetable diet, after having been long confined to falt provifions.

On Sunday, the 22d of January, about two o'clock in the Sunday 2:. morning, having got our wood and water on board, we failed out of the Bay, and continued our courfe through the Streight.

## CHAP. VI.

A general Defcription of the S. E. part of Terra del Fuego, and the Streigbt of Le Maire; with Some Remarks on Lord Anfon's Account of them, and Direetions for the Paflage Weftward, round this Part of America, into the Soutb Seas,

ALMOST all writers who have mentioned the ifland of Terra del Fuego, defcribe it as deflitute of wood, and covered with fnow. In the winter it may poffibly be covered with fnow, and thofe who faw it at that feafon might perhaps be eafily deccived, by its appearance, into an opinion that it was deftitute of wood. Lord Anfon was there in the beginning of March, which anfwers to our September; and we were there the beginning of January, which anfwers to our July, which may account for the difference of his defcription of it from ours. We fell in with it about twentyone leagues to the weftward of the Streight of Le Maire, and from the time that we firft faw it, trees were plainly to be diftinguilhed with our glaffes; and as we came nearer, though here and there we difcovered patches of finow, the fides of the hills and the fca-coaft appeared to be covered with a beautiful verdure. The hills are lofty, but not mountainous, though the fummits of them are quite naked. The foil in the valleys is rich, and of a confiderable depth; and at the foot of almon every hill there is a brook, the water of which has a reddifh hue, like that which runs through our turf bogs in England, but it is by no means ill tafted, and upon the

## ROUND THE WORLD.

the whole proved to be the beft that we took in during our voyage. We ranged the coaft to the Streight, and had found-

## 1759. $\underbrace{\text { January. }}$

 ings all the way from 40 to 20 fathom, upon a gravelly and fandy bottom. The moft remarkable land on Terra del Fuego is a hill, in the form of a fugar-loaf, which flands on the weft fide not far from the fea; and the three hills, called the three brothers, about nine miles to the weftward of Cape St. Diego, the low point that forms the north entrance of the Streight of Le Maire.It is faid in the account of Lord Anfon's voyagc, that it is difficult to determine exactly where the Streight lies, though the appearance of Terra del Fucgo be well known, without knowing alfo the appearance of Staten Land; and that fome navigators have been deceived by three hills on Staten Land, which have been miftaken for the three brothers on Terra del Fuego, and fo over-hhot the Streight. But no fhip can poffibly mifs the Streight that coafts Terra del Fuego within fight of land, for it will then, of itfelf, be fufficiently confpicuous; and Staten Land, which forms the ealt fide, will be ftill more manifeftly diftinguifhed, for there is no land on Terra del Fuego like it. The Streight of Le Maire can be miffed only by ftanding too far to the eaftward, without kecping the land of Terra del Fucgo in fight: if this is done, it may be miffed, however accurately the appearance of the coaft of Staten Land may have been exhibited; and if this is not done, it cannot be miffed, though the appearance of that coaft be not known. The entrance of the Streight fhould not be attempted but with a fair wind and moderate weather, and upon the very beginning of the tide of flood, which happens here, at the full and change of the moon, about one or two o'clock; it is alfo beft to keep as near to the Terra del Fuego fhore as the winds will admit. By attending to thefe particulars, a fhip may be got quite through the
1769. January.

Streight in one tide ; or, at leaft, to the fouthward of Succefs Bay, into which it will be more prudent to put, if the wind fhould be foutherly, than to attempt the weathering of Staten Land with a lee wind and a current, which may endanger her being driven on that ifland.
The Streight itfelf, which is bounded on the weft by Terra del Fuego, and on the eaf by the weft end of Staten Land, is about five leagues long, and as many broad. The Bay of Cood Succefs lies about the middle of it, on the Terra del Fuego fide, and is difcovered immediately upon entering the Streight from the northward; and the fouth head of it may be diftinguifhed by a mark on the land, that has the appearance of a broad road, leading up from the fea into the country: at the entrance it is half a league wide, and runs in weftward about two miles and an half. There is good anchorage in every part of it, in from ten to feven fathom, clear ground; and it affords plenty of exceeding good wood and water. The tides flow in the Bay, at the full and change of the moon, about four or five o'clock, and rife about five or fix feet perpendicular. But the flood runs two or three hours longer in the Streight than in the Bay; and the ebb, or northerly current, runs with near double the frength of the flood.

In the appearance of Staten Land, we did not difcover the wildnefs and horror that is afcribed to it in the account of Lord Anfon's voyage. On the north fide are the appearances of bays or harbours; and the land, when we faw it, was neither deflitute of wood nor verdure, nor covered with fnow. The ifland feems to be about twelve leagues in length, and five broad.
On the weft fide of the Cape of Good Succefs, which forms the S. W. entrance of the Streight, lics Valentine's Bay, of which
which we only faw the entrance; from this bay the land trends away to the W.S. W. for twenty or thirty leagues; it appears to be high and mountainous, and forms feveral bays and inlets.

At the diftance of fourteen leagues from the bay of Good Succefs, in the direction of S. W. $\frac{x}{2}$ W. and between two and three leagues from the fhore, lies New Ifland. It is about two leagues in length from N.E. to S. W. and terminates to the N.E. in a remarkable hillock. At the diftance of feven leagues from New Ifland, in the direction of S.W. lies the ifle Evouts; and a little to the weft of the fouth of this ifland lie Barnevelt's two fmall flat iflands, clofe to each other; they are partly furrounded with rocks, which rife to different heights above the water, and lie twenty-four leagues from the Streight of Le Maire. At the diftance of three leagues from Barnevelt's iflands, in the direction of S. W. by S. lies the S. E. point of Hermit's iflands : thefe iflands lic S.E. and N. W. and are pretty high: from moft points of view they will be taken for one ifland, or a part of the main.

From the S. E. point of Hermit's iflands to Cape Horn the courfe is S.W. by S. diftance three leagues.

The appearance of this Cape and Hermit's iflands is reprefented in the chart of this coaft, from our firt making land to the Cape, which includes the Streight of Le Maire, and part of Staten Land. In this chart I lave laid down no land, nor traced out any fhore but what I faw myfelf, and thus far it may be depended upon: the bays and inlets, of which we faw only the openings, are not traced ; it can, however, farcely be doubted, but that moft, if not all of them, afford anchorage, wood and water. The Dutch fquadron, commanded by Hermit, certainly put into fome of them in the year 1624; and it was Chapenham, the Vice Vol. II.

176g. Admiral of this fquadron, who firft difcovered that the land
January. of Cape Horn confifted of a number of iflands. The account, however, which thofe who failed in Hermit's fleet have given of thefe parts is extremely defective; and thofe of Schouton and Le Maire are ftill worfe: it is therefore no wonder that the charts hitherto publifhed fhould be erroneous, not only in laying down the land, but in the latitude and longitude of the places they contain. I will, however; venture to affert, that the longitude of few parts of the world is better afcertained than that of the Streight of Le Maire, and Cape Horn, in the chart now offered to the public, as it was laid down by feveral obfervations of the fun and moon, that were made both by myfelf and Mr. Green.

The variation of the compafs on this coaft I found to bc from $23^{\circ}$ to $25^{\circ}$ E. except near Barnevelt's iflands and Cape Horn, where we found it lefs, and unfettled; probably it is difturbed here by the land, as Hermit's fquadron, in this very place found all their compaffes differ from each other. The declination of the dipping-needle, when fet up on fhore in Succefs Bay, was $68^{\circ}{ }^{1} 5^{\prime}$ below the horizon.

Between Streight Le Maire and Cape Horn, we found a current fetting, generally very flrong, to the N. E. when we were in with the fhore; but loft it when we were at the dife tance of fifteen or twenty leagues.

Thurfday 26.
On the 26th of January, we took our departure from Cape Horn, which lies in latitude $55^{\circ} 53^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $68^{\circ} \mathrm{I} 3^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$ 。 The fartheft fouthern latitude that we made was $60^{\circ} 10^{\circ}$, our longitude was then $74^{\circ} 30^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. ; and we found the variation of the compafs, by the mean of eighteen azimuths, to be $27^{\circ} 9^{\prime}$ E. As the weather was frequently calm, Mr. Banks went out in a fmall boat to fhoot birds, among which were fome albatroffes and fheerwaters. The albatroffes were obw
ferved to be larger than thofe which had been taken northward of the Streight; one of them meafured ten feet two inches from the tip of one wing to that of the other, when they were extended: the fheerwater, on the contrary, is lefs, and darker coloured on the back. The albatroffes we fkinned, and having foaked them in falt water till the morning, we parboiled them, then throwing away the liquor, ftewed them in a very little frefh water till they were tender, and had them ferved up with favoury fauce; thus dreffed, the difh was univerfally commended, and we eat of it very heartily even when there was frefh pork upon the table.

From a variety of obfervations which were made with great care, it appeared probable in the higheft degree, that, from the time of our leaving the land to the 13 th of February, when we were in latitude $49^{\circ} 32^{\prime}$, and longitude $90^{\circ} 37^{\prime}$, we had no current to the weft.

At this time we had advanced about $12^{\circ}$ to the weftward, and 3 and $\frac{1}{2}$ to the northward of the Streight of Magellan: having been juft three and thirty days in coming round the land of Terra del Fuego, or Cape Horn, from the eaft entrance of the Streight to this fituation. And though the doubling of Cape Horn is fo much dreaded, that, in the general opinion, it is more eligible to pafs through the Streight of Magellan, we were not once brought under our clofe reef'd topfails after we left the Streight of Le Maire. The Dolphin in her laft voyage, which the performed at the fame feafon of the year with ours, was three months in getting through the Streight of Magellan, exclufive of the time that fhe lay in Port Famine; and I am perfuaded, from the winds we had, that if we had come by that paflage, we fhould not at this time have been in thefe feas; that our people would have been fatigued, and our anchors, cables, fails and rig-


February. Monday ${ }^{1} \mathrm{j} 0$
gig much damaged; neither of which inconveniences we had now fuffered. But fuppofing it more eligible to go round the Cape, than through the Streight of Magellan; it may fill be queftioned, whether it is better to go through the Streight of Le Maire, or ftand to the eaftward, and go round Staten Land. The advice given in the Account of Lord Anion's voyage is, "That all hips bound to the South "Seas, inftead of paffing through the Streight of Le Maire, "e fhould conftantly pars to the eaftward of Staten Land, and " fhould be invariably bent on running to the fouthward as "far as the latitude of Gr or 62 degrees, before they ended" vour to ftand to the weftward." But, in my opinion, diffferent circumflances may at one time render it eligible to pafs through the Streight, and to keep to the eaftward of Staten Land at another. If the land is fallen in with to the weftward of the Streight, and the wind is favourable for going through, I think it would be very injudicious to lofe time by going round Staten Land, as I am confident that, by attending to the directions which I have given, the Streight may be paffed with the utmoft fafety and convenience: but if, on the contrary, the land is fallen in with to the eaftward of the Streight, and the wind Should prove tempeftuous or unfavourable, I think it would be bell to go round Staten Land. But I cannot in any cafe concur in recommending the running into the latitude of 61 or 62 , before any endedvour is made to land to the weftward. We found neither the current nor the forms which the running fo far to the fouthward is fuppofed neceffary to avoid; and indeed, as the winds almoft contently blow from that quarter, it is fcarcely poflible to purfue the advice. The navigator has no choice but to ftand to the fouthward, clofe upon a wind, and by keeping upon that tack, he will not only make fouthing, but welting; and, if the wind varies towards the north of

## ROUND THE WORLD.

the weft, his wefting will be confiderable. It will, indeed, be highly proper to make fure of a wefting fufficient to double all the lands, before an attempt is made to ftand to the northward, and to this every man's own prudence will of neceflity direct him.

We now began to have ftrong gales and heavy feas, with irregular intervals of calm and fine weather.

## C H A P. VII.

The Sequel of the Pafage from Cafe Horn to the newly difcovered Iflands in the South Seas, with a Defcription of their Figure and Appearance; fome Account of the Inbabitants, and Several Incidents that bappened during the Courre, and at the Sbip's Arrival among them.

ON the If of March, we were in latitude $38^{\circ} 44^{\circ} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $110^{\circ} 33^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. both by obfervation and by the

March. Wednef. $x_{0}$ $\log$. This agreement, after a run of 660 leagues, was thought to be very extraordinary ; and is a demonftration, that after we left the land of Cape Horn we had no current that affected the fhip. It renders it alfo highly probable, that we had been near no land of any confiderable extent; for currents are always found when land is not remote, and fometimes, particularly on the calt fide of the continent in the North Sca, when land has been diftant 100 leagues.

Many birds, as ufual, were conftantly about the fhip, fo that Mr. Banks killed no lefs than 62 in one day; and what is more remarkable, he caught two foreft flies, both of them of the fame fpecies, but different from any that have hither-

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. March.
to been defcribed; thefe probably belonged to the birds, and came with them from the land, which we judged to be at a great diftance. Mr. Banks alfo, about this time, found a large cuttle-fifh, which had juft been killed by the birds, floating in a mangled condition upon the water; it was very different from the cuttle-fifhes that are found in the European feas; for its arms, inftead of fuckers, were furnifhed with a double row of very finarp talons, which refembled thofe of a cat, and, like them, were retractable into a fheath of flsin, from which they might be thruft at pleafure. Of this cuttle-fifh we made one of the beft foups we had ever tafted.

Wedner. 8.

4iday 24.

The albatroffes now began to leave us, and after the 8th there was not one to be feen. We continued our courfe without any memorable event till the 24 th, when fome of the people who were upon the watch in the night, reported that they faw a log of wood pafs by the fhip; and that the fea, which was rather rough, became fuddenly as fmooth as a mill-pond. It was a general opinion, that there was land to windward; but I did not think myfelf at liberty to fearch for what I was not fure to find; though I judged we were not far from the iflands that were difcovered by Quiros in 1606. Our latitude was $22^{\circ} 11^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $127^{\circ} 55^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.

On the $25^{\text {th }}$, about noon, one of the marines, a young fellow about twenty, was placed as centry at the cabbin door ; while he was upon this duty, one of my fervants was at the fame place preparing to cut a piece of feal-fkin into tobacco-pouches: he had promifed one to feveral of the men, but had refufed one to this young fellow, though he had afked him feveral times; upon which he jocularly threatened to tteal one, if it fhould be in his power. It happened that the fervant being called haflily away, gave the fkin in charge to
the centinel, without regarding what had paffed between them. The centinel immediately fecured a piece of the fkin, which the other miffing at his return, grew angry; but after fome altercation, contented himfelf with taking it away, declaring, that, for fo trifling an affair, he would not complain of him to the officers. But it happened that one of his fellow foldiers, over-hearing the difpute, came to the knowlege of what had happened, and told it to the reft; who, taking it into their heads to ftand up for the honour of their corps, reproached the offender with great bitternefs, and reviled him in the moft opprobrious terms; they exaggerated his offence into a crime of the deepeft die; they faid it was a theft by a centry when he was upon duty, and of a thing that had been committed to his truft they declared it a difgrace to affociate with him ; and the Serjeant, in particular, faid that, if the perfon from whom the fkin had been folen would not complain, he would complain himfelf; for that his honour would fuffer if the offender was not punifhed. From the fcoffs and reproaches of thefe men of honour, the poor young fellow retired to his hammock in an agony of confufion and thame. The Serjeant foon after went to him, and ordered him to follow him to the deck: he obeyed without reply; but it being in the dufk of the evening, he flipped from the Serjeant and went forward: he was feen by fome of the people, who thought he was gone to the head; but a fearch being made for him afterwards, it was found that he had thrown himfelf overboard; and I was then firft made acquainted with the theft and its circumftances.

The lofs of this man was the more regretted as he was remarkably quiet and induftrious, and as the very action that put an end to his life was a proof of an ingenuous mind; for to fuch only difgrace is infupportable.
1769.

March.
Saturday 250 .
1769. On Tuefday the $4^{\text {th }}$ of April, about ten o'clock in the morning, Mr. Banks's fervant, Peter Brifcoe, difcovered land, bearing fouth, at the diftance of about three or four leagues. I immediately hauled up for it, and found it to be an ifland of an oval form, with a lagoon in the middle, which occupied much the larger part of it; the border of land which circumferibes the lagoon is in many places very low and narrow, particularly on the fouth fide, where it confifts principally of a beach or reef of rocks: it has the fame appearance alfo in three places on the north fide; fo that, the firm land being disjoined, the whole looks like many iflands covered with wood. On the weft end of the ifland is a large tree, or clump of trees, that in appearance refembles a tower ; and about the middle are two cocoa-nut trees, which rife above all the reft, and, as we came near to the ifland, appeared like a flag. We approached it on the north fide, and though we came within a mile, we found no bottom with 130 fathom of line, nor did there appear to be any anchorage about it. The whole is covered with trees of different verdure, but we could diftinguifh none, even with our glaffes, except cocoa-nuts and palm-nuts. We faw feveral of the natives upon the fhore, and counted four and twenty. They appeared to be tall, and to have heads remarkably large ; perhaps they had fomething wound round then which we could not diflinguifh; they were of a copper colour, and had long black hair. Eleven of them walked along the beach abreaft of the fhip, with poles or pikes in their hands which reached twice as high as themfelves: while they walked on the beach they feemed to be naked; but foon after they retired, which they did as foon as the fhip had paffed the ifland, they covered themfelves with fomething that made them appear of a light colour. Their habitations were under fome clumps of palm-nut trees, which

## ROUND THE WORLD.

which at a diftance appeared like high ground; and to us, who for a long time had feen nothing but water and fky , except the dreary hills of Terra del Fuego, thefe groves feemed a terreftrial paradife. To this fpot, which lies in latitude $18^{\circ} 47^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $139^{\circ} 28^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. we gave the name of Lagoon Island. The variation of the needle here is $2^{\circ} 54^{\circ} \mathrm{E}$.

About one o'clock we made fail to the weftward, and about half an hour after three we faw land again to the N. W. We got up with it at funfet, and it proved to be a low woody ifland, of a circular form, and not much above a mile in compafs. We difcovered no inhabitants, nor could we diftinguifh any cocoa-nut trees, though we were within half a mile of the fhore. The land, however, was covered with verdure of many hues. It lies in latitude $18^{\circ} 35^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $139^{\circ} 48^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and is diftant from Lagoon Inland, in the dite. tion of N. 62 W . about feven leagues. We called it THRCH2 Cap. I difcovered, by the appearance of the fhore, that at this place it was low-water ; and I had obferved at Lagoon Ifland, that it was either high-water, or that the fea neither cbbed nor flowed: I infer, therefore, that a S. by E. or S. moon makes high-water.

We went on with a fine trade-wind and pleafant weather, and on the 5 th, about three in the afternoon, we difcovered land to the weftward. It proved to be a low ifland, of much greater extent than either of thofe that we had feen before, being about ten or twelve leagues in compafs. Several of us remained at the maft-head the whole evening, admiring its extraordinary figure: it was fhaped exactly like a bow, the arch and cord of which were land, and the fpace between them water; the cord was a flat beach, without any figns of vegetation, having nothing upon it but heaps of fea-weed, Vol. II.

L
which

Wednef. 5. Bow Iflane.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. 

which lay in different ridges, as higher or lower tides had left them. It appeared to be about three or four leagues long, and not more than two hundred yards wide ; but as a horizontal plain is always feen in perfpective, and greatly fore-fhortened, it is certainly much wider than it appeared: the horns, or extremities of the bow, were two large tufts of cocoa-nut trecs; and much the greater part of the arch was covered with trees of different height, figure and hue; in fome parts, however, it was naked and low like the cord: fome of us thought they difcovered openings through the cord, into the pool, or lake, that was included between that and the bow; but whether there were or were not fuch openings is uncerrain. We failed abreaft of the low beach, or bow-ftring, within lefs than a league of the fhore, till funfet, and we then judged ourfelves to be about half way between the two horns: here we brought to, and founded, but found no bottom with one hundred and thirty fathom; and, as it is dark almoft inftantly after funfet in thefe latitudes, we fuddenly: loft fight of the land, and making fail again, before the line was well hauled in, we fteered by the found of the breakers; which were diftinctly heard till we got clear of the coaft.

We knew this ifland to be inhabited, by fmoke which we faw in different parts of it, and we gave it the name of Bow Island. Mr. Gore, my Second Licutenant, faid, after we had failed by the ifland, that he had feen feveral of the natives, under the firt clump of trees, from the deck; that he had diftinguifhed theirhoufes, and feen feveral canoes hauled up under the fhade; but in this he was more fortunate than any other perfon on board. The eaft end of this ifland, which from its figure we called the Bow, lies in latitude $18^{\circ} 23^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $14^{1^{\circ}} 12^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. we obferved the variation of the compafs to be $5^{\circ} 38^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$.

## ROUND.THEWORLD.

On the next day, Thurfday the 6th, about noon, we faw Iand again to the weftward, and came up with it about three. It appeared to be two iflands, or rather groups of iflands, extending from N.W. by N. to S. E. by S. about nine leagues. Of thefe, the two largeft were feparated from each other by a channel of about half a mile broad, and were feverally. furrounded by fmaller iflands, to which they were joined by reefs that lay under water.
Thefe iflands were long narrow ftrips of land, ranging in all directions, fome of them ten miles or upwards in length, but none more than a quarter of a mile broad, and upon all of them there were trees of various kinds, particilarly the cocoa-nut. The fouth-eaftermoft of them lies in the latitude of $18^{\circ} 12^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $142^{\circ} 49^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and at the diftance of twenty-five leagues, in the direction of $\mathrm{W} \cdot \frac{1}{2} \mathrm{~N}$. from the weft end of Bow Ifland. We ranged along the S. W. fide of this ifland, and hauled into a bay which lies to the N. W. of the fouthermoft point of the Group, where there was a fmooth fea, and the appearance of anchorage, without much furf on the fhore. We founded, but we found no bottom with one hundred fathom, at the diftance of no more than three quarters of a mile from the beach, and I did not think it prudent to go nearer.
While this was doing, feveral of the inhabitants affembled upon the flore, and fome came out in their canoes as far as the reefs, but would not pafs them : when we faw this, we ranged, with an eafy fail, along the fhore; but juft as we were paffing the end of the ifland, fix men, who had for fome time kept abreaft of the fhip, fuddenly launched two canoes with great quicknefs and dexterity, and three of them getting into each, they put off, as we imagined with a defign to come on board us; the fhip was therefore brought
1769. to, but they, like their fellows, fopped at the reef; we did not however immediately make fail, as we obferved two meffengers difpatched to them from the other canoes, which were of a much larger fize: we perceived that thefe meffengers made great expedition, wading and fwimming along the reef; at length they met, and the men on board the canoes making no difpofitions to pafs the reef, after having received the meffage, we judged that they had refolved to come no farther: after waiting, therefore, fome little time longer, we ftood off; but when we were got about two or three miles from the fhore, we perceived fome of the natives following us in a canoe with a fail ; we did not, however, think it worth while to wait for her, and though fhe had paffed the reef, fhe foon after gave over the chace.

According to the beft judgment that we could form of the people when we were neareft the fhore, they were about our fize, and well-made. They were of a brown complexion, and appeared to be naked; their hair, which was. black, was. confined by a fillet that went round the head, and ftuck out behind like a bufh. The greater part of them carried in their hands two weapons; one of them was a flender pole, from ten to fourteen feet long, on one end of which was a fmall knob, not unlike the point of a fpear; the other was. about four feet long, and thaped like a paddle, and poflibly might be fo, for fome of their canoes were very fmall: thofe which we faw them launch feemed not intended to carry more than the three men that got into them: we faw others that had on board fix or feven men, and one of them hoifted a fail which did not feem to reach more than fix feet above the gunwale of the boat, and which, upon the falling of a light fhower, was taken down and converted into an awning or: tilt. The canoe which followed us to fea hoifted a fail not
unlike an Englifh lug-fail, and almof as lofty as an Englifh boat of the fame fize would have carried.

The people, who kept abreaft of the fhip on the beach, made many fignals; but whether they were intended to frighten us away, or invite us on fhore, it is not eafy to determine: we returned them by waving our hats and fhouting, and they replied by fhouting again. We did not put their difpofition to the teft, by attempting to Iand; becaufe, as the ifland was inconfiderable, and as we wanted nothing that it could afford, we thought it imprudent as well as cruel to rifk a conteft, in which the natives muft have fuffered by our fuperiority, merely to gratify an idle curiofity ; efpecially as we expected foon to fall in with the ifland where we had been directed to make our aftronomical obfervation, the inhabitants of which would probably admit us without oppofition, as they were already acquainted with our ftrength, and might alfo procure us a ready and peaceable reception among the neighbouring people, if we fhould defire it.
To thefe iflands we gave the name of The Groups.
On the 7 th , about half an hour after fix in the morning, being juft at day-break, we difcovered another ifland to the northward, which we judged to be about four miles in circumference. The land lay yery low, and there was a piece of water in the middle of it; there feemed to be fome wood upon it, and it looked green and pleafant ; but we faw neither cocoa trees nor inhabitants: it abounded however with birds, and we therefore gave it the name of Bird-Island.
It lies in latitude $17^{\circ} 4^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $143^{\circ} 35^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. at the diftance of ten leagues, in the direction W. $\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{~N}$. from the weft end of the Groups.. The variation here was $6{ }^{\circ} 32^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$.
On the 8th, about two oclock in the afternoon, we faw land to the northward, and about funfet came abreaft of it,

Saturday. 8. Chain lflasd.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. at about the diftance of two leagues. It appeared to be a double range of low woody iflands joined together by reefs, fo as to form one ifland, in the form of an ellipfis or oval, with a lake in the middle of it. The fmall iflands and reefs that circumfcribe the lake have the appearance of a chain, and we therefore gave it the name of Chain Island. Its length feemed to be about five leagues, in the direction of N.W. and S.E. and its breadth about five miles. The trees upon it appeared to be large, and we faw fmoke rifing in different parts of it from among them, a certain fign that it was inhabited. The middle of it lies in latitude $17^{\circ} 2.3^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $145^{\circ} 54^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and is diftant from Bird Ifland forty-five leagues in the direction of W. by N. The variation here was, by feveral azimuths, found to be $4^{\circ} 54^{\circ} \mathrm{E}$.

On the roth, having had a tempeftuous night with thunder and rain, the weather was hazy till about nine o'clock in the morning, when it cleared up, and we faw the ifland to which Captain Wallis, who firl difcovered it, gave the name of Ofnaburgh Ifland, called by the natives Maitea, bearing N.W. by W. diftant about five leagues. It is a high round ifland, not above a league in circuit ; in fome parts it is covered with trees, and in others a naked rock. In this direction it looked like a high crown'd hat; but when it bears North, the top of it has more the appearance of the roof of a houfe. We made its latitude to be $17^{\circ} 4^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. its longitude i $48^{\circ} 10^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and its diftance from Chain Ifland 44 leagues, in the direction of W. by S.
.


## C H A P. VIII.

> The Arrival of the Endeavour at Otabeite, called by Captain Wallis, King George the III.'s Ifland. Rules eftablifbed for Traffic with the Natives, and an Account of feveral Incidents which bappened in a Vifit to Tootabab and Toubourai Tamaida, two Chiefs.

ABOUT one o'clock, on Monday the roth of April, fome of the people who were looking out for the ifland to which we were bound, faid they faw land ahead, in that
1769.

April.
Monday 10 . part of the horizon where it was expected to appear; but it was fo faint that, whether there was land in fight or not, remained a matter of difpute till funfet. The next morning, Tuefday 4 , however, at fix o'clock, we were convinced that thofe who faid they had difcovered land, were not miftaken; it appeared to be very high and mountainous, extending from W. by S. $\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{~S}$ : to W. by $\mathrm{N} . \frac{1}{2} \mathrm{~N}$. and we knew it to be the fame that Captain Wallis had called King George the III.'s Ifland. We were delayed in our approach to it by light airs and calms, fo that in the morning of the 12 th we were but little nearer Wednef. 12. than we had been the night before; but about feven a breeze fprung up, and before eleven feveral canoes were feen making towards the fhip: there were but few of them, however, that would come near; and the people in thofe that did, could not be perfuaded to come on board. In every canoe there were young plantains, and branches of a tree which the Indians call E'Midbo; thefe, as we afterwards learnt, were brought as tokens of peace and amity, and the people in one of the canoes handed them up the fhip's fide, making fignals


## C H A P. VIII.

The Arrival of the Endeavour at Otabeite, called by Captain Wallis, King George the III.'s IJland. Rules eftablibed for Traffic with the Natives, and an Account of feveral Incidents which bappened in a Vifit to Tootabab and Toubourai Tamaida, two Cbiefs.

ABOUT one o'clock, on Monday the roth of April, fome of the people who were looking out for the ifland to which we were bound, faid they faw land ahead, in that part of the horizon where it was expected to appear; but it was fo faint that, whether there was land in fight or not, remained a matter of difpute till funfet. The next morning, Tuefday.s. however, at fix o'clock, we were convinced that thofe who faid they had difcovered land, were not miftaken; it appeared to be very high and mountainous, extending from W. by S. $\frac{1}{2}$ S. to W. by N. $\frac{1}{2}$ N. and we knew it to be the fame that Captain Wallis had called King George the III.'s Illand. We were delayed in our approach to it by light airs and calms, fo that in the morning of the inth we were but little nearer Wednef. 12. than we had been the night before; but about feven a breeze fprung up, and before eleven feveral canoes were feen making towards the fhip: there were but few of them; however, that would come near; and the people in thofe that did, could not be perfuaded to come on board. In every canoe there were young plantains, and branches of a tree which the Indians call E'Midbo; thefe, as we afterwards learnt, were brought as tokens of peace and amity, and the people in one of the canoes handed them up the fhip's fide, making fignals
$\underbrace{\substack{176 g . \\ \text { April. }}}$ Wednef, 12.
at the fame time with great earneftnefs, which we did not immediately underftand; at length we gueffed that they wifhed thefe fymbols fhould be placed in fome confpicuous part of the fhip; we, therefore, immediately ftuck them among the rigging, at which they expreffed the greateft fatisfaction. We then purchafed their cargoes, confifting of cocoa-nuts, and various kinds of fruit, which after our long voyage were very acceptable.

We food on with an eafy fail all night, with foundings Thurfay ${ }_{13}$. from 22 fathom to 12 , and about feven o'clock in the morning we came to an anchor in 13 fathom, in Port-royal bay, called by the natives Matavai. We were immediately furrounded by the natives in their canoes, who gave us cocoanuts, fruit refembling apples, bread-fruit, and fome fmall fifhes, in exchange for beads and other trifles. They had with them a pig, which they would not part with for any thing but a hatchet, and therefore we refufed to purchafe it; becaufe, if we gave them a hatchet for a pig now, we knew they would never afterwards fell one for lefs, and we could not afford to buy as many as it was probable we fhould want at that price. The bread-fruit grows on a tree that is about the fize of a middling oak : its leaves are frequently a foot and an half long, of an oblong fhape, deeply finuated like thofe of the fig-tree, which they refemble in confiftence and colour, and in the exuding of a white milky juice upon being broken. The fruit is about the fize and fhape of a child's head, and the furface is reticulated not much unlike a truffle: it is covered with a thin fkin, and has a core about as big as the handle of a fmall knife: the eatable part lies between the 1 kin and the core; it is as white as fnow, and fomewhat of the confiftence of new bread : it muft be roafted before it is eaten, being firft divided into three or four parts :

1769.
April.

Wedner
at the fame time with great earneftnefs, which we did not immediately underftand; at length we gueffed that they wifhed thefe fymbols fhould be placed in fome confpicuous part of the fhip; we, therefore, immediately ftuck them among the rigging, at which they expreffed the greateft fatisfaction. We then purchafed their cargoes, confifting of cocoa-nuts, and various kinds of fruit, which after our long voyage were very acceptable.

We ftood on with an eafy fail all night, with foundings
Thurfay ${ }_{13}$. from 22 fathom to 12 , and about feven o'clock in the morning we came to an anchor in 13 fathom, in Port-royal bay, called by the natives Matavai. We were immediately furrounded by the natives in their canoes, who gave us cocoanuts, fruit refembling apples, bread-fruit, and fome fmall fifhes, in exchange for beads and other trifles. They had with them a pig, which they would not part with for any thing but a hatchet, and therefore we refufed to purchafe it; becaufe, if we gave them a hatchet for a pig now, we knew they would never afterwards fell one for lefs, and we could not afford to buy as many as it was probable we fhould want at that price. The bread-fruit grows on a tree that is about the fize of a middling oak : its leaves are frequently a foot and an half long, of an oblong fhape, deeply finuated like thofe of the fig-tree, which they refemble in confiftence and colour, and in the exuding of a white milky juice upon being broken. The fruit is about the fize and fhape of a child's head, and the furface is reticulated not much unlike a truffle: it is covered with a thin $\mathrm{fk} i \mathrm{n}$, and has a core about as big as the handle of a fmall knife: the eatable part lies between the fkin and the core; it is as white as fnow, and fomewhat of the confiftence of new bread: it muft be roafted before it is caten, being firft divided into three or four parts :


its tafte is infipid, with a flight fweetnefs fomewhat refembling that of the crumb of wheaten-bread mixed with a Jerufalen artichoke.


Among others who came off to the fhip was an elderly man, whofe name, as we learnt afterwards, was Owhaw, and who was immediately known to Mr. Gore, and feveral others who had been here with Captain Wallis; as I was informed that he had been very ufeful to them, I took him on board the fhip with fome others, and was particularly attentive to gratify him, as I hoped he might alfo be ufeful to us.

As our flay here was not likely to be very fhort, and as it was neceffary that the merchandife which we had brought for traffic with the natives fhould not diminifh in its value, which it would certainly have done, if every perfon had been left at liberty to give what he pleafed for fuch things as he fhould purchafe; at the fame time that confufion and quarrels muft neceffarily have arifen from there being no flandard at market: I drew up the following rules, and ordered that they fhould be punctually obferved.

Rules to be obferved by every perfon in or belonging to bis Majefy's Bark the Endeavour, for the better eftablijbing a regular and uniform trade for provifon, $W^{\circ} c$. with the inbabitants of George's Ifland.
" I. To endeavour, by every fair means, to cultivate a " friendfhip with the natives; and to treat them with all " imaginable humanity.
" II. A proper perfon, or perfons, will be appointed to " trade with the natives for all manner of provifions, fruit, " and other productions of the earth ; and no officer or fea" man, or other perfon belonging to the fhip, excepting fuch " as are fo appointed, thall trade or offer to trade for any fort Vol. $\mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{s}}$
1769. "s of provifion, fruit, or other productions of the earth, unlefs
" they have leave fo to do.
" III. Every perfon employed on fhore, on any duty what"foever, is flrictly to attend to the fame; and if by any ne" glect he lofeth any of his arms, or working tools, or fuffers " them to be folen, the full value thereof will be charged " againt his pay, according to the cuftom of the navy in " fuch cafes, and he fhall receive fuch farther punifhment " as the nature of the offence may deferve.
" IV. The fame penalty will be inflicted on every perfor " who is found to embezzle, trade, or offer to trade, with " any part of the fhip's fores of what nature foever.
" V. No fort of iron, or any thing that is made of iron, or " any fort of cloth, or other ufeful or neceffary articles, are " to be given in exchange for any thing but provifion.
" J. Соок."
As foon as the thip was properly fecured, I went on fhore with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, a party of men under arms, and our friend Owhaw. We were received from the boat by fome hundreds of the inhabitants, whofe looks at leaft gave us welcome, though they were ftruck with fuch awe, that the firt who approached us crouched fo low that he almoft crept upon his hands and knees. It is remarkable that he, like the people in the canoes, prefented to us the fame fymbol of peace that is known to have been in ufe among the ancient and mighty nations of the northern hemifphere, the green branch of a tree. We received it with looks and geftures of kindnefs and fatisfaction ; and obferving that each of them held one in his hand, we immediately gathered every one a bough, and carried it in our hands in the fame manner.

They marched with us about half a mile towards the place where the Dolphin had watered, conducted by Owhaw; they then made a full flop, and having laid the ground bare, by clearing away all the plants that grew upon it, the principal perfons among them threw their green branches upon the maked fpot, and made figns that we flhould do the fame; we immediately fhowed our readinefs to comply, and to give a greater folemnity to the rite, the marines were drawn up, and marching in order, each dropped his bough upon thofe of the Indians, and we followed their example. We then proceeded, and when we came to the watering-place it was intimated to us by figns, that we might occupy that ground, but it happened not to be fit for our purpofe. During our walk they had fhaken off their firft timid fenfe of our fuperiority, and were become familiar: they went with us from the watering-place and took a circuit through the woods: as we went along, we diftributed beads and other fmall prefents among them, and had the fatisfaction to fee that they were much gratified. Our circuit was not lefs than four or five miles, through groves of trees, which were loaded with cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit, and afforded the moft grateful fhade. Under thefe trees were the habitations of the people, moft of them being only a roof without walls, and the whole fcene realized the poetical fables of Arcadia. We remarked however, not without fome regret, that in all our walk we had feen only two hogs, and not a fingle fowl. Thofe of our company who had been here with the Dolphin told us, that none of the people whom we had yet feen were of the firft clafs; they fufpected that the chiefs had removed, and upon carrying us to the place where what they called the Qucen's palace had ftood, we found that no traces of it were left. We determined therefore to return in the morning, and endeavour to find out the Noblefe in their retreats.
${ }^{1769}$.
April.
Thurday 13
1760. In the morning, however, before we could leave the fhip, feveral canoes came about us, moft of them from the weftward, and two of them were filled with people, who by theit drefs and deportment appeared to be of a fuperior rank: two of thefe came on board, and each fingled out his friend; one of them, whofe name we found to be Matahah, fixed upon Mr. Banks, and the other upon me: this ceremony confifted in taking off great part of their clothes and putting them upon us. In return for this, we prefented each of them with a hatchet and fome beads. Soon after they made figns for us to go with them to the places where they lived, pointing to the S.W.; and as I was defirous of finding a more commodious harbour, and making farther trial of the dif pofition of the people, I confented.

I ordered out two boats, and with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, the other gentlemen, and our two Indian friends, we embarked for our expedition. After rowing about a league, they made figns that we fhould go on fhore, and gave us to underftand that this was the place of their refidence. We accordingly landed, among feveral hundreds of the natives, who conducted us into a houfe of much greater length than any we had feen. When we entered, we faw a middle-aged man, whofe name we afterwards difcovered to be Тоотанah; mats were immediately fpread, and we,were defired to fit down over againft him. Soon after we were feated, he ordered a cock and hen to be brought out, which he prefented to Mr. Banks and me; we accepted the prefent, and in a fhort time each of us received a piece of cloth, perfumed after their manner, by no means difagreeably, which they took great pains to make us remark. The piece prefented to Mr. Banks was eleven yards long and two wide; in return for which, he gave a laced filk neckcloth, which he happened to have on, and a linen pocket handkerchief:

Tootahal immediately dreffed himfelf in this new finery, with an air of perfect complacency and fatisfaction. But it is now time that I fhould take fome notice of the ladics.
1769. April. Friday 14: $^{3}$

Soon after the interchanging of our prefents with Tootahah, they attended us to feveral large houfes, in which we walked about with great freedom: they fhewed us all the civility of which, in our fituation, we could accept; and, on their part, feemed to have no fcruple that would have prevented its being carried farticer. The houfes, which as I have obferved before, are all open, except a roof, afforded no place of retirement ; but the ladies, by frequently pointing to the mats upon the ground, and fometimes feating themfelves and drawing us down upon them, left us no room to doubt of their being much lefs jealous of obfervation than we were.
We now took leave of our friendly Chief, and directed our courfe along the fhore; when we had walked about a mile, we met, at the head of a great number of people, another Chief, whofe name was Tubourai Tamade, with whom we were alfo to ratify a treaty of peace, with the ceremony of which we were now become better acquainted. Having received the branch which he prefented to us, and given another in return, we laid our hands upon our left breafts, and pronounced the word Taio, which we fuppofed to fignify friend; the Chief then gave us to underftand, that if we chofe to eat, he had victuals ready for us. We accepted his offer, and dined very heartily upon fifh, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts and plantains, dreffed after their manner; they eat fome of their fifh raw, and raw fifh was offered to us, but we declined that part of the entertainment.
During this vifit a wife of our noble hoft, whofe name was Tomio, did Mr. Banks the honour to place herfelf upon
the fame matt, clofe by him. Tomio was not in the firt bloom of her youth, nor did fhe appear to have been ever remarkable for her beauty: he did not therefore, I believe, pay her the moft flattering attention: it happened too, as 2 farther mortification to this lady, that feeing a very pretty girl among the crowd, he, not adverting to the dignity of his companion, beckoned her to come to him : the girl, after fome entreaty, complied, and fat down on the other fide of him ; he loaded her with bealls, and every fhowy trifle that would pleafe her: his Princefs, though fhe was fomewhat mortified at the preference that was given to her rival, did not difcontinue her civilities, but ftill affiduoufly fupplied him with the milk of the cocoa-nut, and fuch other dainties as were in her reach. This fcene might poffibly have become more curious and interefting, if it had not been fuddenly interrupted by an interlude of a more ferious kind. Juft at this time, Dr. Solander and Mr. Monkhoufe complained that their pockets had been picked. Dr. Solander had loft an opera glafs in a fhagreen cafe, and Mr. Monkhoufe his inuff-box. This incident unfortunately put an end to the good-humour of the sompany. Complaint of the injury was made to the Chief; and, to give it weight, Mr. Banks flarted up, and haftily ftruck the but end of his firelock upon the ground: this action, and the noife that accompanied it, ftruck the whole affembly with a panic, and every one of the natives ran out of the houfe with the utmoft precipitation, except the Chief, three women, and two or three others, who appeared by their drefs to be of a fuperior rank.

The Chief, with a mixture of confufion and concern, took Mr. Banks by the hand, and led him to a large quantity of cloth, which lay at the other end of the houfe: this he of-

## ROUND THE WORLD.

fered to him piece by piece, intimating by figns, that if that would atone for the wrong which had been done, he might take any part of it, or, if he pleafed, the whole. Mr. Banks put it by, and gave him to underftand, that he wanted nothing but what had been difhoneflly taken away. Toubourai Tamaide then went haftily out, leaving Mr. Banks with his wife Tomio, who during the whole feene of terror and confufion had kept conflantly at his fide, and intimating his defire that he fhould wait there till his return. Mr. Banks accordingly fat down, and converfed with her, as well as he could by figns, about half an hour. The chief then came back with the fnuff-box and the cafe of the opera glafs in his hand, and, with a joy in his countenance that was painted with a ftrength of expreffion which diftinguifhes thefe people from all others, delivered them to the owners. The cafe of the opera glafs, however, upon being opened, was found to be empty; upon this difcovery, his countenance changed in a moment; and catching Mr. Banks again by the hand, he rufhed out of the houfe, without uttering any found, and led him along the fhore, walking with great rapidity: when they had got about a mile from the houfe, a woman met him and gave him a piece of cloth, which he haftily took. from her, and continued to prefs forward with it in his hand. Dr. Solander and Mr. Monkhoufe had followed them, and they came at length to a houfe where they were received by a woman, to whom he gave the cloth, and intimated to the gentlemen that they fhould give her fome beads. They immediately complied; and the beads and cloth being depofited upon the floor, the woman went out, and in about half an hour returned with the opera glafs, expreffing the fame joy upon the occafion that had before been exprefed by the Chief. The beads were now returned, with an inflexible refolution
1769.
April. refolution not to accept them; and the cloth was, with with the fame pertinacity, forced upon Dr. Solander, as a recompence for the injury that had been done him. He could not avoid accepting the cloth, but infifted in his turn upon giving a new prefent of beads to the woman. It will not perhaps be eafy to account for all the fteps that were taken in the recovery of this glafs and fnuff-box; but this cannot be thought ftrange, confidering that the fcene of action was among a people whofe language, policy and connections are even now but imperfectly known; upon the whole, however, they fhow an intelligence and influence which would do honour to any fyftem of government, however regular and improved. In the evening, about fix o'clock, we returned to the fhip.

## C H A P. IX.

A Place fixed upon for an Obfervatory and Fort: an Excurfion into the Woods, and its Confequences. The Fort erected: a Vijht from feveral Cbiefs on board and at the Fort, with Some Account of the Mufic of the Natives, and the Manner in which they difpofe of their Dead.

O$N$ the next morning, Saturday the x 5 th , feveral of the Chiefs whom we had feen the day before came on board, and brought with them, hogs, bread-fruit, and other
ri76.
April. refrefhments, for which we gave them hatchets and linen, and fuch things as feemed to be moft acceptable.

As in my excurfion to the weftward, I had not found any more convenient harbour than that in which we lay, I dctermined to go on fhore and fix upon fome fpot, commanded by the fhip's guns, where I might throw up a fmall fort for our defence, and prepare for making our aftronomical obfervation.

I therefore took a party of men, and landed without delay, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and the aftronomer, Mr. Green. We foon fixed upon a part of the fandy beach, on the N.E. point of the bay, which was in every refpect convenient for our purpofe, and not near any habitation of the natives. Having marked out the ground that we intended to occupy, a fmall tent belonging to ${ }^{\circ} \mathrm{Mr}$. Banks was fet up, which had been brought on fhore for that purpofe: by this time a great number of the people had gathered about us; but, as it appeared, only to look on, there Vol. II.
1769. not being a fingle weapon of any kind among them. I in-
$\underbrace{\text { April. }}$
Saturday 15. timated, however, that none of them were to come within the line I had drawn, except one who appeared to be a chief, and Owhaw. To thefe two perfons I addreffed myfelf by figns, and endeavoured to make them underftand, that we wanted the ground which we had marked out to fleep upon for a certain number of nights, and that then we fhould go away. Whether I was underfood I cannot certainly determine ; but the people behaved with a deference and refpect that at once pleafed and furprifed us : they fat down peaceably without the circle, and looked on, without giving us any interruption, till we had done, which was upwards of two hours. As we had feen no poultry, and but two hogs, in our walk when we were laft on fhore at this place, we fufpected that, upon our arrival, they had been driven farther up the country; and the rather, as Owhaw was very importunate with us, by figns, not to go into the woods, which, however, and partly for thefe reafons, we were determined to do. Having. therefore appointed the thirteen marines and a petty officer to guard the tent, we fet out, and a great number of the natives joined our party. As we were croffing a little river that lay in our way we faw fome ducks, and Mr. Banks, as foons as he had got over, fired at them, and happened to kill three at one fhot: this ftruck them with the utmoft terror, fo that moft of them fell fuddenly to the ground, as if they alfo had: been fhot at the fame difcharge: it was not long, however, before they recovered from their fright, and we continued our rout; but we had not gone far before we were alarmed by the report of two pieces, which were fired by the guard at the tent. We had then ftraggled a little diftance from each other, but Owhaw immediately called us together, and by waving his hand, fent away every Indian who followed us except three, each of whom, as a pledge of peace on their
part, and an entreaty that there might be peace on ours, haftily broke a branch from the trees, and came to us with it in their hands. As we had too much reafon to fear that fome mifchief had happened, we hafted back to the tent, which was not diftant above half a mile, and when we came up, we found it entirely deferted, except by our own people.
It appeared, that one of the Indians who remained about the tent after we left it, had watched his opportunity, and, taking the centry unawares, had fnatched away his mufquet. Upon this, the petty officer, a midfhipman, who commanded the party, perhaps from a fudden fear of farther violence, perhaps from the natural petulance of power newly aequired, and perhaps from a brutality in his nature, ordered the marines to fire : the men, with as little confideration or humanity as the officer, immediately difcharged their pieces among the thickeft of the flying crowd, confifting of more than a hundred; and obferving that the thief did not fall, purfued him, and fhot him dead. We afterwards learnt, that none of the others were either killed or wounded.
Owhaw, who had never left us, obferving that we were now totally deferted, got together a few of thofe who had fled, though not without fome difficulty, and ranged themi abour us: we endeavoured to juftify our people as well as we could, and to convince the Indians that if they did no wrong to us, we flould do no wrong to them : they vent away without any appearance of diftruft or refentment; and having ftruck our tent, we returned to the fhip, but by no means fatisficd with the tranfactions of the day.

Upon queftioning our people more particularly, whofe conduct they foon perceived we could not approve, they alleged that the centinel whofe mufquet was taken away, was violently affaulted and thrown down; and that a pufla
1769.
A pril.
was afterwards made at him by the man who took the mufquet, before any command was given to fire. It was alfofuggefted, that Owhaw had fufpicions, at leaft, if not certain knowlege, that fomething would be attempted againft our people at the tent, which made him fo very earneft in his endeavours to prevent our leaving it; others imputed his importunity to his defire that we fhould confine ourfelves to the beach : and it was remarked that neither Owhaw, nor the Chiefs who remained with us after he had fent the reft of the people away, would have inferred the breach of peace from the firing at the tent, if they had had no reafon to. fufpect that fome injury had been offered by their countrymen; efpecially as Mr. Banks had juft fired at the ducks: and yet that they did. infer a breach of peace from that incidenr, as was manifeft from their waving their hands for the people to difperfe, and inftantly pulling green branches from. the trees. But what were the real circumftances of this unhappy affair, and whether either and which of thefe conjectures were true, can never certainly be known.

The next morning but few of the natives were feen upon the beach, and not one of them came off to the fhip. This convinced us that our endeavours to quiet their apprehenfions had not been effectual; and we remarked with particular regret, that we were deferted even by Owhaw, who had hitherto been fo conftant in his attachment, and fo active in renewing the peace that had been broken.

Appearances being thus unfavourable, I warped the fhip nearer to the fhore, and moored her in fuch a manner as to command all the N. E. part of the bay, particularly the place which I had marked out for the building a fort. In the evening, however, I went on fhore with only a boat's crew, and fome of the Gentlemen : the natives gathered about us, but
not in the fame number as before; there were I believe between thirty and forty, and they trafficked with us for cocoanuts and other fruit, to all appearance as friendly as cver.

On the 17 th, early in the morning, we had the misfortune Monday 17 . to lofe Mr. Buchan, the perfon whom Mr. Banks had brought out as a painter of landfcapes and figures. He was a fober, diligent, and ingenious young man, and greatly regretted by Mr. Banks; who hoped, by his means, to have gratified his friends in England with reprefentations of this country. and its inhabitants, which no other perfon on board could. delineate with the fame accuracy and elegance. He had always been fubject to epileptic fits, one of which feized him. on the mountains of Terra del Fucgo, and this diforder being aggravated by a bilious complaint which he contracted on board the fhip, at length put an end to his life. It was at firft propofed to bury him on fhore, but Mr. Banks thinking, that it might perhaps give offence to the natives, with whofe cuftoms we were then wholly unacquainted, we committed. his body to the fea, with as much decency and folemnity as, our circumftances and fituation would admit.

In the forenoon of this day we received a vifit from Tu bourai Tamaide and Tootahah, our Chiefs, from the Weft:they brought with them, as emblems of peace, not branches of plantain, but two young trees, and would not venture on board till thefe had been received, having probably been. alarmed by the mischief which had been done at the tent. Each of them alfo brought, as propitiatory gifts, fome breadfruit, and a hog ready dreffed: this was a moft acceptableprefent, as we perceived that hogs were not always to be got; and in return we gave to each of our noble benefactors a. hatchet and a nail. In the evening we went on fhore and fet up a tent, in which Mr. Green and myfelf fent the night, in order to obferve an eclipfe of the firft fatellite of Jupiter; but the weather becoming cloudy, we were difappointed.

On the 1 Sth, at day-break, I went on fhore, with as many people as could poffibly be fpared from the fhip, and began to erect our fort. While fome were employed in throwing up intrenchments, others were bufy in cutting pickets and fafcines, which the natives, who foon gathered round us as they had been ufed to do, were fo far from hindering, that many of them voluntarily affifted us, bringing the pickets and fafcines from the wood where they had been cut, with great alacrity: we had indeed been fo fcrupulous of invading their property, that we purchafed every ftake which was ufed upon this occafion, and cut down no tree till we had firft obtained their confent. The foil where we conftructed our fort was fandy, and this made it neceffary to ftrengthen the intrenchments with wood; three fides were to be fortified in this manner; the fourth was bounded by a river, upon the banks of which I propofed to place a proper number of water-cafks. This day we ferved pork to the fhip's company for the firf time, and the Indians brought down fo much bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, that we found it neceffary to fend away part of them unbought, and to acquaint them, by figns, that we fhould want no more for two days to come. Every thing was purchafed this day with beads: a fingle bead, as big as a pea, being the purchafe of five or fix cocoa-nuts, and as many of the bread-fruit. Mr. Banks's tent was got up before night within the works, and he flept on fhore for the firft time. Proper centries were placed round it, but no Indian attempted to approach it the whole night.

Wedref, ig.
The next morning, our friend Tubourai Tamaide made Mr. Banks a vifit at the tent; and brought with him not
only his wife and family, but the roof of a houfe, and feveral materials for fetting it up, with furniture and implements of various kinds, intending, as we undertood him, to take up his refidence in our neighbourhood: this inftance of his confidence and good-will gave us great pleafure, and we determined to ftrengthen his attachment to us by every means in our power. Soon after his arrival, he took Mr. Banks by the hand, and leading him out of the line, fignified that he fhould accompany him into the woods. Mr. Banks readily confented, and having walked with him about a quarter of a mile, they arrived at a kind of awning which he had already fet up, and which feemed to be his occafional habitation. Here he unfolded a bundle of his country eloth, and taking out two garments, one of red cloth, and the other of very neat matting, he clothed Mr. Banks in them, and without any other ceremony, immediately conducted him back to the tent. His attendants foon after brought him fome pork and bread-fruit, which he eat, dipping his meat into falt water inftead of fauce: after his meal he retired to Mr. Banks's bed, and flept about an hour. In the afternoon, his wife Tomio brought to the tent a young man about two and twenty years of age, of a very comely appearance, whom they both feemed to acknowledge as their fon, though we afterwards difcovered that he was not fo. In the evening, this young man and another Chief, who had alfo paid us a vifit, went away to the weftward, but Tubourai Tamaide and his wife returned to the awning in the fkirts of the wood.
Our Surgeon, Mr. Monkhoufe, having walked out this evening, reported, that he had feen the body of the manwho had been fhot at the tents, which he faid was wrapped. in cloth, and placed on a kind of bier, fupported by fakes, under a roof that feemed to have been fet up for the pur-

1766:
April. pofe : that near it were depofited fome influments of war, and other things, which he would particularly have examined but for the ftench of the body, which was intolerable. He faid, that he faw alfo two more fheds of the fame kind, in one of which were the bones of a human body that had lain till they were quite dry. We difcovered afterwards, that this was the way in which they ufually difpofed of their dead.
A kind of market now began to be kept juft without the lines, and was plentifully fupplied with every thing but pork. Tubourai Tamaide was our conflant gueft, imitating our manners, even to the ufing of a knife and fork, which he did very handily.

As my curiofity was excited by Mr. Monkhoufe's account of the fituation of the man who had been fhot, I took an opportunity to go with fome others to fee it. I found the fhed under which his body lay, clofe by the houfe in which he refided when he was alive, fome others being not more than ten yards diftant; it was about 15 feet long, and ir broad, and of a proportionable height: one end was wholly open, and the other end, and the two fides, were partly enclofed with a kind of wicker work. The bicr on which the corps was depofited, was a frame of wood like that in which the fca beds, called cotts, are placed, with a matted bottom, and fupported by four pofts, at the height of about five feet from the ground. The body was covered firft with a matt, and then with white cloth; by the fide of it lay a wooden mace, one of their weapons of war, and near the head of $i$ t, which lay next to the clofe end of the fhed, lay two cocoa nut-fhells, fuch as are fometimes ufed to carry water in; at the other end a bunch of green leaves, with fome dried twigs, all tied together, were ftuck in the ground, by which lay a fone

## ROUND THE WORLD.

about as big as a cocoa-nut : near thefe lay one of the young plantain trees, which are ufed for emblems of peace, and clofe by it a fone ax. At the open end of the fhed alfo hung, in feveral ftrings, a great number of palm-nuts, and without the fhed, was fuck upright in the ground, the ftem of a plantain tree about five feet high, upon the top of which was placed a cocoa nut-fhell full of frefh water: againft the fide of one of the pofts hung a fmall bag, containing a few pieces of bread-fruit ready roafted, which were not all put in at the fame time, for fome of them were frefh, and others ftale. I took notice that feveral of the natives obferved us with a mixture of folicitude and jealoufy in their countenances, and by their geftures expreffed uneafinefs when we went near the body, ftanding themfelves at a little diftance while we were making our examination, and appearing to be pleafed when we came away.
Our refidence on thore would by no means have been difagreeable if we had not been inceffantly tormented by the flies, which, among other mifchief, made it almoft impofible for Mr. Parkinfon, Mr. Banks's natural hiftory painter, to work; for they not only covered his fubject fo as that no part of its furface could be feen, but even eat the colour off the paper as faft as he could lay it on. We had recourfe to mufquito nets and fly-traps, which, though they made the inconvenience tolerable, were very far fiom removing it.
On the 22d, Tootahah gave us a fpecimen of the mufic Saturday $z z_{\text {\% }}$ of this country ; four perfons performed upon flutes which had only two fops, and therefore could not found more than four notes, by half tones : they were founded like our German flutes, except that the performer, inftead of applying it Vol. IL.
1769. to his mouth, blew into it with one noftril, while he ftopped April. the other with his thumb: to thefe inftruments four other Saturday ${ }^{22 .}$ perfons fung, and kept very good time ; but only one tune was played during the whole concert.

Several of the natives brought us axes, which they had received from on board the Dolphin, to grind and repair; but among others, there was one which became the fubject of much fpeculation, as it appeared to be French: after much enquiry, we learnt that a fhip had been here between our arrival and the departure of the Dolphin, which we then conjectured to have been a Spaniard, but now know to have been the Boudeufe, commanded by M. Bougainville.

## C H A P. X.

An Excurfon to the Eaftward, an Account of Several Incidents that bappened both on board and on fore, and of the firft Interview with Oberea, the Perfon who, when the Dolpbin was here, was fuppofed to be शueen of the Ifland, with a Defcription of the Fort.

ON the 24 th, Mr . Banks and Dr. Solander examined the country for feveral miles along the fhore to the eaftward: for about two miles it was flat and fertile; after that the hills ftretched quite to the water's edge, and a little farther ran out into the fea, fo that they were obliged to climb over them. Thefe hills, which were barren, continued for about three miles more, and then terminated in a large plain, which was full of good houfes, and people who appeared to live in great affluence. In this place there was a river, much more confiderable than that at our fort, which iffued from a deep and beautiful valley, and, where our travellers croffed it, though at fome diftance from the fea, was near one hundred yards wide. About a mile beyond this river the country became again barren, the rocks every where projecting into the fea, for which reafon they refolved to return. Juft as they had formed this refolution, one of the natives offered them refrefhment, which they accepted. They found this nan to be of a kind that has been defcribed by various authors, as mixed with many nations, but diftinct from them all. His fkin was of a dead white, without the leaft appearance of what is called complexion, though fome parts of his
1769.
body were in a fmall degree lefs white than others: his hair eye-brows, and bcard were as white as his fkin; his eyes appeared as if they were bloodfhot, and he feemed to be very fhort-fighted.

At their return they were met by Tubourai Tamaide, and his women, who, at feeing them, felt a joy which not being able to exprefs, they burft into tears, and wept fome time before their paffion could be reftrained.

This evening Dr. Solander lent his knife to one of thefe Teeday 25 . women, who neglected to return it, and the next morning Mr. Banks's alfo was miffing; upon this occafion I muft bear my teftimony, that the people of this country, of all ranks, men and women, are the erranteft thieves upon the face of the earth: the very day after we arrived here, when they came on board us, the chiefs were employed in ftealing what they could in the cabbin, and their dependants were no lefs induftrious in other parts of the fhip; they fnatched up every thing that it was poffible for them to fecrete till they got on fhore, even to the glafs ports, two of which they carried off undetected. Tubourai Tamaide was the only one except Tootahah who had not been found guilty, and the prefumption, arifing from this circumftance, that he was exempt from a vice, of which the whole nation befides were guilty, cannot be fuppofed to outweigh frong appearances to the contrary. Mr. Banks therefore, though not without fome reluctance, accufed him of having folen his knife : he folemnly and fteadily denied that he knew any thing of it ; upon which Mr. Banks made him underftand, that whoever had taken it, he was determined to have it returned: upon this refolute declaration, one of the natives who was prefent, produced a rag in which three knives were very carefully tied up. One was that which Dr. Solander

## ROUND THE WORLD.

had lent to the woman, another was a table knife belonging to me, and the owner of the third was not known. With thefe the chief immediately fet out, in order to make reftitution of them to their owners at the tents. Mr. Banks remained with the women, who expreffed great apprehenfions that fome mifchief was defigned againft their lord. When he came to the tents he refored one of the knives to Dr. Solander and another to me, the third not being owned, and then began to fearch for Mr. Banks's in all the places where he had ever feen it. After fome time, one of Mr. Banks's fervants, underfanding what he was about, immediately fetched his mafter's knife, which it feems he had laid by the day before, and till now knew nothing of its having been miffed. Tubourai Tamaide, upon this demonftration of his innocence, expreffed the ftrongeft emotions of mind, both in his looks and geftures; the tears flarted from his eyes, and he made figns, with the knife, that, if he was ever guilty of fuch an action as had been imputed to him, he would fubmit to have his throat cut. He then rufhed out of the lines, and returned haftily to Mr. Banks, with a countenance that feverely reproached him with his fufpicions. Mr. Banks foon undertood that the knife had been received from his fervant, and was fcarcely lefs affected at what had happened than the Chief; he felt himfelf to be the guilty perfon, and was very defirous to atone for his fault. The poor Indian, however violent his paffions, was a franger to fullen refentment; and upon Mr. Banks's fpending a little time familiarly with him, and making him a few trifling prefents, he forgot the wrong that had been done him, and was perfectly reconciled.
Upon this occafion it may be obferved, that thefe people have a knowlege of right and wrong from the mere dictates of natural confcience; and involuntarily condemn them-
1769.
felves when they do that to others, which they would condemn others for doing to them. That Tubourai Tamaide felt the force of moral obligation, is certain ; for the imputation of an action which he confidered as indifferent, would not, when it appeared to be groundlefs, have moved him with fuch excefs of paffion. We muft indeed eftimate the virtue of thefe people, by the only ftandard of morality, the conformity of their conduct to what in their opinion is right; but we muft not haftily conclude that theft is a teftimony of the fame depravity in them that it is in us, in the inflances in which our people were fufferers by their difhonefty; for their temptation was fuch, as to furmount would be confidered as a proof of uncommon integrity among thofe who have more knowlege, better principles, and ftronger motives to refift the temptations of illicit advantage: an Indian among penny knives, and beads, or even nails and broken glafs, is in the fame flate of trial with the meaneft fervant in Europe among unlocked coffers of jewels and gold.
Wednef. 26. On the 26th, I mounted fix fwivel guns upon the fort, which I was forry to fee ftruck the natives with dread: fome fifhermen who lived upon the point removed farther off, and Owhaw told us, by figns, that in four days we fhould fire great guns.
Thurday 27. On the 27th, Tubourai Tamaide, with a friend, who eat with a voracity that I never faw before, and the three women that ufually attended him, whofe names were Terapo, Tirao, and Omié, dined at the fort: in the evening they took their leave, and fet out for the houfe which Tubourai Tamaide had fet up in the fkirts of the wood; but in lefs than a quarter of an hour he returned in great emotion, and haftily feizing Mr. Banks's arm, made figns that he thould follow him. Mr. Banks immediately complied, and

## ROUND THE WORLD.

they foon came up to a place where they found the fhip's butcher, with a reaping-hook in his hand: here the Chief flopped, and, in a tranfport of rage which rendered his figns fcarcely intelligible, intimated that the butcher had threatened, or attempted, to cut his wife's throat with the reapinghook. Mr. Banks then fignified to him, that if he could fully explain the offence, the man fhould be punifhed. Upon this he became more calm, and made Mr. Banks underfand that the offender, having taken a fancy to a fone hatchet which lay in his houfe, had offered to purchafe it of his wife for a nail: that fhe having refufed to part with it upon any terms, he had catched it up, and throwing down the nail, threatened to cut her throat if the made any refiftance : to prove this charge the hatchet and the nail were produced, and the butcher had fo little to fay in his defence that there was not the leaft reafon to doubt of its truth.

Mr. Banks having reported this matter to me, I took an opportunity, when the Chief and his women, with other Indians, were on board the thip, to call up the butcher, and after a recapitulation of the charge and the proof, I gave orders that he fhould be punifhed, as well to prevent other offences of the fame kind, as to acquit Mr. Banks of his promife; the Indians faw him flripped and tied up to the rigging with a fixe attention, waiting in filent fufpence for the event; but as foon as the firf flroke was given, they interfered with great agitation, earnefly intreating that the reft of the punifhment might be remitted: to this, however, for many reafons, I could not confent, and when they found that they could not prevail by their interceffion, they gave vent to their pity by tears.
Their tears indeed, like thofe of children, were always, ready to exprefs any paffion that was flrongly excited, and.
xyten. like thofe of children they alfo appeared to be forgotten as foon as fhed ; of which the following among many others, is a remarkable inftance. Very early in the morning of the 28 th , even before it was day, a great number of them came down to the fort, and Terapo being obferved among the women on the outfide of the gate, Mr. Banks went out and brought her in; he faw that the tears then food in her eyes, and as foon as fhe entered they began to flow in great abundance : he enquired earneftly the caufe, but inftead of anfwering fhe took from under her garment a fhark's tooth, and ftruck it fix or feven times into her head with great force; a profufion of blood followed, and the talked loud, but in a moft melancholy tone, for fome minutes, without at all regarding his enquiries, which he repeated with ftill more impatience and concern, while the other Indians, to his great furprize, talked and laughed, without taking the leaft notice of her diftrefs. But her own behaviour was ftill more extraordinary. As foon as the bleeding was over, fhe looked up with a fmile, and began to collect fome fmall pieces of cloth, which during her bleeding fhe had thrown down to catch the blood; as foon as fhe had picked them all up, fhe carried them out of the tent, and threw them into the fea, carefully difperfing them abroad, as if the wifhed to prevent the fight of them from reviving the remembrance of what the had done. She then plunged into the river, and after having wafhed her whole body, returned to the tents with the fame gaiety and cheerfulnefs as if nothing had happened.

It is not indeed frange that the forrows of thefe artlefs people fhould be tranfient, any more than that their paffions fhould be fuddenly and ftrongly expreffed: what they feel they have never been taught either to difguife or fupprefs, and having no habits of thinking which perpetually recal
the paft, and anticipate the future, they are affected by all the changes of the paffing hour, and reflect the colour of the time, however frequently it may vary: they have no project which is to be purfued from day to day, the fubject of unremitted anxiety and folicitude, that firft rufhes into the mind when they awake in the morning, and is laft difmiffed when they fleep at night. Yet if we admit that they are upon the whole happier than we, we muft admit that the child is happier than the man, and that we are lofers by the perfection of our nature, the increafe of our knowlege; and the enlargement of our views.

Canoes were continually coming in during all this forenoon, and the tents at the fort were crowded with people of both fexes from different parts of the Ifland. I was myfelf bufy on board the fhip, but Mr. Mollincux, our mafter, who was one of thofe that made the laft voyage in the Dolphin, went on fhore. As foon as he entered Mr. Banks's tent he fixed his eyes upon one of the women, who was fitting there with great compofure among the reft, and immediately deelared her to be the perfon who at that time was fuppofed to be Queen of the iffand; fhe alfo, at the fame time, acknowledging him to be one of the ftrangers whom the had feen beforc. The attention of all prefent was now diverted from every other object, and wholly engaged in confidering a perfon who had made fo diftinguifhed a figure in the accounts. that had been given of this ifland by its firft difcoverers; and' we foon learnt that her name was Oberea. She feemed to: be about forty years of age, and was not only tall, but of a large make; her $f k$ in was white, and there was an uncommon intelligence and fenfibility in her eyes: fhe appeared to have been handfome when the was young, but at this time little more than memorials of her beauty were leff.
1769.

April. Friday 28.

As foon as her quality was known, an offer was made to conduct her to the fhip. Of this the readily accepted, and came on board with two men and feveral women, who feemed to be all of her family; I received her with fuch marks of diftinction as I thought would gratify her moft, and was not fparing of my prefents, among which this auguft perfonage feemed particularly delighted with a child's doll. After fome time fpent on board, I attended her back to the fhore ; and as foon as we landed, the prefented me with a hog, and feveral bunches of plantains, which fhe caufed to be carried from her canoes up to the fort in a kind of proceflion, of which the and myfelf brought up the rear. In our way to the fort we met Tootahah, who, though not King, appeared to be at this time invefted with the fovereign authority; he feemed not to be well pleafed with the diftinction that was fhewed to the lady, and became fo jealous when the produced her doll, that to propitiate him it was thought proper to compliment him with another. At this time he thought fit to prefer a doll to a hatchet; but this preference arofe only from a childifh jealoufy, which could not be foothed but by a gift of exactly the fame kind with that which had been prefented to Oberea; for dolls in a very fhort time were univerfally confidered as trifles of no value.

The men who had vifited us from time to time had, without feruple, eaten of our provifions; but the women had never yet been prevailed upon to tafte a morfel. To-day, however, though they refufed the moft preffing folicitations to dine with the Gentlemen, they afterwards retired to the fervants' apartment, and eat of plantains very heartily; a myftery of female œconomy here, which none of us could explain.

On the 29th, not very early in the forenoon, Mr. Banks went to pay his court to Oberea, and was told that fhe was ftill afleep under the awning of her canoe: thither therefore he went, intending to call her up, a liberty which he thought he might take, without any danger of giving offence: but, upon looking into her chamber, to his great aftonifhment, he found her in bed with a handfome young fellow about five and twenty, whofe name was Оbadé: he retreated with fome hafte and confufion, but was foon made to underftand, that fuch amours gave no occafion to fcandal, and that Obadée was univerfally known to have been felected by her as the object of her private favours. The lady being too polite to fuffer Mr. Banks to wait long in her antichamber, dreffed herfelf with more than ufual expedition, and as a token of of fpecial grace, clothed him in a fuit of fine cloth and procceded with him to the tents. In the evening, Mr. Banks paid a vifit to Tubourai Tamaide, as he had often done before, by candle light, and was equally grieved and furprized to find him and his family in a melancholy mood, and moft of them in tears: he endeavoured in vain to difcover the caufe, and therefore his ftay among them was but fhort. When he reported this circumftance to the officers at the fort, they recollected that Owhaw had foretold, that in four days we fhould fire our great guns; and as this was the eve of the third day, the fituation in which Tubourai Tamaide and his family had been found, alarmed them. The fentries therefore were doubled at the fort, and the Gentlemen flept under arms; at two in the morning, Mr. Banks himfelf went round the point, but found every thing fo quiet, that he gave up all fufpicions of mifchief intended by the natives as groundlefs. We had however another fource of fecurity; our little fortification was now complete. The north and
1769. fouth fides confifted of a bank of earth four feet and an half high on the infide, and a ditch without ten feet broad and fix deep; on the weft fide, facing the bay, there was a bank of earth four feet high, and pallifadoes upon that, but no ditch, the works here being at high-water mark; on the eaft fide, upon the bank of the river, was placed a double row of water cafks, filled with water; and as this was the weakeft fide, the two four pounders were planted there, and fix fwivel guns were mounted fo as to command the only two avenues from the woods. Our garrifon confifted of about five and forty men with fmall arms, including the officers, and the gentlemen who refided on fhore; and our fentries were as well relieved as in the beft regulated frontier in Europe.

Sunday 30.
We continued our vigilance the next day, though we had no particular reafon to think it neceffary; but about ten o'clock in the morning, Tomio came running to the tents, with a mixture of grief and fear in her countenance, and taking Mr. Banks, to whom they applied in every emergency and diftrefs, by the arm, intimated that Tubourai Tamaide was dying, in confequence of fomething which our people had given him to eat, and that he muft inftantly go with her to his houfe. Mr. Banks fet out without delay, and found his Indian friend leaning his head againft a poft, in an attitude of the utmoft languor and defpondency; the people about him intimated that he had been vomiting, and brought out a leaf folded up with great care, which they faid contained fome of the poifon, by the deleterious effects of which he was now dying. Mr. Banks haftily opened the leaf, and upon examining its contents found them to be no other than a chew of tobacco, which the chief had begged of fome of our people, and which they had indifcreetly given
him: he had obferved that they kept it long in the mouth, and being defirous of doing the fame, he had chewed it to powder, and fwallowed the fpittle. During the examination of the leaf and its contents, he looked up at Mr. Banks with the moft piteous afpect, and intimated that he had but a very fhort time to live. Mr. Banks, however, being now mafter of his difeafe, directed him to drink plentifully of cocoa-nut milk, which in a fhort time put an end to his ficknels and apprehenfions, and he fpent the day at the fort with that uncommon flow of cheerfulnefs and good-humour, which is always produced by a fudden and unexpected relief from pain either of body or mind.

Captain Wallis having brought home one of the adzes which thefe people, having no metal of any kind, make of ftone, Mr. Stevens, the Secretary to the Admiralty, procured one to be made of iron in imitation of it, which I brought out with me, to fhew how much we excelled in making tools after their own fafhion : this I had not yet produced, as it never happened to come into my mind. But on the firft of May, Tootahah coming on board about ten o'clock in the May.
Monday 1. forenoon, expreffed a great curiofity to fee the contents of every cheft and drawer that was in my cabbin; as I always made a point of gratifying him, I opened them immediately, and having taken a fancy to many things that he faw, and collected them together, he at laft happened to caft his eye upon this adze ; he inftantly fnatched it up with the greateft eagernefs, and putting away every thing which he had before felected, he afked me whether I would let him have that: I readily confented; and, as if he was afraid I fhould repent, he carried it off immediately in a tranfport of joy, without making any other requeft, which whatever had been our liberality was feldom the cafe.
${ }^{\text {1769. }}$ May. About noon, a Chief, who had dined with me a few days May. before, accompanied by fome of his women, came on board alone: I had obferved that he was fed.by his women, but I made no doubt, that upon occafion he would condefcend to feed himfelf: in this, however, I found myfelf miftaken. When my noble gueft was feated, and the dinner upon the table, I helped him to fome victuals: as I obferved that he did not immediately begin his meal, I preffed him to eat: but he fill continued to fit motionlefs like a flatue, without attempting to put a fingle morfel into his mouth, and would certainly have gone without his dinner, if one of the fervants had not fed him.

## C H A P. XI.

The Obfervatory fet up; the Quadrant folen, and Conjequences of the Theft: A Vijgt to Tootabab: Defcription of a Wrefling-match: European Seeds fown: Names given to our People by the Indians.

IN the afternoon, of Monday the ift of May, we fet up the obfervatory, and took the aftronomical quadrant, with fome other inftruments on fhore, for the firft time.


Monday I.

The next morning, about nine o'clock, I went on fhore Tueffay 2. with Mr. Green to fix the quadrant in a fituation for ufe, when to our inexpreffible furprize and concern it was not to be found. It had been depofited in the tent which was referved for my ufe, where, as I paffed the night on board, nobody flept: it had never been taken out of the packing* cafe, which was eighteen inches fquare, and the whole was of confiderable weight; a fentinel had been pofted the whole night within five yards of the tent door, and none of the other inftruments were miffing. We at firft fufpected that it might have been ftolen by fome of our own people, who fecing a deal box, and not knowing the contents, might think it contained nails, or fome other fubjects of traffic with the natives. A large reward was therefore offered to any one who could find it, as, without this, we could not perform the fervice for which our voyage was principally undertaken. Our fearch in the mean time was not confined to the fort and the places adjacent, but as the cafe might poffibly have been carried back to the fhip, if any of our
own people had bcen the thieves, the moft diligent fearch was made for it on board; all the parties however returned without any news of the quadrant. Mr. Banks, therefore, who upon fuch occafions declined neither labour nor rifk, and who had more influence over the Indians than any of us, determined to go in fearch of it into the woods; he hoped, that if it had been ftolen by the natives, he fhould find it wherever they had opened the box, as they would immediately difcover that to them it would be wholly ufelefs : or, if in this expectation he fhould be difappointed, that he might recover it by the afcendancy he had acquired over the Chiefs. He fet out, accompanied by a midfhipman and Mr . Green, and as he was croffing the river he was met by Tubourai Tamaide, who immediately made the figure of a triangle with three bits of flraw upon his hand. By this Mr. Banks knew that the Indians were the thieves; and that, although they had opened the cafe, they were not difpofed to part with the contents. No time was therefore to be loft, and Mr. Banks made Tubourai Tamaide underfland, that he: muft infantly go with him to the place whither the quadrant had been carried; he confented, and they fet out together to the eaftward, the Chief inquiring at every houfe which they paffed after the thief by name: the people readily told him which way he was gone, and how long it was fince he liad been there: the hope which this gave them that they fhould overtake him, fupported them under their fatigue; and they preffed forward; fometimes walking, fometimes. running, though the weather was intolerably hot; when they had climbed a hill at the diffance of about four miles, their conductor fhewed them a point full three miles farther, and gave them to underftand that they were not to expeet the inflrument till they had got thither. Here they paufed; they had no arms, except a pair of piftols, whicia

Mr. Banks always carried in his pocket; they were going to a place that was at leaft feven miles diftant from the fort, where the Indians might be lefs fubmiffive than at home,
1759.

May.
Tuefday z. and to take from them what they had ventured their lives to get ; and what, notwithftanding our conjectures, they appeared defirous to keep: thefe were difcouraging circuntftances, and their fituation would become more critical at every ftep. They determined, however, not to relinquifh their enterprize, nor to purfue it without taking the beft meafures for their fecurity that were in their power. It was therefore determined, that Mr. Banks and Mr. Green fhould go on, and that the MidGhipman fhould return to me, and defire that I would fend a party of men after them, acquainting me at the fame time, that it was impoffible they fhould return till it was dark. Upon receiving this meffage I fet out, with fuch a party as I thought fufficient for the occafion; leaving orders, both at the fhip and at the fort, that no canoe fhould be fuffered to go out of the bay, but that none of the natives fhould be feized or detained.

In the mean time, Mr. Banks and Mr. Green purfued their journey, under the aufpices of Tubourai Tamaide, and in the very fpot which he had feccified, they met one of his own people, with part of the quadrant in his hand. At this moft welcome fight they ftopped; and a great number of Indians immediately came up, fome of whom preffing rather rudely upon them, Mr. Banks thought it neceflary to fhew one of his piftols, the fight of which reduced them inftantly to order: as the crowd that gathered round them was every mo. ment increafing, he marked out a circle in the grafs, and they ranged themfelves on the outfide of it to the number of feveral hundreds with great quietnefs and decorum. Into the middle of this circle, the box, which was now arrived, was ordered to be brought, with feveral reading glaffes, and Yoz. II.

other

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1;6g. other fmall matters, which in their hurry they had put into a piftol-cafe, that Mr. Banks knew to be his property, it having been fome time before folen from the tents, with a horfe piftol in it, which he immediately demanded, and which was alfo reftored.

Mr. Green was impatient to fee whether all that had been taken away was returned, and upon examining the box found the ftand, and a few fmall things of lefs confequence, wanting; feveral perfons were fent in fearch of thefe, and moft of the fmall things were returned : but it was fignified that the thicf had not brought the fland fo far, and that it would be delivered to our friends as they went back; this being confirmed by Tubourai Tamaide, they prepared to return, as nothing would then be wanting but what might eafily be fupplied; and after they had advanced about two miles, I met them with my party, to our mutual fatisfaction, congratulating each other upon the recovery of the quadrant, with a pleafure proportioned to the importance of the event.
About eight o'clock, Mr. Banks with Tubourai Tamaide got back to the fort; when, to his great furprize, he found Tootahah in cuftody, and many of the natives in the utmoft terror and diftrefs, crowding about the gate. He went haftily in, fome of the Indians were fuffered to follow him, and the fcene was extremely affecting. Tubourai Tamaide preffing forward, ran up to Tootahah, and catching him in his arms, they both burf into tears, and wept over each other, without being able to fpeak: the other Indians were alfo in tears for their Chief, both he and they being flrongly poffeffed with the notion that he was to be put to death. In this fituation they continued till I entered the fort, which was about a quarter of an hour afterwards. I was equaily
furprized and concerned at what had happened, the confining Tootahah being contrary to my orders, and therefore inftantly fet him at liberty. Upon enquiring into the affair, I was told, that my going into the woods with a party of men under arms, at a time when a robbery had been committed, which it was fuppofed I fhould refent, in proportion to our apparent injury by the lofs, had fo alarmed the natives, that in the evening they began to leave the neighbourhood of the fort with their effects: that a double canoc having been feen to put off from the bottom of the bay by Mr. Gore, the Sccond Lieutenant, who was left in command on board the fhip, and who had received orders not to fuffer any canoe to go out, he fent the Boatfwain with a boat after her to bring her back: that as foon as the boat came up, the Indians, being alarmed, leaped into the fea; and that Tootahah, being unfortunately one of the number, the Boatfwain took him up, and brought him to the fhip, fuffering the reft of the people to fwim on fhore: that Mr. Gore, not fufficiently attending to the order that none of the people hould be confined, had fent him to the fort, and Mr. Hicks, the Firf Lieutenant, who commanded there, receiving him in charge from Gore, did not think himfelf at liberty to difmifs him.

The notion that we intended to put him to death had poffeffed him fo ftrongly, that he could not be perfuaded to the contrary till by my orders he was led out of the fort. The people received him as they would have done a father in the fame circumftances, and every one preffed forward to $\mathrm{cm}-$ brace him. Sudden joy is commonly liberal, without a ferupulous regard to merit; and Tootahah, in the firft expanfion of his heart, upon being unexpectedly reftored to liberty and life, infitted upon our receiving a prefent of two hogs; though, being confcious that upon this occafion we had no claim to favours, we refufed them many times.
8769. May. Wednef. 3.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander attended the next morning in their ufual capacity of market-men, but very few Indians. appeared, and thofe who came brought no provifions. Too tahah, however, fent fome of his people for the canoe thathad been detained, which they took away: A canoe having alfo been detained that belonged to Oberea, Tupia, the perfon. who managed her affairs when the Dolphin was here, was* fent to examine whether any thing on board had been taken awray: and he was fo well fatisfied of the contrary, that he left the canoe where he found it, and joined us at the fort, where he fpent the day, and flept on board the canoe at night. About noon, fome fifhing boats came abreaft of the tents, but would part with very little of what they had on board; and we felt the want of cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit very feverely. In the courfe of the day, Mr. Banks walked out into the woods, that by converfing with the people he might recover their confidence and good-will: he found them civil, but they ail complained of the ill-treatment of their Chief; who, they faid, had been beaten and pulled by the hair. Mr: Banks endeavoured to convince them, that he had fuffered no perfonal violence, which to the beft of our knowlege was true; yet, perhaps the Boatfwain had behaved with a brutality which he was afraid or afhamed to acknowledge. The Chief himfelf being, probably, upon recollection, of opinion that we had ill-deferved the hogs, which he had left with us as a prefent, fent a meffenger in the afternoon to demand an ax, and a fhirt in return; but as I was told that he did not intend to come down to the fort for ten days, I excufed myfelf from giving them till I fhould fee him, hoping that his impatience might induce him to fetch them, and knowing that abfence would probably continue the coolnefs between us, to which the fint interview might put an end.

The next day we were flill more fenfible of the inconvenience we had incurred by giving offence to the people in the perfon of their Chief; for the market was fo ill fupplied that we were in want of neceffarics. Mr. Banks therefore went into the woods to Tubourai Tamaide, and with fome difficulty perfuaded him to let us have five baflects of breadfruit; a very feafonable fupply, as they contained above one hundred and twenty. In the afternoon another meffenger arrived from Tootahah for the ax and fhirt ; as it was now become abfolutely neceffary to recover the friendfhip of this man, without which it would be fcarcely poffible to procure. provifions, I fent word that Mr. Banks and myfelf would vifit him on the morrow, and bring what he wanted with us.

Early the next morning he fent again to remind me of my Friday $5 *$. promife, and his people feemed to wait till we fhould fet out with great impatience: I therefore ordered the pinnace, in which I embarked with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander about ten o'clock: we took one of Tootahah's people in the boat with us, and in about an hour we arrived at his place of refidence which is called Eparre, and is about four miles to the weftward of the tents.

We found the people waiting for us in great numbers upon the fhore, fo that it would have been impoffible for us to have proceeded, if way had not been made for us by a tall well-looking man, who had fomething like a turban about his head, and a long white ftick in his hand, with which he laid about him at an unmerciful rate. This man conducted us to the Chicf, while the people fhouted 'round us, Taio Tootabah, "Tootahah is your friend." We found him, like an ancient Patriarch, fitting under a tree, with a number of venerable old men flanding round him; he made 3. fign to us to fit down, and immediately afked for his ax:
this I prefented to him, with an upper garment of broadcloth, made after the country fafhion, and trimmed with tape, to which I alfo added a fhirt: he received them with great fatisfaction, and immediately put on the garment; but the fhirt he gave to the perfon who had cleared the way for us upon our landing, who was now feated by us, and of whom he feemed defirous that we fhould take particular notice. In a fhort time, Oberea, and feveral other women whom we knew, came and fat down among us: Tootahah left us feveral times, but after a fhort abfence returned; we thought it had been to fhow himfelf in his new finery to the people, but we wronged him, for it was to give directions for our refrefhment and entertainment. While we were waiting for his return the laft time he left us, very impatient to be difmiffed, as we were almoft fuffocated in the croud, word was brought us, that he expected us elfewhere: we found him fitting under the awning of our own boat, and making figns that we fhould come to him: as many of us therefore went on board as the boat would hold, and he then ordered bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts to be brought, of both which we tafted, rather to gratify him than becaufe we had a defire to eat. A meffage was foon after brought him, upon which he went out of the boat, and we were in a fhort time defired to follow. We were conducted to a large area or court-yard, which was railed round with bamboos about three feet high, on one fide of his houfe, where an entertainment was provided for us, entirely new: this was a wrefling match. At the upper end of the area fat the Chief, and feveral of his principal men were ranged on each fide of him, fo as to form a femicircle; thefe were the judges, by whom the victor was to be applauded; feats were alfo left for us at each end of the line, but we chofe rather to be at liberty among the reft of the fpectators.

When all was ready, ten or twelve perfons, whom we underftood to be the combatants, and who were naked, except a cloth that was faftened about the waift, entered the area, and walked flowly round it, in a ftooping pofture, with their left hands on their right breafts, and their right hands open, with which they frequently ftruck the left fore-arm fo as to produce a quick fmart found : this was a general challenge to the combatants whom they were to engage, or any other perfon prefent : after thefe followed others in the fame manner, and then a particular challenge was given, by which each man fingled out his antagonift: this was done by join.. ing the finger ends of both hands, and bringing them to the breaft, at the fame time moving the elbows up and down with a quick motion : if the perfon to whom this was addreffed accepted the challenge, he repeated the figns, and immediately each put himfelf into an attitude to engage: the next minute they clofed; but, except in firf feizing each other, it was a mere conteft of frength : each endeavoured to lay hold of the cther, firft by the thigh, and if that failed by the hand, the hair, the cloth, or elfewhere as he could : when this was done they grappled, without the leaft dexterity or hiill, till one of them, by having a more advantageous hold, or greater mufcular force, threw the other on his back. When the conteft was over, the old men gave their plaudit to the victor in a few words, which they repeated together in a kind of tune: his conqueft was alfo generally celebrated by three huzzas. The entertainment was then fufpended for a few minutes, after which another couple of wreftlers came forward and engaged in the fame manner: if it happened that neither was thrown; after the conteft had continued about a minute, they parted, either by confent or the intervention of their friends, and in this cafe each flapped his arm, as a challenge to a new engagement, either with

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. 

May.
Friday 5.
the fame antagonift or fome other. While the wreftlers were engaged, another party of men performed a dance which lafted alfo about a minute; but neither of thefe parties took the leaft notice of each other, their attention being wholly fixed on what they were doing. We obferved with pleafure, that the conqueror never exulted over the vanquifhed, and that the vanquifhed never repined at the fuccefs of the conqueror; the whole conteft was carried on with perfect goodwill and good-humour, though in the prefence of at leaft five hundred fpectators, of whom fome were women. The number of women indeed was comparatively fimall, none but thofe of rank were prefent, and we had reafon to believe that they would not have been fpectators of this exercife but in compliment to us.

This lafted about two hours; during all which time the man who had made way for us when we landed, kept the people at a proper diftance, by ftriking thofe who preffed forward very feverely with his fick: upon enquiry we learnt, that he was an officer belonging to Tootahah, acting as a mafter of the ceremonies.

It is fcarcely poffible for thofe who are acquainted with the athletic fports of very remote antiquity, not to remark a rude refemblance of them in this weflling-match among the natives of a little ifland in the midft of the Pacific Ocean: and even our female readers may recollect the account given of them by Fenelon in his Telemachus, where, though the cvents are fictitious, the manners of the age are faithfully tranfribed from authors by whom they are fuppofed to have been truly related.

When the wreftling was over, we were given to underfland that two hogs, and a large quantity of bread-fruit were preparing for our dinner, which, as our appetites were now
keen, was very agreeable intelligence. Our hoft, however, feemed to repent of his liberality; for, inftead of fetting his two hogs before us, he ordered one of them to be carried

$\xrightarrow{ }$ into our boat; at firft we were not forry for this new difpofition of matters, thinking that we fhould dine more comfortably in the boat than on fhore, as the croud would more eafily be kept at a diftance: but when we came on board, he ordered us to proceed with his hog to the fhip; this was mortifying, as we were now to row four miles while our dinner was growing cold; however, we thought fit to comply, and were at laft gratified with the cheer that he had provided, of which he and Tubourai Tamaide had a liberal flare.

Our reconciliation with this man operated upon the people like a charm; for he was no fooner known to be on board, than bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other provifions were brought to the fort in great plenty.

Affairs now went on in the ufual channel; but pork being ftill a fcarce commodity, our Mafter, Mr. Mollineux, and Mr. Green went in the pinnace to the eaftward, on the 8th, Monday $\delta$ o early in the morning, to fee whether they could procure any hogs or poultry in that part of the country: they proceeded in that direction twenty miles; but though they fav many hogs, and one turtle, they could not purchafe either at any price: the people every where told them, that they all belonged to Tootahah, and that they could fell none of them without his permiffion. We now began to think that this man was indeed a great Prince; for an influence fo extenfive and abfolute could be acquired by no other. And we afterwards found that he adminiftered the government of this part of the ifland, as fovereign, for a minor whom we never faw all the time that we were upon it. When Mr. Vol. II. R Green
 tree of a fize which he was afraid to relate, it being no lefs than fixty yards in circumference; but Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander foon explained to him, that it was a fpecies of the fig, the branches of which, bending down, take frefh root in the earth, and thus form a congerics of trunks, which being very clofe to each other, and all joined by a common vegetation, might cafily be miftaken for one.

Though the market at the fort was now tolerably fupplied, provifions were brought more flowly: a fufficient quantity ufed to be purchafed between fun-rife and eight o'clock, but it was now become neceffary to attend the greateft part of the day. Mr. Banks, therefore, fixed his little boat up before the door of the fort, which was of great ufe as a place to trade in ; hitherto we had purchafed cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit for beads; but the market becoming rather flack in thefe articles, we were now, for the firft time, forced to bring out our nails: one of our fmalleft fize, which was about four inches long, procured us twenty cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit in proportion, fo that in a fhort time our firft plenty was reftored.

On the 9 th, foon after breakfaft, we received a vifit from Oberea, being the firft that the had made us after the lofs of our quadrant, and the unfortunate confinement of Tootahah; with her came her prefent favourite, Obadée, and Tupia: they brought us a hog and fome bread-fruit, in return for which we gave her a hatchet. We had now afforded our Indian friends a new and interefting object of curiofity, our forge, which having been fet up fome time, was almoft conftantly at work. It was now common for them to bring pieces of iron, which we fuppofed they muft have got from the Dolphin, to be made into tools of various kinds; and as

I was very defirous to gratify them, they were indulged, except when the fmith's time was too precious to be fpared. Oberea having received her hatchet, produced as much old iron as would have made another, with a requeft that another might be made of it : in this, however, I could not gratify her, upon which the brought out a broken ax, and defired it might be mended; I was glad of an opportunity to compromife the difference between us: her ax was mended, and fhe appeared to be content. They went away at night, and took with them the canoe, which had been a confiderable time at the point, but promifed to return in three days.

On the roth, I put fome feeds of melons and other plants wednef. so. into a fpot of ground which had been turned up for the purpofe; they had all been fealed up by the perfon of whom they were bought, in fmall bottles with rofin; but none of them came up except muftard; even the cucumbers and melons failed, and Mr. Banks is of opinion that they were fpoiled by the total exclufion of frefh air.

This day we learnt the Indian name of the ifland, which is Otaheite, and by that name I fhall hereafter diftinguifh it : but after great pains taken we found it utterly impollible to teach the Indians to pronounce our names; we had, therefore, new names, confifting of fuch founds as they produced in the attempt. They called me Toote; Mr. Hicks, Hete; Molineux they renounced in abfolute defpair, and called the Mafter Boba, from his Chriftian name Robert; Mr. Gore was Toarro; Dr. Solander, Torano; and Mr. Banks, Tapane; Mr. Green, Eteree; Mr. Parkinfon, Patini; Mr. Sporing, Polini; Peterfgill, Petrodero; and in this manner they had now formed names for almof every man in the fhip: in fome, however, it was not eafy to find any traces of the original,

17t9. and they were perhaps not mere arbitrary founds formed upon the occafion, but fignificant words in their own language. Monkhoufe, the Midfhipman, who commanded the party that killed the man for fealing the mufket, they called Matte ; not merely by an attempt to imitate in found the firft fyllable of Monkhoufe, but becaufe Matte fignifies dead; and this probably might be the cafe with others.

## C H A P. XII.

Some Ladies vifit the Fort with very uncommon Ceremonies: The Indians attend Divine Service, and in the Evening exbibit a moft extraordinary Spectacle: Tubourai Temaide falls into Temptation.

Friday 12.

FRIDAY, the 12 th of May, was diftinguifhed by a vifit from fome ladies whom we had never feen before, and who introduced themfelves with fome very fingular ceremonies. Mr. Banks was trading in his boat at the gate of the fort as ufual, in company with Tootahah, who had that morning paid him a vifit, and fome other of the natives; between nine and ten o'clock, a double canoe came to the landing-place, under the awning of which fat a man and two women: the Indians that were about him made figns that he fhould go out to meet them, which he hafted to do; but by the time he could get out of the boat, they had advanced within ten yards of him: they then flopped, and made figns that he fhould do fo too, laying down about a dozen young plantain trees, and fome other fmall plants: he complied, and the people having made a lane between
them, the man, who appeared to be a fervant, brought them to Mr. Banks by one of each at a time, paffing and repaffing fix times, and always pronouncing a fhort fentence when he
1769.
b.ay.

Friday 12. delivered them. Tupia, who ftood by Mr. Banks, acted as his mafter of the ceremonies, and receiving the branches as they were brought, laid them down in the boat. When this was done, another man brought a large bundle of cloth, which having opened, he fpread piece by piece upon the ground, in the fpace between Mr. Banks and his vifitors; there were nine pieces, and having laid three pieces one upon another, the foremof of the women, who feemed to be the principal, and who was called Oorattooa, ftepped upon them, and taking up her garments all round her to the waift, turned about, with great compofure and deliberation, and with an air of perfect innocence and fimplicity, three times; when this was done, fhe dropped the veil, and ftepping off the cloth, three more pieces were laid on, and the repeated the ceremony, then ftepping off as before; the laft three were laid on, and the ceremony was repeated in the fame manner the third time. Immediately after this the cloth was rolled up, and given to Mr. Banks, as a prefent from the lady, who, with her friend, came up and faluted him. He made fuch prefents to them both as he thought would be moft acceptable, and after having faid about an hour they went away. In the evening, the Gentlemen at the fort had a vifit from Oberea, and her favourite female attendant, whofe name was Otheothea, an agrecable girl, whom they were the more pleafed to fee, becaufe, having been fome days abfent, it had been reported that fhe was either fick or dead.

On the 13th, the market being over about ten o'clock, Mr. Banks walked into the woods with his gun, as he generally did, for the benefit of the flade in the heat of the day: as he
1769. was returning back, he met Tubourai Tamaide, near his occafional dwelling, and fopping to fpend a little time with him, he fuddenly took the gun out of Mr. Banks's hand, cocked it, and, holding it up in the air, drew the trigger: fortunately for him, it flafhed in the pan: Mr. Banks immediately took it from him, not a little furprifed how he had acquired fufficient knowlege of a gun to difcharge it, and reproved him with great feverity for what he had done. As it was of infinite importance to keep the Indians totally ignorant of the management of fire-arms, he had taken every opportunity of intimating that they could never offend hin fo highly as by even touching his piece; it was now proper to enforce this prohibition, and he therefore added threats to lis reproof: the Indian bore all patiently; but the moment Mr. Banks croffed the river, he fet off with all his family and furniture for his houfe at Eparre. This being quickly known from the Indians at the fort, and great inconvenience being apprehended from the difpleafure of this man, who upon all occafions had been particularly ufeful, Mr. Banks determined to follow him without delay, and folicit his return: he fet out the fame evening, accompanied by Mr. Mollineux, and found him fitting in the middle of a large circle of people, to whom he had probably related what had happened, and his fears of the confequences; he was himfelf the very picture of grief and dejection, and the fame paffions were frongly marked in the countenances of all the people that furrounded him. When Mr. Banks and Mr. Mollineux went into the circle, one of the women expreffed her trouble, as Terapo had done upon another occafion, and fruck a fhark's tooth into her head feveral times, till it was covered with blood. Mr. Banks loft notime in putting an end to this univerfal diftrefs; he affured the Chief, that every thing which had paffed flould be forgotten, that there was not

## ROUND THE WORLD.

the leaft animofity remaining on one fide, nor any thing to be feared on the other. The Chief was foon foothed into confidence and complacency, a double canoe was ordered to be got ready, they all returned together to the fort before fupper, and as a pledge of perfect reconciliation, both he and his wife flept all night in Mr. Banks's tent : their prefence, however, was no palladium ; for, between cleven and twelve o'clock, one of the natives attempted to get into the fort by fealing the walls, with a defign, no doubt, to fteal whatever he fhould happen to find; he was difcovered by the centinel, who happily did not fire, and he ran away much fafter than any of our people could follow him. The iron, and iron-tools, which were in continual ufe at the armourcr's forge, that was fet up within the works, were temptations to theft which none of thefe people could withftand.

On the 14th, which was Sunday, I directed that Divine Sunday 140 Service fhould be performed at the fort: we were defirous that fome of the principal Indians fhould be prefent, but when the hour came, moft of them were returned home. Mr. Banks, however, croffed the river, and brought back Tubourai Tamaide and his wife Tomio, hoping that it would give occafion to fome enquiries on their part, and fome inftruction on ours: having feated them, he placed himfelf between them, and during the whole fervice, they very attentively obferved his behaviour, and very exactly imitated it; ftanding, fitting, or kneeling, as they faw him do: they were confcious that we were employed about fomewhat ferious and important, as appeared by their calling to the Indians without the fort to be filent; yet when the fervice was over, neither of them afked any queftions, nor would they attend to any attempt that was made to explain what had been done.

Such were our Matins; our Indians thought fit to perform Vefpers of a very different kind. A young man, near fix feet high, performed the rites of Venus with a little girl about eleven or twelve years of age, before feveral of our people, and a great number of the natives, without the leaft fenfe of its being indecent or improper, but, as appeared, in perfect conformity to the cuftom of the place. Among the fpectators were feveral women of fuperior rank, particularly Oberea, who may properly be faid to have affifted at the ceremony; for they gave inftructions to the girl how to perform her part, which, young as the was, fhe did not feem much to ftand in need of.

This incident is not mentioned as an object of idle curiofity, but as it deferves confideration in determining a queftion which has been long debated in philofopky; Whether the fiame attending certain actions, which are allowed on all fides to be in themfelves innocent, is implanted in Nam ture, or fuperinduced by cuftom? If it has its origin in cuftom, it will, perhaps, be found difficult to trace that cuftom, however general, to its fource; if in inftinct, it will be equally difficult to difcover from what caufe it is fubdued or at leait over-ruled among thefe people, in whofe manners not the leaft trace of it is to $b c$ found.

Monday!。
On the $14^{\text {th }}$ and $15 t^{\text {th }}$, we had another opportunity of obferving the general knowlege which thefe people had of any defign that was formed among them. In the night between the i3th and i4th, one of the water-cafks was ftolen from the outfide of the fort: in the morning, there was not an Indian to be feen who did not know that it was gone; yet they appeared not to have been trufted, or not to have been worthy of truft; for they feemed all of them difpofed to give intelligence where it might be found. Mr. Banks
traced it to a part of the bay where he was told it had been put into a canoe, but as it was not of great confequence he did not complete the difcovery. When he returned, he was told by Tubourai Tamaide, that another cafk would be ftolen before the morning: how he came by this knowlege it is not eafy to imagine; that he was not a party in the defign is certain, for he came with his wife and his family to the place where the water cafks flood, and placing their beds near them, he faid he would himfelf be a pledge for their fafety, in defpight of the thief: of this, however, we would not admit; and making him underfand that a fentry would be placed to watch the cafks till the morning, he removed the beds into Mr. Banks's tent, where he and his family fpent the night, making figns to the fentry when he retired, that he fhould keep his eyes open. In the night this intelligence appeared to be true; about twelve o'clock the thief came, but difcovering that a watch had been fet, he went away without his booty.

Mr. Banks's confidence in Tubourai Tamaide had greatly increafed fince the affair of the knife, in confequence of which he was at length expofed to temptations which neither his integrity nor his honour was able to refift. They had withftood many allurements, but were at length enfnared by the fafcinating charms of a bafket of nails; thefe nails were much larger than any that had yet been brought into trade, and had, with perhaps fome degree of criminal negligence, been jeft in a corner of Mr. Banks's tent, to which the Chief had always free accefs. One of thefe nails Mr. Banks's fervant happened to fee in his poffeffion, upon his having inadvertently thrown back that part of his garment under which it was concealed. Mr. Banks being told of this, and knowing that no fuch thing had been given

[^1]
$\underbrace{\text { Mray }}$
Monday 15.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. him, either as a prefent or in barter, immediately examined the bafket, and difcovered, that out of feven nails five were miffing. He then, though not without great reluctance, charged him with the fact, which he immediately confeffed, and however he might fuffer, was probably not more hurt than his accufer. A demand was immediately made of reftitution; but this he declined, faying, that the nails were at Eparre: however, Mr. Banks appearing to be much in earneft, and ufing fome threatening figns, he thought fit to produce one of them. He was then taken to the fort, to receive fuch judgment as fhould be given againft him by the general voice.

After fome deliberation, thiat we might not appear to think too lightly of his offence, he was told, that if he would bing the other four nails to the fort, it flould be forgotten. To this condition lie agreed; but I am forry to fay he did not fulfil it. Inftead of fetching the nails, he removed with his family before night, and took all his furniture with him.

As our long-boat had appeared to be leaky, I thought it neceflary to examine her bottom, and, to my great furprize, found it fo much eaten by the worms, that it was neceffary to give her a new one; no fuch accident had happened to the Dolphin's boats, as I was informed by the officers on board, and therefore it was a misfortune that I did not expect: I feared that the pinnace alfo might be nearly in the fame condition; but, upon cxamining her, I had the fatisfaction to find that not a worm had totidfedther, though the was built of the fame wood, and had been as much in the water; the reafon of this difference I imagine to be, that the long-boat was paid with varnifh of pine, and the pinnace painted with white lead and oil; the bottoms of all boats therefore which are fent into this country fhould be painted
like that of the pinnace, and the fhips fhould be fupplied with a good fock, in order to give them a new coating when
1769. May. $\underbrace{\square}$ it fhall be found neceffary.

Having received repeated meffages from Tootahah, that if we would pay him a vifit he would acknowledge the favour by a prefent of four hogs, I fent Mr. Hicks, my Firft Lieutenant, to try if he could not procure the hogs upon eafier terms, with orders to fhow him every civility in his power. Mr. Hicks found that he was removed from Eparre to a place called Tettahah, five miles farther to the weftward. He was received with great cordiality; one hog was immediately produced, and he was told that the other three, which were at fome diftance, fhould be brought in the morning. Mr. Hicks readily confented to ftay; but the morning came without the hogs, and it not being convenient to flay longer, he returned in the evening, with the one that he had got.

On the 25th, Tubourai Tamaide and his wife Tomio made Thurday 25. their appearance at the tent, for the firf time fince he had been detected in ftealing the nails; he feemed to be under fome difcontent and apprehenfion, yet he did not think fit to purchafe our countenance and good-will by reftoring the four which he had fent away. As Mr. Banks and the other Gentlemen treated him with a coolnefs and referve which did not at all tend to reflore his peace or good-humour, his flay was fhort, and his departure abrupt. Mr. Monkhoufe, the Surgeon, went the next morning in order to effect a reconciliation, by perfuading him to bring down the nails, but be could not fucceed.

## CHAP. XIII.

Another Vifit to Footabah, with various Adventures : Extraordinary Amufement of the Indians, with Remarks: upon it: Preparations to obferve the Iranfit of Venus, and what bappened in the mean time at the Fort.

速 N the 27 th, it was determined that we fhould pay our vifit to Tootahah, though we were not very confident satarday 27. that we fhould receive the hogs for our pains. I therefore' fet out early in the morning, with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, and three others, in the pinnace. He was now removed: from Tettahah, where Mr. Hicks had feen him, to a place called Атаноurou, about fix miles farther, and as we could not go above half way thither in the boat, it was almoft evening before we arrived: we found him in his ufual ftate; fitting under a tree, with a great crowd about him: We made our prefents in due form, confifting of a yellow ftuff petticoat, and fome other trifling articles, which were gracioufly received; a hog was immediately ordered to be killed: and dreffed for fupper, with a promife of more in the morning: however, as we were lefs defirous of feafting upon ourjourney than of carrying back with us provifions, which would be more welcome at the fort, we procured a reprieve: for the hog, and fupped upon the fruits of the country. As. night now came on, and the place was crowded with many more than the houfes and canoes would contain; there being; Oberea with her attendants, and many other travellers whom: we knew, we began to look out for lodgings. Our party: confifted:
confifted of fix: Mr. Banks thought himfelf fortunate in being offered a place by Oberea in her canoe, and wifhing his friends a good night, took his leave. He went to reft early, according to the cuftom of the country, and taking off his clothes, as was his conftant practice, the nights being hot, Oberea kindly infifted upon taking them into her own cuftody, for otherwife fhe faid they would certainly be ftolen. Mr. Banks having fuch a fafeguard, refigned himfelf to fleep with all imaginable tranquillity: but awaking about eleven o'clock, and wanting to get up, he fearched for his clothes where he had feen them depofited by Oberea when he lay down to fleep, and foon perceived that they were miffing. He immediately awakened Oberea, who ftarting up, and hearing his complaint, ordered lights, and prepared in great hafte to recover what he had loft: Tootahah himfelf flept in: the next canoe, and being foon alarmed, he came to them and fet out with Oberea in fearch of the thief: Mr. Banks was not in a condition to go with them, for of his apparel fcarce any thing was left him but his breeches; his coat, and his waiftcoat, with his piftols, powder-horn, and many other things that were in the pockets, were gone. In about half an hour his two noble friends returned, but without having. obtained any intelligence of his clothes or of the thief. At firft he began to be alarmed, his mufquet had not indeed. been taken away, but he had neglected to load it; where I and Dr. Solander had difpofed of ourfelves he did not know; and therefore, whatever might happen, he could not have recourfe to us for affiftance. He thought it beft, however, to exprefs neither fear nor fufpicion of thofe about him, and giving his mufquet to Tupia, who had been waked in the confufion and ftood by him, with a charge not to fuffer it to be ftolen, he betook himfelf again to reft, declaring himfelf perfectly fatisfied with the pains that Tootahah and Oberea
1769.

May. $\underbrace{\text { May. }}_{\text {Eaturday } 27 \text {. }}$
had taken to recover his things, though they had not been fuccefsful. As it cannot be fuppofed that in fuch a fituation his fleep was very found, he foon after heard mufic, and faw lights at a little diftance on thore: this was a concert or affembly, which they call a Heiva, a common name for every public exhibition; and as it would neceffarily bring many people together, and there was a chance of my being among them with his other friends, he rofe, and made the beft of his way towards it: he was foon led by the lights and the found to the hut where I lay, with three other Gentlemen of our party; and eafily diftinguifhing us from the reft, he made up to us more than half naked, and told us his melancholy ftory. We gave him fuch comfort as the unfortunate gencrally give to each other, by telling him that we were fellow-fufferers; I fhowed him that I was myfelf without ftockings, they having been ftolen from under my head, though I was fure I had never been afleep, and each of my affociates convinced him, by his appearance, that he had loft a jacket. We determined, however, to hear out the concert, however deficient we might appear in our drefs; it confifted of three drums, four flutes, and feveral voices: when this entertainment, which lafted about an hour, was over, we retired again to our fleeping-places; having agreed, that nothing could be done toward the recovery of our things till the morning.

We rofe at day-break, according to the cuftom of the country ; the firf man that Mr. Banks faw was Tupia, faithfully attending with his mufquet; and foon after, Oberea brought him fome of her country clothes, as a fuccedaneum for his own, fo that when he came to us he made a moft motley appearance, half Indian and half Englifh. Our party foon got together, except Dr. Solander, whofe quarters we did not know, and who had not affifted at the concert : in a

## ROUND THE WORLD.

fhoit time Tootahah made his appearance, and we preffed him to recover our clothes; but neither he nor Oberea could be perfuaded to take any meafure for that purpofe, fo that we began to fufpect. that they had been parties in the theft. About eight o'clock, we were joined by Dr. Solander, who had fallen into honefter liands, at a houfe about a mile diftant, and had loft nothing.

Having given up all hope of recovering our clothes, which indeed were never afterwards heard of, we fpent all the morning in foliciting the hogs which we had been promifed; but in this we had no better fuccefs: we therefore, in no very good'humour, fet out for the boat about twelve o'clock, with only that which we had redeemed from the butcher and the cook the night before.

As we were returning to the boat, however, we were entertained with a fight that in fome meafure compenfated for our fatigue and difappointment. In our way we came to one of the few places where accefs to the ifland is not guarded by a reef, and, confequently, a high furf breaks upon the fhore; a more dreadful one incleed I had feldom feen; it was impoffible for any European boat to have lived in it; and if the beft fwimmer in Europe had, by any accident, been expofed to its fury, I am confident that he would not have been able to preferve himfelf from drowning, efpecially as the fhore was covered with pebbles and large fones; yet, in the midft of thefe breakers, were ten or twelve Indians fwimming for their amufement: whenever a furf broke near them, they dived under it, and, to all appearance with infinite facility, rofe again on the other fide. This diverfion was greatly improved by the ftern of an old canoe, which they happened to find upon the fpot; they took this before them, and fwam ont with it as far as the cutermoft-breach, then two or three.
1769. of them getting into it, and turning the fquare end to the breaking wave, were driven in towards the fhore with incredible rapidity, fometimes almoft to the beach; but generally the wave broke over them before they got half way, in which cafe they dived, and rofe on the other fide with the canoe in their hands: they then fwam out with it again, and were again driven back, juft as our holiday youth climb the hill in Greenwich park for the pleafure of rolling down it. At this wonderful fcene we food gazing for more than half an hour, during which time none of the fwimmers attempted to come on fhore, but feemed to enjoy their fport in the higheft degree; we then proceeded in our journey, and late in the evening got back to the fort.

Upon this occafion it may be obferved, that human nature is endued with powers which are only accidentally exerted to the utmoft ; and that all men are capable of what no man attains, except he is ftimulated to the effort by fome uncommon circumftances or fituation. Thefe Indians effected what to us appeared to be fupernatural, merely by the application of fuch powers as they poffeffed in common with us, and all other men who have no particular infirmity or defect. The truth of the obfervation is alfo manifeft from more familiar inflances. The rope-dancer and balance-mafter owe their art, not to any peculiar liberality of Nature, but to an accidental improvement of her common gifts; and though equal diligence and application would not always produce equal excellence in thefe, any more than in other arts; yet there is no doubt but that a certain degree of proficiency in them might be univerfally attained. Another proof of the exiftence of abilities in mankind, that are almof univerfally dormant, is furnifhed by the attainments of blind men. It cannot be fuppofed that the lofs of one fenfe, like the amputation
putation of a branch from a tree, gives new vigour to thofe that remain. Every man's hearing and touch, therefore, are capable of the nice diftinctions which aftonifh us in thofe that have loft their fight, and if they do not give the fame intelligence to the mind, it is merely becaufe the fame intelligence is not required of them : he that can fee may do from choice what the blind do by neceffity, and by the fame diligent attention to the other fenfes, may receive the fame notices from them; let it therefore be remembered as an encouragement to perfevering diligence, and a principle of general ufe to mankind, that he who does all he can, will ever effect much more than is generally thought to be poffible.

Among other Indians that had vifited us, there were fome from a neighbouring ifland which they called Eimeo orImao, the fame to which Captain Wallis had given the name of the Duke of York's ifland, and they gave us an account of no lefs than two and twenty iflands that lay in the neighbourhood of Otaheite.

As the day of obfervation now approached, I determined, in confequence of fome hints which had been given me by Lord Morton, to fend out two parties to obferve the tranfit from other fituations; hoping, that if we fhould fail at Otaheite, they might have better fuccefs. We were, therefore, now bufily employed in preparing our inftruments, and inftructing fuch Gentlemen in the ufe of them as I intended to fend out.

On Thurfday the ift of June, the Saturday following being the day of the Tranfit, I difpatched Mr. Gore in the longboat to Imao, with Mr. Monkhoufe and Mr. Sporing, a Gentleman belonging to Mr. Banks, Mr. Green having furnifhed them with proper inftruments. Mr. Banks himfelf thought Vol. II.

Junc. Thurfday io
${ }^{17669 .}$ fit to go upon this expedition, and feveral natives, particu-


Thurfday I. Iarly Tubourai Tamaide and Tomio, were alfo of the party. Very early on the Friday morning, I fent Mr. Hicks, with Mr. Clerk and Mr. Peterfgill, the Mafter's Mates, and Mr. Saunders, one of the Midfhipmen, in the pinnace to the eaftward, with orders to fix on fome convenient fpot, at a diftance from our principal obfervatory, where they alfo might employ the inftruments with which they had been furnifhed for the fame purpofe.

The long-boat not having been got ready till Thurfday in the afternoon, though all poffible expedition was ufed to fit her out ; the people on board, after having rowed moft part of the night, brought her to a grappling juft under the land
Friday 2, of Imao. Soon after day-break, they faw an Indian canoe, which they hailed, and the people on board fhewed them an inlet through the reef into which they pulled, and foon fixed upon a coral rock, which rofe out of the water about one hundred and fifty yards from the fhore, as a proper fituation for their obfervatory: it was about eighty yards long and twenty broad, and in the middle of it was a bed of white fand, large enough for the tents to ftand upon. Mr. Gore and his affiftants immediately began to fet them up, and make other neceffary preparations for the important bufinefs of the next day. While this was doing, Mr. Banks, with the Indians of Otaheite, and the people whom they had met in the canoe, went afhore upon the main ifland, to buy provifions; of which he procured a fufficient fupply before night. When he returned to the rock he found the obfervatory in order, and the telefcopes all fixed and tried. The evening was very fine, yet their folicitude did not permit them to take much reft in the night: one or other of them was up every half hour, who fatisfied the impatience of the reft by reporting
the changes of the flky; now encouraging their lope by telling them that it was clear, and now alarming their fears by
${ }^{1769}$ June. $\underbrace{\text { Jane. }}$ an account that it was hazey.
At day-break they got up, and had the fatisfaction to fee Saturday ${ }_{3}$. the fun rife, without a cloud. Mr. Banks then, wifhing the obfervers, Mr. Gore and Mr. Monkhoufe, fuccefs, repaired again to the ifland, that he might examine its produce, and get a frefh fupply of provifions: he began by trading with the natives, for which purpofe he took his ftation under a tree; and to keep them from preffing upon him in a crowd, he drew a circle round him, which he fuffered none of them to enter.

About eight o'clock, he faw two canoes coming towards the place, and was given to underfand by the people about him, that they belonged to Tarrao, the King of the illand, who was coming to make him a vifit. As foon as the canoes came near the fhore, the people made a lane from the beach to the trading-place, and his Majefty landed, with his fifter, whofe name was Nuna; as they advanced towards the tree where Mr . Banks ftood, he went out to meet them, and, with great formality, introduced them into the circle from which the other natives had been excluded. As it is the cuftom of thefe people to fit during all their conferences, Mr. Banks unwrapped a kind of Turban of Indian cloth, which he wore upon his head inftead of a hat, and fpreading it upon the ground, they all fat down upon it together. The royal prefent was then brought, which confifted of a hog and a dog, fome bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other articles of the like kind. Mr. Banks then difpatched a canoe to the obfervatory for his prefent, and the meffengers foon returned with an ailze, a fhirt, and fome beads, which were prefented to his Majefty, and received with great fatisfaction.
x 76 g. By this time, Tubourai Tamaide and Tomio joined them, from the obfervatory. Tomio faid, that fhe was related to Tarrao, and brought him a prefent of a long nail, at the fame time complimenting Nuna with a fhirt.

The firf internal contact of the planet with the fun being over, Mr. Banks returned to the obfervatory, taking Tarrao, Nuna, and fome of their principal attendants, among whom were three very handfome young women, with him: he fhowed them the planet upon the fun, and endeavoured to make them underftand that he and his companions had come from their own country on purpofe to fee it. Soon after, Mr. Banks returned with them to the ifland, where he fpent the reft of the day in examining its produce, which he found to be much the fame with that of Otaheite. The people whom he faw there alfo exactly refembled the inhabitants of that illand, and many of them were perfons whom he had feen upon it; fo that all thofe whom he had dealt with, knew of what his trading articles confifted, and the value they bore.
The next morning, having flruck the tents, they fet out on their return, and arrived at the fort before night.
The obfervation was made with equal fuccefs by the perfons whom I had fent to the eaftward, and at the fort, there not being a cloud in the fky from the rifing to the fetting of the fun, the whole paffage of the planer Venus over the fun's difk was obferved with great advantage by Mr. Green, Dr. Solander, and myfelf: Mr. Green's telefcope and mine were of the fame magnifying power, but that of Dr. Solander was greater. We all faw an atmotfphere or dufky cloud round the body of the planet, which very much difturbed the times of contact, efpecially of the internal ones; and we differed from each other in our accounts of the times of the

## ROUND THE WORLD.

contacts much more than might have been expected. According to Mr. Green,
1769. June. Hours. Min. Sec.
The firft external contact, or firf appearance of Venus
on the Sun, was - $\quad$ - $\quad$ - $\left.\quad-9 \begin{array}{lllll} & 25 & 42\end{array}\right\}$
The firft internal contact, or total immerfion, was - 9444$\}$ 気:
The fecond internal contact, or beginning of the

The latitude of the obfervatory was found to be $17^{\circ} 29^{\prime} 15^{\prime \prime}$; and the longitude $149^{\circ} 32^{\prime} 30^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{VV}$. of Greenwich. A more particular account will appear by the tables, for which the reader is referred to the Tranfactions of the Royal Society, vol. lxi. part 2. page 397 \& feq. where they are illuftrated by a cut.

But if we had reafon to congratulate ourfelves upon the fuccefs of our obfervation, we had fcarce lefs caufe to regret the diligence with which that time had been improved by fome of our people to another purpofe. While the attention of the officers was engroffed by the Tranfit of Venus, fome of the fhip's company broke into one of the fore-rooms, and ftole a quantity of fpike nails, amounting to no lefs than one hundred weight: this was a matter of public and ferious concern; for thefe nails, if circulated by the people among the Indians, would do us irreparable injury, by reducing the value of iron, our flaple commodity. One of the thieves was detected, but only feven nails were found in his cuftody. He was punifhed with two dozen lafhes, but would impeach none of his accomplices.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

## C H A P. XIV.

The Ceremonies of an Indian Funeral particularly defcribed: General Objervations on the Subject: A CbaraEZer found annong the Indians to which the Ancients paid great Veneration : $A$ Robbery at the Fort, and its Confequences; with a Specimen of Indian Cookery, and various Incidents.
1769.
1 June. $\underbrace{\text { ² }}$ Monday 5.

0N the 5 th, we kept his Majefty's birth-day; for though it is the 4 th, we were unwilling to celebrate it during the abfence of the two parties who had been fent out to obferve the Tranfit. We had feveral of the Indian Chiefs at our entertainment, who drank his Majefty's health by the name of Kihiargo, which was the neareft imitation they could produce of King George.
About this time died an old woman of fome rank, who was related to Tomio, which gave us an opportunity to fee how they difpofed of the body, and confirmed us in our opinion that thefe people, contrary to the prefent cuftom of all other nations now known, never bury their dead. In the middle of a fmall fquare, neatly railed in with bamboo, the awning of a canoe was raifed upon two pofts, and under this the body was depofited upon fuch a frame as has before been defcribed: it was covered with fine cloth, and near it was placed bread-fruit, fifh, and other provifions: we fuppofed that the food was placed there for the fpirit of the deceafed, and confequently, that thefe Indians had fome confufed notion of a feparate flate; but upon our applying for further
further information to Tubourai Tamaide, he told us, that the food was placed there as an offering to their gods. They do not, however, fuppofe, that the gods eat, any more than
 the Jews fuppofed that Jehovah could dwell in a houfe: the offering is made here upon the fame principle as the Temple was built at Jerufalem, as an expreffion of reverence and gratitude, and a folicitation of the more immediate prefence of the Deity. In the front of the area was a kind of flile, where the relations of the deceafed flood to pay the tribute of their forrow; and under the awning were innumerable fmall pieces of cloth, on which the tears and blood of the mourners had been fhed; for in their paroxyfms of grief it is a univerfal cuftom to wound themfelves with the fhark's tooth. Within a few yards two occafional houfes were fet up, in one of which fome relations of the deceafed conftantly refided, and in the other the chief mourner, who is always a man, and who keeps there a very fingular drefs in which a ceremony is performed that will be defcribed in its turn. Near the place where the dead are thus fet up to rot, the bones are afterwards buried.

What can have introduced among thefe people the cuftom of expofing their dead above ground, till the flefh is confumed by putrefaction, and then burying the bones, it is perhaps impoffible to guefs; but it is remarkable, that Elian and Apollonius Rhodius impute a fimilar practice to the ancient inhabitants of Colchis, a country near Pontus in Afia, now called Mingrelia; except that among them this manner of difpofing of the dead did not extend to both fexes: the women they buried; but the men they wrapped in a hide, and hung up in the air by a chain. This practice among the Colchians is referred to a religious caufe. The principal objects of their worfhip were the Earth and the Air ; and it is fuppofed that, in confequence of fome fuperfitious notion,
ry69. they devoted their dead to both. Whether the natives of Otaheite had any notion of the fame kind we were never able certainly to determine ; but we foon difcovered, that the repofitories of their dead were alfo places of worfhip. Upon this occafion it may be obferved, that nothing can be more abfurd than the notion that the happinefs or mifery of a future life depends, in any degree, upon the difpofition of the body when the ftate of probation is paft ; yet that nothing is more general than a folicitude aboutit. However cheap we may hold any funereal rites which cuftom has not familiarized, or fuperftition rendered facred, moft men gravely deliberate how to prevent their body from being broken by the mattock and devoured by the worm, when it is no longer capable of fenfation; and purchafe a place for it in holy ground, when they believe the lot of its future exiftence to be irrevocably determined. So ftrong is the affociation of pleafing or painful ideas with certain opinions and actions which affect us while we live, that we involuntarily act as if it was equally certain that they would affect us in the fame manner when we are dead, though this is an opinion that nobody will maintain. Thus it happens, that the defire of preferving from reproach even the name that we leave behind us, or of procuring it honour, is one of the moft powerful principles of action, among the inhabitants of the moft fpeculative and enlightened nations. Pofthumous reputation, upon every principle, muft be acknowledged to have no influence upon the dead; yet the defire of obtaining and fecuring it, no force of reafon, no habits of thinking can fubdue, except in thofe whom habitual bafenefs and guilt have rendered indifferent to honour and fhame while they lived. This indeed feems to be among the happy imperfections of our nature, upon which the general good of fociety in a certain meafure depends; for as fome crimes are fuppofed to

## ROUND THE WORLD.

be prevented by hanging the body of the criminal in chains after he is dead, fo in confequence of the fame affociation of ideas, much good is procured to fociety, and much evil pre-
$\underbrace{\substack{1769 . \\ \text { June. }}}$
Monday 5. vented, by a defire of preventing difgrace or procuring honour to a name, when nothing but a name remains.

Perhaps no better ufe can be made of reading an account of manners altogether new, by which the follies and abfurdities of mankind are taken out of that particular connection in which habit has reconciled them to us, than to confider in how many inftances they are effentially the fame. When an honeft devotee of the Church of Rome reads, that there are Indians on the banks of the Ganges, who believe that they fhall fecure the happinefs of a future ftate by dying with a cow's tail in their hands, he laughs at their folly and fuperftition; and if thefe Indians were to be told, that there are people upon the continent of Europe, who imagine that they fhall derive the fame advantage from dying with the flipper of a St. Francis upon their foot, they would laugh in their turn. But if, when the Indian heard the account of the Catholic, and the Catholic that of the Indian, each was to reflect, that there was no difference between the abfurdity of the flipper and of the tail; but that the veil of prejudice and cuftom, which covered it in their own cafe, was withdrawn in the other, they would turn their knowlege to a profitable purpofe.

Having obferved that bread-fruit had for fome days been brought in lefs quantities than ufual, we enquired the reafon; and were told, that there being a great how of fruit upon the trees, they had been thinned all at once, in order to make a kind of four pafte, which the natives call Mabie, and which, in confequence of laving undergone a fermentation, will keep a confiderable time, and fupply them with food when no ripe fruit is to be had.

Vol. H .

## IIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. On the ioth, the ceremony was to be performed, in honour
 Saturday 10. of the old woman whofe fepulchral tabernacle has juft been defcribed, by the chief mourner; and Nir. Banks had fo great a curiofity to fee all the myleries of the folemnity, that he determined to take a part in it, being told, that he could be prefent upon no other condition. In the evening, therefore, he repaired to the place where the body lay, and was received by the daughter of the deceafed, and feveral other perfons, among whom was a boy about fourteen years old, who were to affit in the cercmony. Tubourai Tamaide was to be the principal mourner ; and his drefs, which was extremely fantaftical, though not unbecoming, is reprefented by a figure in one of the plates. Mr. Banks was ftripped of his European clothes, and a fmall piece of cloth being tied round his middle, his body was fmeared with charcoal and water, as low as the fhoulders, till it was as black as that of a negroe: the fame operation was performed upon feveral others, among whom were fome women, who were reduced to a. fate as near to nakednefs as limfelf; the boy was blacked all over, and then the proceffion fet forward. Tubourai Tamaide uttered fomething, which was fuppofed to be a prayer, near the body; and did the fame when he came up to his own houfe: when this was done, the proceflion was continued towards the fort, permiffion having been obtained to approach it upon this occafion. It is the cuftom of the Indians to fly from thefe proceffions with the utmof precipitation, fo that as foon as thofe who were about the fort, faw it at a diftance, they hid themfelves in the woods. It proceeded from the fort along the fhore, and put to flight another body of Indians, confifting of more than an hundred, every one hiding himfelf under the firft flelter that he could find: it then croffed the river, and entered the woods, paffing feveral houfes, all which were deferted, and not a fingle

## ROUND THE WORLD.

fingle Indian could be feen during the reft of the proceffion, which continued more than half an hour. The office that Mr. Banks performed, was called that of the Nineveh, of which there were two befides himfelf; and the natives having all difappeared, they came to the chief mourner, and faid imatata, there are no people, after which the company was difmiffed to wafh themfelves in the river, and put on their cuftomary apparel.

On the 12 th, complaint being made to me, by fome of the Monday 12 , natives, that two of the feamen had taken from them feveral bows and arrows, and fome frings of plaited hair, I examined the matter, and finding the charge well fupported, I punifhed each of the criminals with two dozen lafhes.

Their bows and arrows have not been mentioned before, nor were they often brought down to the fort: This day, however, Tubourai Tamaide brought down his, in confequence of a challenge which he had reccived from Mr. Gore. The Chief fuppofed it was to try who could fend the arrow fartheft ; Mr. Gore, who beft could hit a mark: and as Mr. Gore did not value himfelf upon, fhooting to a great diftance, nor the Chief upon hitting a mark, there was no trial of fkill between them. Tubourai Tamaide, however, to thew us what he could do, drew his bow, and fent an arrow, none of which are feathered, two liundred and feventy-four yards, which is fomething more than a feventh, and fomething lefs. than a fixth part of a milc. Their manner of fhooting is fomewhat fingular; they knecl down, and the moment the arrow is difcharged, drop the bow.

Mr. Banks, in his morning walk this day, met a number of the natives whom, upon enquiry, he found to be travelling muficians; and having learnt where they were tis be at night, we all repaired to the place. The band consifled
1769.
two flutes and three drums, and we found a great number of people affembled upon the occafion. The drummers accompanied the mufick with their voices, and, to our great furprize, we difcovered that we were generally the fubject of the fong. We did not expect to have found among theuncivilized inhabitants of this fequeftered fpot, a character, which has been the fubject of fuch praife and veneration where genius and knowlege have been moft confpicuous; yet thefe were the bards or minftrels of Otaheite. Their fong was unpremeditated, and accompanied with mufick; they were continually going about from place to place, and they were rewarded by the mafter of the houfe, and the audience, with fuch things as one wanted and the other could fpare.
Wednef. 14. On the $1_{4}$ th, we were brought into new difficulties and inconvenience by another robbery at the fort. In the middle of the night, one of the natives contrived to fteal an iron coal-rake, that was made ufe of for the oven. It happened to be fet up againft the infide of the wall, fo that the top of the handle was vifible from without; and we were informed. that the thief, who had been feen lurking there in the evening, came fecretly about three o'clock in the morning, and, watching his opportunity when the centinel's back was turned, very dexteroufly laid hold of it with a long crooked flick, and drew it over the wall. I thought it of fome confequence, if poffible, to put an end to thefe practices at once, by doing fomething that flould make it the common intereft of the natives themfelves, to prevent them. I had given frict orders that they fhould not be fired upon, even when detected in thefe attempts, for which I had many reafons: the common centinels were by no means fit to be entrufted with a power of life and death, to be exerted whenever they fhould think fit, and I had already experienced that they
were ready to take away the lives that were in their power, upon the flighteft occafion ; neither indeed did I think that the thefts which thefe people committed againft us, were, in them, crimes worthy of death: that thicves are hanged in England, I thought no reafon why they fhould be fhot in Otaheite ; becaufe, with refpect to the natives, it would have been an execution by a law ex poft facto: they had no fuch law among themfelves, and it did not appear to me that we had any right to make fuch a law for them. That they fhould abftain from theft, or be punifhed with death, was not one of the conditions under which they claimed the advantages of civil fociety, as it is among us; and as I was not willing to expofe them to fire-arms, loaded with fhot, neither could I perfectly approve of firing only with powder: at firt, indced, the noife and the fmoke would alarm them, but when they found that no mifchief followed, they would be led to defpife the weapons themfelves, and proceed to infults, which would make it neceffary to put them to the teft, and from which they would be deterred by the very fight of a gun, if it was never ufed but with effeet. At this time, an accident furnifhed me with what I thought a happy expedient. It happened that above twenty of their failing canoes were juft come in with a fupply of fifh: upon thefe I immediately feized, and bringing them into the river behind the fort, gave publick notice, that except the rake, and all the reft of the things which from time to time had been ftolen, were returned, the canoes fhould be burnt. This menace I ventured to publifh, though I had no defign to put it into execution, making no doubt but that it was well known in whofe poffeffion the flolen goods were, and that as reftitution was thus made a common caufe, they would all of them in a thort time be brought back. A lift of the things was made out, confifing principally of the rake, the mufquet which
17.9. had been taken from the marine when the Indian was fhot; the piftols which Mr. Banks loft with his clothes at Atahourou; a fword belonging to one of the petty officers, and the water cafk. About noon, the rake was reftored, and great folicitation was made for the releafe of the canoes; but Iftll Thurfay ${ }^{5}$. infifted upon my original condition. The next day came, and nothing farther was reftored, at which I was much furprifed, for the people were in the utmoft diftrefs for the fifh, which in a fhort time would be fooilt; I was, therefore, reduced to a difagreeable fituation, either of releafing the canoes, contrary to what I had folemnly and publickly declared, or to detain them, to the great injury of thofe who were innocent, without anfwering any good purpofe to ourfelves: as a temporary expedient, I permitted them to take the fifh; but ftill detained the canoes. This very licence, however, was productive of new confufion and injury; for, it not being eafy at once to diflinguifh to what particular perfons the feveral lots of fifl belonged, the canoes were plundered, under favour of this circumftance, by thofe who had no right to any part of their cargo. Moft preffing inftances were fill made that the canoes might be reftored, and I having now the greatef reafon to believe, either that the things for which I detained them were not in the ifland, or that thofe who fuffered by their detention had not fufficient influence over the thieves to prevail upon them to relinquif their booty, determined at length to give them up, not a little mortified at the bad fuccefs of my project.

Another accident alfo about this time was, notwithfanding all our caution, very near embroiling us with the Indians. I fent the boat on fhore with an officer to get ballaftfor the fhip, and not immediately finding fones convenient for the purpore, he began to pull down fome part of an inclofure where they depofited the bones of their dead: this
the Indians violently oppofed, and a meffenger came down to the tents to acquaint the officers that they would not fuffer it. Mr. Banks immediately repaired to the place, and an amicable end was foon put to the difpute, by fending the boat's crew to the river, where flones enough were to be gathered without a poffibility of giving offence. It is very remarkable, that thefe Indians appeared to be much more jealous of what was done to the dead than the living. This was the only meafure in which they ventured to oppofe us, and the only infult that was offered to any individual among us was upon a fimilar occafion. Mr. Monkhoufe happening one day to pull a flower from a tree which grew in one of their fepulchral inclofures, an Indian, whofe jealoufy had. probably been upon the watch, came fuddenly behind him, and ftruck him : Mr. Monkhoufe laid hold of him, but he was inftantly refcued by two more, who took hold of Mr. Monkhoufe's hair, and forced him to quit his hold of their companion, and then ran away without offering him any farther violence.

In the evening of the igth, while the canoes were ftill detained, we received a vifit from Oberea, which furprifed us not a little, as the brought with her none of the things that had been folen, and knew that the was fufpected of having fome of them in her cuftody. She faid indeed, that her favourite Obadee, whom the had beaten and difmiffed, had taken them away; but fhe feemed confcious, that fhe had no right to be believed: the difcovered the flrongeft figns of fear, yet the furmounted it with afonifhing refolution; and was very preffing to fleep with her attendants in Mr. Banks's tent. In this, however, fhe was not gratified; the affair of the jackets was too recent, and the tent. was befides filled with other people. No body elfe feemed willing to entertain.

## LIEUTENANT GOOK's VOYAGE

1769. Junc.
her, and fhe therefore, with great appearance of mortification and difappointment, fpent the night in her canoe.

The nest morning early, fhe returned to the fort, with her canoe and every thing that it contained, putting herfelf wholly into our power, with fomething like greatnefs of mind, which excited our wonder and admiration. As the moft effectual means to bring about a reconciliation, fhe prefented us with a hog, and feveral other things, among which was a dog. We had lately learnt, that thefe animals were efteemed by the Indians as more delicate food than their pork; and upon this occafion we determined to try the experiment: the dog, which was very fat, we configned over to Tupia, who undertook to perform the double office of butcher and cook. He killed him by holding his hands clofe over his mouth and nofe, an operation which continued above a quarter of an hour. While this was doing, a hole was made in the ground about a foot deep, in which a fire was kindled, and fome fimall ftones placed in layers alternately with the wood to heat; the dog was then finged, by holding him over the fire, andi, by fcraping him with a fhell, the hair taken off as clean as if he had been fealded in hot water: he was then cut up with the fame inftrument, and his entrails being taken out, were fent to the fea, where being carefully wafhed, they were put into cocoa-nut fhells, with what blood had come from the body: when the hole was fufficiently heated, the fire was taken out, and fome of the flones, which were not fo hot as to difcolour any thing that they touched, being placed at the bottom, were covered with green leaves: the dog, with the entrails, was then placed upon the leaves, and other leaves being laid upon them, the whole was covered with the reft of the hot flones, and the mouth of the hole clofe Copped with mould: in fomewhat lefs than four hours it
was again opened, and the dog taken out excellently baked, and we all agreed that he made a very good difh. The dogs which are here bred to be eaten, tafte no animal food, but are kept wholly upon bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, yams, and other vegetables of the like kind : all the flefh and fifh eaten by the inhabitants is dreffed in the fame way.

On the 2ift, we were vifited at the fort by a Chief, called wednef. 28. Oamo, whom we had never feen before, and who was treated by the natives with uncommon refpect ; he brought with him a boy about feven years old, and a young woman about fixteen: the boy was carried upon a man's back, which we confidered as a piece of ftate, for he was as well able to walk as any prefent. As foon as they were in fight, Oberea, and feveral other natives who were in the fort, went out to meet them, having firlt uncovered their heads and bodies as low as the waift: as they came on, the fame ceremony was performed by all the natives who were without the fort. Uncovering the body, therefore, is in this country probably a mark of refpect; and as all parts are here expofed with equal indifference, the ceremony of uncovering it from the waint downwards, which was performed by Oorattooa, might be nothing more than a different mode of compliment, adapted to perfons of a different rank. The Chief came into the tent, but no entreaty could prevail upon the young woman to follow him, though fhe feemed to refufe contrary to her inclination : the natives without were indeed all very folicitous to prevent her; fometimes, when her refolution feemed to fail, almof ufing force: the boy alfo they reftrained in the fame manner; but Dr. Solander happening to meet him at the gate, took him by the hand, and led him in before the people were aware of it: as foon, however, as thofe that were within faw him, they took care to have him fent out.

Vol. II.
X
There

Thefe circumftances having ftrongly excited our curiofitys. we enquired who they were, and were informed, that Oamo was the hufband of Oberea, though they had been a long time feparated by mutual confent; and that the young woman and the boy were their children. We learnt alfo, that the boy, whofe name was Terridiri, was heir apparent to the fovereignty of the ifland, and that his fifter was intended for his wife, the marriage being deferred only till he fhould arrive at a proper age. The fovereign at this time was a fon of WhappaI, whofe name was Outou, and who, as before has been obferved, was a minor. Whappai, Oamo, and Tootahah, were brothers: Whappai was the eldeft, and Oamo the fecond; fo that, Whappai having no child but Outou, Terridiri, the fon of his next brother Oamo, was heir to the fovereignty. It will, perhaps, feem ftrange that a boy fhould be fovereign during the life of his father ; but, according to thecuftom of the country, a child fucceeds to a father's title and authority as foon as it is born : a regent is then elected, and the father of the new fovereign is generally continued in his authority, under that title, till his child is of age; but, at this time, the choice had fallen upon Tootahah, the uncle, in confequence of his having diftinguifhed himfelf in a war. Oamo afked many queftions concerning England and its inhabitants, by which he appeared to have great fhrewdnefs and underfanding.

## CH A P. XV.

An Account of the Circumnavigation of the Ifand, and various Incidents that happened during the Expedition; with a Description of a Burying-place and Place of Wor/bip, called a Mora.

ON Monday the 26th, about three o'clock in the morning, I fer out in the pinnace, accompanied by Mr. Banks, to make the circuit of the ifland, with a view to


Monday 26. fletch out the coat and harbours. We took our route to the eaftward, and about eight in the forenoon we went on there, in a diftrict called Oahounee, which is governed by tho, a young Chief, whom we had often feed at the tents, and who favoured us with his company to breakfaft. Here alfo we found two other natives of our old acquaintance, Tituboalo and Mona, who carried us to their houfes, near which we law the body of the old woman, at whole funeral rites Mr. Banks had affifted, and which had been removed hither from the foot where it was firth depofited, this place having defended from her by inheritance to Mona, and it being neceffary on that account that it flould lie here. We then proceeded on foot, the boar attending within call, to the harbour in which Mr. Bougainville lay, called Ohidea, where the natives hewed us the ground upon which his people pitched their tent, and the brook at which they watered, though no trace of them remained, except the holes where the poles of the tent had been fixed, and a fall piece of potfheard, which Mr. Banks found in looking narrowly about the foot. We met, however, with Orette, a Chief

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. who was their principal friend, and whofe brother Outor-

This harbour lies on the weft fide of a great bay, under fhelter of a fmall ifland called Boourou, near which is another called TaAwirrii ; the breach in the reefs is here very large, but the fhelter for the fhips is not the beft.

Soon after we had examined this place, we took boat, and afked Tituboalo to go with us to the other fide of the bay; but he refufed, and advifed us not to go, for he faid the country there was inhabited by people who were not fubject to Tootahah, and who would kill both him and us: Upon receiving this intelligence, we did not, as may be imagined', relinquifh our enterprize; but we immediately loaded our pieces with ball: this was fo well underfood by Tituboalo as a precaution which rendered us formidable, that he now confented to be of our party.

Having rowed till it was dark, we reached a low neck of land, or ifthmus, at the bottom of the bay, that divides the ifland into two peninfulas, each of which is a diftrict or government wholly independent of the other. From PortRoyal, where the fhip was at anchor, the coaft trends E. byS. and E.S.E. ten miles, then S. by E. and S. eleven miles to the ifthmus. In the firft direction, the fhore is in general open to the fea; but in the laft it is covered by reefs of rocks, which form feveral good harbours, with fafe anchorage, in. $16,18,20$, and 24 fathom of water, with other conveniences. As we had not yet got into our enemy's country, we determined to fleep on fhore: we landed, and though we found but few houfes, we faw feveral double canoes whofe owners were well known to us, and who provided us with fupper and lodging ; of which Mr. Banks was indebted for his fhare

## ROUND THE WORLD.

fhare to Ooratooa, the lady who had paid him her compliments in fo fingular a manner at the fort.

In the morning, we looked about the country, and found Tuefday 27 . it to be a marfhy flat, about two miles over, acrofs which the natives haul their canoes to the correfponding bay on the other fide. We then prepared to continue our rout for what Tituboalo called the other kingdom; he faid that the name of it was Tiarrabou, or. Otaheite Ete; and that of the Chief who governed it, Waheatua: upon this occafion alfo, we learnt that the name of the peninfula where we had taken our ftation was Opoureonu, or Otaheite Nue. Our new affociate feemed to be now in better fpirits than he had been the day before; the people in Tiarrabou would not kill us, he faid, but he affured us that we fhould be able to procure no victuals among them; and indeed we had feen no brcad-fruit fince we fet out.

After rowing a few miles, we landed in a diftrict, which was the dominion of a Chief called Maraitata, the bury-ing-place of men; whofe father's name was Pahairedo, the ftealer of boats. Though there names feemed to fayour the account that had been given by Tituboalo, we foon found that it was not true. Both the father and the fon received us with the greateft civility, gave us provifions, and, after fome delay, fold us a very large hog for a hatchet. A crowd foon gathered round us, but we faw only two people that we knew; neither did we obferve a fingle bead or ornament among them that had come from our fhip, though we faw feveral things which had been brought from Europe. In one of the houfes lay two twelve-pound fhot, one of which was marked with the broad arrow of England, though the peoplefaid they had them from the fhips that lay in Bougainville's, harbour.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. We proceeded on foot till we came to the diftrict which
June. was immediately under the government of the principal Chief, or King of the peninfula, Waheatua. Waheatua had a fon, but whether, according to the cuftom of Opoureonu, he adminiftered the government as regent, or in his own right, is uncertain. This diftrict confifts of a large and fertile plain, watered by a river fo wide, that we were obliged to ferry over it in a canoe; our Indian train, however, chofe to fwim, and took to the water with the fame facility as a pack of hounds. In this place we faw no houfe that appeared to be inhabited, but the ruins of many, that had been very large. We proceeded along the fhore, which forms a bay, called Oaitipeha, and at laft we found the Chief fitting near fome pretty canoe awnings, under which, we fuppofed, he and his attendants flept. He was a thin old man, with a very white head and beard, and had with him a comely woman, about five and twenty years old, whofe name was Toudidde. We had often heard the name of this woman, and, from report and obfervation, we had reafon to think that fhe was the Oberea of this peninfula. From this place, between which and the ifthmus there are other harbours, formed by the reefs that lie along the flhore, where fhipping may lie in perfect fecurity, and from whence the land trends S.S.E. and S. to the S.E. part of the ifland, we were accompanied by Tearee, the fon of Waheatua, of whom we had purchafed a hog, and the country we paffed through appeared to be more cultivated than any we had feen in other parts of the ifland: the brooks were every where banked into narrow channels with flone, and the fhore had alfo a facing of flone, where it was wafhed by the fea. The houfes were neither large nor numerous, but the canoes that were hauled up along the fhore were almoft innumerable, and fuperior to any that we had feen before, both in fize and make;
make; they were longer, the fterns were higher, and the awnings were fupported by pillars. At almoft every point there was a fepulchral building, and there were many of them alfo in land. They were of the fame figure as thofe in Opoureonu, but they were cleaner and better kept, and decorated with many carved boards, which were fet upright, and on the top of which were various figures of birds and men: on one in particular, there was the reprefentation of a cock, which was painted red and yellow, to imitate the feathers of that animal, and rude images of men were, in fome of them, placed one upon the head of another. But in this part of the country, however fertile and cultivated, we did not fee a fingle bread-fruit; the trees were entirely bare, and the inhabitants feemed to fubfift principally upon nuts which are not unlike a chefnut, and which they call Abee.

When we had walked till we were weary, we called up the boat, but both our Indians, Tituboalo and Tuahow, were miffing: they had, it feems, ftayed behind at Waheatua's, cxpecting us to return thither, in confequence of a promife which had been extorted from us, and which we had it not in our power to fulfil.

Tearee, however, and another, embarked with us, and we proceeded till we came a-breaft of a fmall ifland called Otooareite; it being then dark, we determined to land, and our Indians conducted us to a place where they faid we might fleep: it was a deferted houfe, and near it was a little cove, in which the boat might lie with great fafety and convenience. We were, however, in want of provifions, having been very fparingly fupplied fince we fet out; and Mr. Banks immediately went into the woods to fee whether any could be procured. As it was dark, he met with no people, and could find but one houfe that was inhabited: a bread-
2769. June. Iverday 27.
fruit and a half, a few Ahees, and fome fire, were all that it afforded; upon which, with a duck or two, and a few curlieus, we made our fupper, which, if not fcanty, was difagrecable, by the want of bread, with which we had neglected to furnifh ourfelves, as we depended upon meeting with bread-fruit, and took up our lodging under the awning of a canoe belonging to Tearee, which followed us.

The next morning, after having fpent fome time in another fruitlefs attempt to procure a fupply of provifions, we proceeded round the fouth eaft point, part of which is not covered by any reef, but lies open to the fea; and here the hill rifes directly from the fhore. At the fouthermoft part of the ifland, the fhore is again covered by a reef, which forms a good harbour; and the land about it is very fertile. We made this rout partly on foot and partly in the boat: when we had walked about three miles, we arrived at a place where we faw feveral large canoes, and a number of people with them, whom we were agreeably furprifed to find were of our intimate acquaintance. Here, with much difficulty, we procured fome cocoa-nuts, and then embarked, taking with us Tuahow, one of the Indians who had waited for us at Waheatua's, and had returned the night before, long after it was dark.

When we came a-breaft of the fouth-eaft end of the ifland, we went afhore, by the advice of our Indian guide, who told us that the country was rich and good. The Chief, whofe name was Mathiabo, foon came down to us, but feemed to be a total ftranger both to us and to our trade: his fubjectis, however, brought us plenty of cocoa-nuts, and about twenty bread-fruit. The bread-fruit we bought at a very dear rate, but his excellency fold us a pig for a glafs bottle, which he preferred to every thing elfe that we could give
him. We found in his poffeffion a goofe and a turkey-cock, which, we were informed, had been left upon the ifland by the Dolphin: they were both enormoufly fat, and fo tame
1769. $\underbrace{\text { June. }}_{\text {Wednef. 23. }}$ that they followed the Indians, who were fond of them to escefs, wherever they went.

In a long houfe in this neighbourhood, we faw what was altogether new to us. At one end of it, faftened to a femicircular board, hung fifteen human jaw-bones; they appeared to be frefh, and there was not one of them that wanted a fingle tooth. A fight fo extraordinary, flrongly excited our curiofity, and we made many enquiries about it ; but at this time could get no information, for the people either could not, or would not underftand us.

When we left this place, the Chief, Mathiabo, defired leave to accompany us, which was readily granted. He continued with us the remainder of the day, and proved very ufeful, by piloting us over the fhoals. In the evening, we opened the bay on the north weft fide of the ifland, which anfwered to that on the fouth eaft, fo as at the ifthmus, or carryingplace, almoft to interfect the ifland, as I have obferved before ; and when we had coafted about two-thirds of it, we determined to go on fhore for the night. We faw a large houfe at fome diftance, which, Mathiabo informed us, belonged to one of his friends; and foon after feveral canoes came off to meet us, having on board fome very handfome women, who, by their behaviour, feemed to have been fent to entice us on flhore. As we had before refolved to take up our refidence here for the night, little invitation was neceffary. We found that the houfe belonged to the Chief of the diftrict, whofe name was Wiverou: he received us in a very friendly manner, and ordered his people to affift us in dreffing our provifion, of which we had now got a tolerable Vol. II.
1769. ftock. When our fupper was ready, we were conducted into that part of the houfe where Wiverou was fitting, in order to eat it ; Mathiabo fupped with us, and Wiverou calling for his fupper at the fame time, we eat our meal very fociably, and with great good-humour. When it was over, we began to enquire where we were to fleep, and a part of the houfe was fhewn us, of which we were told we might take poffeffion for that purpofe. We then fent for our cloaks, and Mr. Banks began to undrefs, as his cuftom was, and, with a precaution which he had been taught by the lofs of the jackets at Atahourou, fent his clothes aboard the boat, propofing to cover himfelf with a picce of Indian cloth. When Mathiabo perceived what was doing, he alfo pretended to want a cloak; and, as he had behaved very well, and done us fome fervice, a cloak was ordered for him. We lay down, and obferved that Mathiabo was not with us; but we fuppofed that he was gone to bathe, as the Indians always do before they flecp. We had not waited long, however, when an Indian, who was a ftranger to us, came and told Mr. Banks, that the cloak and Mathiabo had difappeared together. This. man had fo far gained our confidence, that we did not at firft believe the report; but it being foon after confirmed by Tuahow, our own Indian, we knew no time was to be lof. As it was impoffible for us to purfue the thief with any hope of fuccefs, without the affiflance of the people about us, Mr. Banks ftarted up, and telling our cafe, required them to recover the cloak; and to enforce his requifition, fhewed one of his pocket piftols, which he always kept about him. Upon the fight of the pifol, the whole company took the alarm, and, inftead of allifting to catch the thief, or recover what had been ftolen, began with great precipitation to leave the place; one of them, however, was feized, upon which the immediately offered to direct the chace: I fet out there-
fore with Mr. Banks, and though we ran all the way, the alarm laad got before us, for in about ten minutes we met a man bringing back the cloak, which the thief had relinquifhed in great terror; and as we did not then think fit to continue the purfuit, he made his efcape. When we returned, we found the houfe, in which there had been between two and three hundred people, entirely deferted. It being, however, foon known that we had no refentment againft any body but Mathiabo, the Chief Wiverou, our hoft, with his wife and many others, returned, and took up their lodging with us for the night. In this place, however, we were deftined to more confufion and trouble, for about five o'clock in the morning our fentry alarmed us, with an account that the boat was miffing: he had feen her, he faid, about half an hour before, at her grappling, which was not above fifty yards from the fhore; but upon hearing the found of oars, he had looked out again, and could fee nothing of her. At this account we flarted up greatly alarmed, and ran to the water fide: the morning was clear and ftar light, fo that we could fee to a confiderable diftance, but there was no appearance of the boat. Our fituation was now fuch as might juftify the moft terrifying apprehenfions; as it was a dead calm, and we could not therefore fuppofe her to have broken from her grappling, we had great reafon to fear that the Indians had attacked her, and finding the people aflcep, had fucceeded in their enterprize: we were but four, with only one mufquet and two pocket piftols, without a fpare ball or charge of powder for either. In this fate of anxiety and diftrefs we remained a confiderable time, expecting the Indians every moment to improve their advantage, when, to our unfpeakable fatisfaction, we faw the boat return, which 'had been driven from her grappling by the tide; a cir-
1769.

Thurfday 29. were impatient to leave the place, left fome other vexatious accident fhould befal us. It is fituated on the north fide of Tiarrabou, the fouth eaft peninfula, or divifion, of the ifland, and at the diftance of about five miles fouth eaft from the ifthmus, Having a large and commodious harbour, inferior to none in the ifland, about which the land is very rich in produce. Notwithftanding we had had little communication with this divifion, the inhabitants every where received us in a friendly manner; we found the whole of it fertile and populous, and, to all appearance, in a more flourifhing ftate than Opourconu, though it is not above one fourth part as large.

The next diftrict in which we landed, was the laft in Tim arrabou, and governed by a Chief, whofe name we under-ftood to be Omoe. Omoe was building a houfe, and being therefore very defirous of procuring a hatchet, he would have been glad to have purchafed one with any thing that he had in his poffeflion ; it happened, however, rather unfortunately for him and us, that we had not one haichet left in the boat. We offered to trade with nails, but he would not part with any thing in exchange for them; we therefore re-. imbarked, and put off our boat, but the Chief being unwilling to relinquifh all hope of obtaining fomething from us. that would be of ufe to him, embarked in a canoe, with his wife Whanno-ouda, and followed us. After fome time, we took them into the boat, and when we had rowed about a league, they defired we would put afhore: we immediately complied with his requeft, and found fome of his people

## ROUND THE WORLD.

who had brought down a very large hog. We were as unwilling to lofe the hog, as the Chief was to part with us, and it was indeed worth the beft axe we had in the fhip; we therefore hit upon an expedient, and told him, that if he would bring his hog to the fort at Matavar, the Indian name for Port Royal bay, he fhould have a large axe, and a nail into the bargain, for his trouble. To this propofal, after having confulted with his wife, he agreed, and gave us a large piece of his country cloth as a pledge that he would perform his, agreement, which, however, he never did.

At this place we faw a very fingular curiofity: it was the figure of a man, conftructed of bafket work, rudely made, but not ill defigned; it was fomething more than feven feet high, and rather too bulky in proportion to its height. The wicker fkeleton was completely covered with feathers, which were white where the fkin was to appear, and black in the parts which it is their cuftom to paint or ftain, and upon the head, where there was to be a reprefentation of hair: upon the head alfo were four protuberances, three in front and one behind, which we fhould have called horns, but which the Indians dignified with the name of Tate Ete, little men. The image was called Manioe, and was faid to be the only one of the kind in Otaheite. They attempted to give us an explanation of its ufe and defign, but we had not. then acquired enough of their language to underftand them. We learnt, however, afterwards, that it was a reprefentation. of Mauwe, one of their Eatuas, or gods of the fecond clafs.

After having fettled our affairs with. Omoe, we proceeded on our return, and foon reached Opourconu, the north-weft: peninfula. After rowing a few miles, we went on fhore again, but the only thing we faw worth notice; was a repofitory for the dead, uncommonly decorated; the pavement:
1769. was extremely neat, and upon it was raifed a pyramid, about five feet high, which was intirely covered with the fruits of two plants, peculiar to the country. Near the pyramid was a fmall image of fone, of very rude workmanfhip, and the firt inftance of carving in fone that we had feen among thefe people. They appeared to fet a high value upon it, for it was covered from the weather by a fhed, that had been erected on purpofe.

We proceeded in the boat, and paffed through the only harbour, on the fouth fide of Opoureonu, that is fit for fhipping. It is fituated about five miles to the weftward of the ifthmus, between two fmall iflands that lie near the fhore, and about a mile diftant from each other, and affords good anchorage in eleven and twelve fathom water. We were now not far from the diftrict called Paparra, which belonged to our friends Oamo and Oberea, where we propofed to fleep. We went on fhore about an hour before night, and found that they were both abfent, having left their habitations to pay us a vifit at Matavai : this, however, did not alter our purpofe, we took up our quarters at the houfe of Oberea, which, though fmall, was very neat, and at this time had no inhabitant but her father, who received us with looks that bid us welcome. Having taken poffeflion, we were willing to improve the little day-light that was left us, and therefore walked out to a point, upon which we had feen, at a diftance, trees that are here called Etoa, which generally diftinguifh the places where thefe people bury the bones of their dead: their name for fuch burying-grounds, which are alfo places of worfhip, is Morar. We were foon flruck with the fight of an enormous pile, which, we were told, was the Morai of Oamo and Oberea, and the principal piece of Indian architecture in the ifland. It was a pile of flone work, raifed pyramidically, upon an oblong bafe, or fquare,
two hundred and fixty-feven feet long, and eighty-feven wide. It was built like the fmall pyramidal mounts upon which we fometimes fix the pillar of a fun-dial, where each
1769.

June. Thurday 2g. fide is a flight of fteps; the fteps, however, at the fides, were broader than thofe at the ends, fo that it terminated not in a fquare of the fame figure with the bafe, but in a ridge, like the roof of a houfe: there were eleven of thefe fteps, each of which was four feet high, fo that the height of the pile was forty-four feet; each ftep was formed of one courfe of white coral ftone, which was neatly fquared and polifhed, the reft of the mafs, for there was no hollow within, confifted of round pebbles, which, from the regularity of their figure, feemed to have been wrought. Some of the coral ftones were very large; we meafured one of them, and found it three feet and an half by two feet and an half. The foundation was of rock ftones, which were alfo fquared; and one of them meafured four feet feven inches by two feet four. Such a fructure, raifed without the affiftance of iron tools to fhape the ftones, or mortar to join them, flruck us with aftonifhment: it feemed to be as compact and firm as it could have been made by any workman in Europe, except that the fteps, which range along its greateft length, are not perfectly ftrait, but fink in a kind of hollow in the middle, fo that the whole furface, from end to end, is not a right line, but a curve. The quarry ftones, as we faw no quarry in the neighbourhood, muft have been brought from a confiderable diftance; and there is no method of conveyance here but by hand: the coral muft alfo have been fifhed from under the water, where, though it may be found in plenty, it lies at a confiderable depth, never lefs than three feet. Both the rock ftone and the coral could be fquared only by tools made of the fame fubftance, which muft have been a work. of incredible labour; but the polifhing was more eafily effected!
1769. effected by means of the fharp coral fand, which is found every where upon the fea-fhore in great abundance. In the middle of the top flood the image of a bird, carved in wood; and near it lay the broken one of a fifh, carved in ftone: The whole of this pyramid made part of one fide of a fpacious area or fquare, nearly of equal fides, being three hundred and fixty feet by three hundred and fifty-four, which was walled in with flone, and paved with flat fones in its whole extent; though there were growing in it, notwithflanding the pavement, feveral of the trees which they call Etoa, and plantains. About an hundred yards to the weft of this building, was another paved area or court, in which were feveral fmall ftages raifed on wooden pillars, about feven feet high, which are called by the Indians Ewattas, and feem to be a kind of altars, as upon thefe are placed provifions of all kinds as offerings to their gods; we have fince feen whole hogs placed upon them, and we found here the fculls of above fifty, befides the fculls of a great number of dogs.

The principal object of ambition among thefe people is to have a magnificent Morai, and this was a ftriking memorial of the rank and power of Oberea. It has been remarked, that we did not find her invefted with the fame authority that the exercifed when the Dolphin was at this place, and we now learnt the reafon of it. Our way from her houfe to the Morai lay along the fea fide, and we obferved every where under our feet a great number of human bones, chiefly ribs and vertebre. Upon enquiring into the caufe of fo fingular an appearance, we were told, that in the then laft month of Owarabew, which anfwered to our December, 1768 , about four or five months before our arrival, the people of Tiarrabou, the S.E. peninfula which we had juft vifited, made a defcent at this place, and killed a great number of people, whofe bones were thofe that we faw upon the fhore:
that, upon this occafion, Oberea, and Oamo, who then adminiftered the government for his fon, had fled to the mountains; and that the conquerors burnt all the houfes, which were very large, and carried away the hogs and what other animals they found. We learnt alfo, that the turkey and goofe, which we had feen when we were with Mathiabo, the ftealer of cloaks, were among the fpoils; this accounted for their being found among people with whom the Dolphin had little or no communication; and upon mentioning the jaw-bones, which we had feen hanging from a board in a long houfe, we were told, that they alfo had been carried away as trophies, the people here carrying away the jawbones of their enemies, as the Indians of North America do the fcalps.

After having thus gratified our curiofity, we returned to our quarters, where we paffed the night in perfect fecurity and quiet. By the next evening we arrived at Atahourou, Friday 3s: the refidence of our friend Tootahah, where, the laft time we paffed the night under his protection, we had been obliged to leave the beft part of our clothes behind us. This adventure, however, feemed now to be forgotten on both fides. Our friends received us with great pleafure, and gave us a good fupper and a good lodging, where we fuffered neither lofs or difturbance.

The next day, Saturday, July the ift, we got back to our fort at Matavai, having found the circuit of the ifland, including both peninfulas, to be about thirty leagues. Upon our complaining of the want of bread-fruit, we were told, that the produce of the laft feafon was nearly exhaufted ; and that what was feen fprouting upon the trees, would not be fit to ufe in lefs than three months; this accounted for our hav, ing been able to procure fo little of it in our route.

[^2]July.
Saturday s.


While the bread-fruit is ripening upon the flats, the inhabitants are fupplied in fome meafure from the trees which they have planted upon the hills to preferve a fucceffion; but the quantity is not fufficient to prevent fcarcity: they live therefore upon the four pafte which they call Mabie, upon wild plantains, and ahec-nuts, which at this time are in perfection. How it happened that the Dolphin, which was here at this feafon, found fuch plenty of bread-fruit upon the trees, I cannot tell, except the fearon in which they ripen varies.

At our return, our Indian friends crouded about us, and none of them came empty-handed. Though I had determined to reftore the canoes which had been detained to their owners, it had not yet been done; but I now releafed them as they were applied for. Upon this occafion I could not but remark with concern, that thefe people were eapable of practifing petty frauds againft each other, with a deliberate difhonefty, which gave me a much worfe opinion of them than I had ever entertained from the robberies they committed under the ftrong temptation to which a fudden opportunity of enriching themfelves with the ineftimable metal and manufactures of Europe expofed them.

Among others who applied to me for the releafe of a canoe, was one Ротаттоw, a man of fome confequence, well known to us all. I confented; fuppofing the veffel to be his own, or that he applied on the behalf of a friend :- he went immediately to the beach, and took poffefiion of one of the boats, which; with the affiftance of his people, he began to carry off. Upon this, however, it was eagerly claimed by the right owners, who, fupported by the other Indians, clamouroufly reproached him for invading their property, and prepared to take the canoe from him by force. Upon this, he defired
defired to be heard, and told them, that the canoe did, indeed, once belong to thofe who claimed it; but that I, having feized it as a forfeit, had fold it to him for a pig. This filenced the clamour, the owners, knowing that from my power there was no appeal, acquiefced; and Potattow would have carried off his prize, if the difpute had not fortunately been overheard by fome of our people who reported it to me. I gave orders immediately that the Indians fhould be undeceived; upon which the right owners took poffeffion of their canoe, and Potattow was fo confcious of his guilt, that neither he nor his wife, who was privy to his knavery, could look us in the face for fome time afterwards.

## CHAP. XVI.

An Expedition of Mr. Banks to trace the River: Marks of. fubterraneous Fire: Preparations for leaving the Ifland:

> An Accounnt of Tupia.


Monday 3.

ON the 3d, Mr. Banks fet out early in the morning, with fome Indian guides, to trace our river up the valley from which it iffues, and examine how far it's banks were inhabited. For about fix miles they met with houfes, not far diftant from each other, on each fide of the river, and the valley was every where about four hundred yards wide from the foot of the hill on one fide, to the foot of that on the other; but they were now fhewn a houfe which they were told was the laft that they would fee. When they came up to it, the mafter of it offered them refrefhments of cocoanuts and other fruit, of which they accepted; after a fhort ftay, they walked forward for a confiderable time; in bad way it is not eafy to compute diftances, but they imagined that they had walked about fix miles farther, following the courfe of the river, when they frequently paffed under vaults, formed by fragments of the rock, in which they were told people who were benighted frequently paffed the night. Soon after they found the river banked by fteep rocks, from which a cafcade, falling with great violence, formed a pools fo fteep, that the Indians faid they could not pafs it. They feemed, indeed, not much to be acquainted with the valley beyond this place, their bufinefs lying chiefly upon the declivity

## ROUND THE WORLD.

clivity of the rocks on each fide, and the plains which extended on their fummits, where they found plenty of a wild plantain, which they called Vae. The way up thefe rocks


Monday 3. from the banks of the river was in every refpect dreadful; the fides were nearly perpendicular, and in fome places one hundred feet high; they were alfo rendered exceeding flippery by the water of innumerable fprings which iffued from the fiffures on the furface: yet up thefe precipices a way was to be traced by a fucceffion of long picces of the bark of the Hibifcus tiliaceus, which ferved as a rope for the climber to take hold of, and affifted him in fcrambling from one ledge to another, though upon thefe ledges there was footing only for an Indian or a goat. One of thefe ropes was nearly thirty feet in length, and their guides offered to aflift them in mounting this pafs, but recommended another at a little diftance lower down, as lefs difficult and dangerous. They took a view of this "better way," but found it fo bad that they did not to chufe to attempt it, as there was nothing at the top to reward their toil and hazard but a grove of the wild plantain or Vae tree, which they had often feen before.

During this excurfion, Mr. Banks had an excellent opportunity to examine the rocks, which were almoft every where naked, for minerals; but he found not the leaft appearance of any. The fones every where, like thofe of Madeira, fhewed manifeft tokens of having been burnt; nor is there a fingle.fpecimen of any ftone, among all thofe that were collected in the ifland, upon which there are not manifeft and indubitable marks of fire ; except perhaps fome fmall pieces of the hatchet-ftone, and even of that, other fragments were collected which are burnt almoft to a pumice. Traces of fire are alfo manifeft in the very clay upon the hills; and it may, therefore, not unreafonably be fuppofed, that this, and the neighbouring iflands, are either fhattered remains

## LIEUTENANTCOOK's VOYAGE

1769. of a continent, which fome have fuppofed to be neceffary in


Menday 3 . this part of the globe, to preferve an equilibrium of its parts, which were left behind when the reft funk by the mining of a fubterraneous fire, fo as to give a paffage to the fea over it ; or were torn from rocks, which, from the creation of the world, had been the bed of the fea, and thrown up in heaps, to a height which the waters never reach. One or other of thefe fuppofitions will perhaps be thought the more probable, as the water does not gradually grow fhallow as the fhore is approached, and the iflands are almoft every where furrounded by reefs, which appear to be rude and broken, as fome violent concuffion would naturally leave the folid fubftance of the earth. It may alfo be remarked upon this occafion, that the moft probable caufe of earthquakes feems to be the fudden rufhing in of water upon fome valt mafs of fubterraneous fire, by the inftantaneous rarefaction of which into vapour, the mine is fprung, and various fubftances, in all ftages of vitrification, with fhells, and other marine productions, that are now found foffil, and the ftrata that covercd the furnace, are thrown up; while thofe parts of the land which were fupported upon the broken flell give way, and fink into the gulph. With this theory the phænomena of all earthquakes feem to agree; pools of water are frequently left where land has fubfided, and various fubftances, which manifeftly appear to have fuffered by the action of fire, are thrown up. It is indeed true, that fire cannot fubfift without air; but this cannot be urged againft there being fire below that part of the earth which forms the bed of the fea; becaufe there may be innumerable fiffures by which a communication between thofe parts and the external air may be kept up, even upon the higheft mountains, and at the greateft diftance from the fea-fhore.

On the 4 th, Mr. Banks employed himfelf in planting a great quantity of the feeds of water-melons, oranges, lemons, limes, and other plants and trees which be had collected at Rio de Janeiro. For thefe he prepared ground on each fide of the fort, with as many varietics of foil as he could chufe ; and there is little doubt but that they will fucceed. He alfo gave liberally of thefe feeds to the Indians, and planted many of them in the woods : fome of the melon feeds having been planted foon after our arrival, the natives. fhewed him feveral of the plants which appeared to be in the moft flourifhing condition, and were continually afking; him for more.

We now began to prepare for our departure, by bending the fails and performing other neceffary operations on board. the fhip, our water being already on board, and the provi. fions examined. - In the mean time we had another vifit from Oamo, Oberea, and their fon and daughter; the Indians expreffing their refpect by uncovering the upper parts of their: body as they had done beforc. The daughter, whofe name we underftood to be Tomata, was very defirous to fee the fort, but her father would by no means fuffer her to come in. Tearee, the fon of Waheatua, the fovereign of Tiarrabou, the fouth eaft peninfula, was alfo with us at this time; and we received intelligence of the landing of another gueft, whofe company was neither expected nor defired: this was no other. than the ingenious gentleman who contrived to feal out quadrant. We were told, that he intended to try his fortune again in the night ; but the Indians all offered very zealoufly. to affift us againft him, defiring that, for this purpofe, they: might be permitted to lie in the fort. This had fo good an cffect, that the thief relinquifhed his enterprize in de-fpair.

Saturday 8. Sunday 9.

On the 7 th, the carpenters were employed in taking down the gates and pallifadoes of our little fortification, for firewood on board the fhip; and one of the Indians had dexterity enough to fleal the ftaple and hook upon which the gate turned: he was immediately purfued, and after a chace of fix miles, he appeared to have been paffed, having concealed himfelf among fome rufhes in the brook; the rufhes were fearched, and though the thief had efcaped, a fcraper was found which had been ftolen from the fhip fometime before; and foon after our old friend Tubourai Tamaide brought us the faple.

On the 8th and 9 th, we continued to difmantle our fort, and our friends ftill flocked about us; fome, I believe, forry at the approach of our departure, and others defirous to make as much as they could of us while we ftaid.

We were in hopes that we fhould now leave the ifland, without giving or receiving any other offence ; but it unfortunately happened otherwife. Two foreign feamen having been out with my permiffion, one of them was robbed of his knife, and endeavouring to recover it, probably with circumftances of great provocation, the Indians attacked him and dangeroufly wounded him with a ftone; they wounded his companion alfo flightly in the head, and then fled into the mountains. As I fhould have been forry to take any farther notice of the affair, I was not difpleafed that the offenders had efcaped; but I was immediately involved in a quarrel which I very much regretted, and which yet it was not poflible to avoid.

In the middle of the night between the 8th and gth, Clement Webb and Samucl Gibfon, two of the marines, both young men, went privately from the fort, and in the morning were not to be found. As publick notice had been given,
that all hands were to go on board on the next day, and that the fhip would fail on the morrow of that day or the day following, I began to fear that the abfentees intended to flay behind. I knew that I could take no effectual fteps to recover them, without endangering the harmony and goodwill which at prefent fubfifted among us; and, thercfore, determined to wait a day for the chance of their return.

On Monday morning the roth, the marines, to my great Monday 10. concern, not being returned, an enquiry was made after them of the Indians, who frankly told us, that they did not intend to return, and had taken refuge in the mountains, where it was impoffible for our people to find them. They were then requefted to affilt in the fearch, and after fome deliberation, two of them undertook to conduct fuch perfons as I fhould think proper to fend after them to the place of their retreat. As they were known to be without arms, I thought two would be fufficient, and accordingly difpatched a petty officer, and the corporal of the marines, with the Indian guides, to fetch them back. As the recovery of thefe men was a matter of great importance, as I had no time to lofe, and as the Indians fooke doubtfully of their return, telling us, that they had each of them taken a wife, and were become inhabitants of the country, it was intimated to feveral of the Chicfs who were in the fort with their women, among whom were Tubourai Tamaide, Tomio, and Oberea, that they would not be permitted to leave it till our deferters were brought back. This precaution I thought the more neceffary, as, by concealing them a few days, they might compel me to go without them; and I had the pleafure to obferve, that they received the intimation with very little figns either of fear or difcontent; affuring me that my people fhould be fecured and fent back as foon as poffible. While this was doing at the fort, I fent Mr. Hicks in the pinnace to

[^3]fctch

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. fetch Tootahah on board the fhip, which he did, without alarming cither him or his people. If the Indian guides proved faithful and in earneft, I had reafon to expect the return of my people with the deferters before evening. Being difappointed, my fufpicions increafed; and night coming on, I thought it was not fafe to let the people whom I had detained as hoftages continue at the fort, and I therefore ordered Tubourai Tamaide, Oberea, and fome others, to be taken on board the fhip. This fpread a general alarm, and feveral of them, efpecially the women, expreffed their apprehenfions with great emotion and many tears when they were put into the boat. I went on board with them, and Mr. Banks remained on fhore, with fome others whom I thought it of lefs confequence to fecure.
About nine o'clock, Webb was brought back by fome of the natives, who declared, that Gibfon, and the petty officer and corporal, would be detained till Tootahah fhould be fet at liberty. The tables were now turned upon me; but I had proceeded too far to retreat. I immediately difpatched Mr. Hicks in the long-boat, with a ftrong party of men, to refcue the prifoners, and told Tootahah that it behoved him to fend fome of his people with them, with orders to afford them effectual affiftance, and to demand the releafe of my men in his name, for that I fhould expect him to anfwer for the contrary. He readily complied; this party recovered my men without the leaft oppofition; and about Tucilay ${ }^{1}$. feven o'clock in the morning, returned with them to the fhip, though they had not been able to recover the arms which had been taken from them when they were feized: thefe, however, were brought on board in lefs than half an hour, and the Chiefs were immediately fet at liberty.

When I queftioned the petty officer concerning what had happened on fhore, he told me, that neither the natives who

## ROUND THE WORLD.

went with him, nor thofe whom they met in their way, would give them any intelligence of the deferters; but, on the contrary, became very troublefome: that, as he was returning for further orders to the fhip, he and his comrade were fuddenly feized by a number of armed men, who having learnt that Tootahah was confined, had concealed themfelves in a wood for that purpofe, and, who having taken them at a difadvantage, forced their weapons out of their hands, and declared, that they would detain them till their Chief fhould be fet at liberty. He faid, however, that the Indians were not unanimous in this meafure; that fome were for fetting them at liberty, and others for detaining them: that an eager difpute enfued, and that from words they came to blows, but that the party for detaining them at length prevailed: that foon after, Webb and Gibfon were brought in by a party of the natives, as prifoners, that they alfo might be fecured as hoftages for the Chief; but that it was after fome debate refolved to fend Webb to inform me of their refolution, to affure me that his companions were fafe, and direct me where I might fend my anfwer. Thus it appears that whatever were the difadvantages of feizing the Chiefs, I fhould never have recovered my men by any other method. When the Chiefs were fet on fhore from the fhip, thofe at the fort were alfo fet at liberty, and, after ftaying with Mr. Banks about an hour, they all went away. Upon this occafion, as they had done upon another of the fame kind, they expreffed their joy by an undeferved liberality, frongly urging us to accept of four hogs. Thefe we abfolutely refufed as a prefent, and they as abfolutely refufing to be paid for them, the hogs did not change mafters. Upon examining the deferters, we found that the account which the Indians had given of them was true: they had flrongly attached themfelves to two girls, and it was their
1769. intention to conceal themfelves till the fhip had failed, and take up their refidence upon the ifland. This night every thing was got off from the fhore, and every body flept on board.

Among the natives who were almof conflantly with us, was Tupia, whofe name has been often mentioned in this narrative. He had been, as I have before oblerved, the firft miniter of Oberea, when fhe was in the height of her power: he was alfo the chief Tahowa or prict of the ifland, confequently well aequainted with the religion of the country, as well with refpect to its ceremonies as principles. He had alfo great experience and knowlege in navigation; and was particularly acquainted with the number and fituation: of the neighbouring iflands. This, man had often expreffed. Wednef. 12. a defire to go with us, and on the 12 th in the morning, having with the other natives left us the day before, he came on board, with a:boy about thirteen years of age, his fervant, and urged us to let him proceed with us on our voyage. To have fuch a perfon on board, was certainly defirable for many reafons; by learning his language, and teaching him ours, we fhould be able to acquire a much better knowlege of the cuftoms, policy, and religion of the. people, than our fhort fay among them could give us, I therefore gladly agreed to receive them on board. As we were prevented from failing to-day, by having found it neceffary to make new ftocks to our fmall and beft bower anchors, the old ones having been totally deftroyed by the worms, Tupia faid, he would go once more on fhore, and make a fignal for the boat to fetch him off in the evening. He went accordingly, and took with him a miniature picture of Mr. Banks's, to fhew his friends, and feveral little things to give them as parting prefents.

After dinner, Mr. Banks being defirous to procure a drawing of the Morai belonging to Tootahah at Eparré, I attended him thither, accompanied by Dr. Solander, in the pinnace. As foon as we landed, many of our friends came to meet us, though fome abfented themfelves in refentment of what had happened the day beforc. We immediately proceeded to Tootahah's houfe, were we were joined by Oberea, with feveral others who had not come out to meet us, and a perfect reconciliation was foon brought about ; in confequence of which they promifed to vifit usearly the next day, to take a laft farewel of us, as we told them we fhould certainly fet fail in the afternoon. At this place alfo we found Tupia, who returned with us, and flept this night on board the fhip for the firft time.

On the next morning, Thurday the 13 th of July, the fhip Thurfay ${ }_{5}$. was very early crouded with our friends, and furrounded by a multitude of canoes, which were filled with the natives of an inferior clafs. Between eleven and twelve we weighed anchor, and as foon as the fhip was under fail, the Indians on board took their leaves, and wept, with a decent and filent forrow, in which there was fomething very ftriking and tender: the people in the canoes, on the contrary, feemed to vie with each other in the loudnefs of their lamentations, which we confidered rather as affectation than grief. Tupia fuftained himfelf in this fcene with a firmnefs and refolution truly admirable: he wept indeed, but the effort that he made to conceal his tears, concurred, with them, to do him honour. He fent his laft prefent, a fhirt, by Otheothea, to Potomai, Tootahah's favourite miftrefs, and then went with Mr. Banks to the maft-head, waving to the canoes as long as they continued in fight.

Thus

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. 

Thus we took leave of Otaheite, and its inhabitants, after a ftay of juft three months; for much the greater part of the time we lived together in the moft cordial friendihip, and a perpetual reciprocation of good offices. The accidental differences which now and then happened, could not be more fincerely regretted on their part than they were on ours: the principal caufes were fuch as neceffarily refulted from our fituation and circumftances, in conjunction with the infirmities of human nature, from our not being able perfectly to underftand each other, and from the difpofition of the inhabitants to theft, which we could not at all times bear with or prevent. They had not, however, except in one inftance, been attended with any fatal confequence; and to that accident were owing the meafures that I took to prevent others of the fame kind. I hoped, indeed, to have availed myfelf of the impreffion which had been made upon them by the lives that had been facrificed in their conteft with the Dolphin, fo as that the intercourfe between us fhould have been carried on wholly without bloodfhed; and by this hope all my meafures were directed during the whole of my continuance at the ifland, and I fincerely wifh, that whoever fhall next vifit it, may be ftill more fortunate. Our traffick here was carried on with as much order as in the beft regulated market in Europe. It was managed principally by Mr. Banks, who was indefatigable in procuring provifion and refrefhments while they were to be had; but during the latter part of our time they became fcarce, partly by the increafed confumption at the fort and fhip, and partly by the coming on of the feafon in which cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit fail. All kind of fruit we purchafed for beads and nails, but no nails lefs than fortypenny were current: after a very flhort time we could never get a pig of more than ten or twelve pounds, for
lefs than a hatchet ; becaufe, though thefe people fet a high value upon fpike nails, yet thefe being an article with which many people in the fhip were provided, the women Thurday 13. found a much more eafy way of procuring them than by bringing down provifions.

The beft articles for traffick here are axes, hatchets, fpikes, large nails, looking-glaffes, knives, and beads, for fome of which, every thing that the natives have may be procured. They are indeed fond of fine linen cloth, both white and printed; but an ax worth half a crown, will fetch more than a piece of cloth worth twenty fhillings.

## C H.A P. XVII.

A particular Defcription of the Ifland; its Produce and Inbabitants; their Drefs, Habitations, Food, domeffic Life and Amulements.
1769. $T$ E found the longitude of Port-Royal bay, in this ifland, as fettled by Captain Wallis, who difcovered it on the $9^{\text {th }}$ of June 1767 , to be within half a degree of the truth. We found Point Venus, the northern extremity of the ifland, and the eaftern point of the bay, to lie in the longitude of $149^{\circ} 30^{\prime}$ this being the mean refult of a great number of obfervations made upon the fpot. The illand is furrounded by a reef of coral rock, which forms feveral excellent bays and harbours, fome of which have been particularly defcribed, where there is room and depth of water for any number of the largeft fhips. Port-Royal bay, called by the natives Matavai, which is not inferior to any in Otaheite, may eafily be known by a very high mountain in the middle of the ifland, which bears due fouth from Point Venus. To fail into it, either keep the weft point of the reef that lies before Point Venus, clofe on board, or give it a birth of near half a mile, in order to avoid a fmall fhoal of coral rocks, on which there is but two fathom and an half of water. The beft anchoring is on the eaftern fide of the bay, where there is fixteen and fourteen fathom upon an oufey bottom. The fhore of the bay is a fine fandy beach, behind which runs a river of frefh water, fo that any number of fhips may water here without incommoding each other; but the only wood for firing, upon the whole ifland, is that of fruit


## C H A P. XVII.

A particular Defcription of the Ifland; its Produce and Inbabitants; their Drefs, Habitations, Food, domefic Life and Amufements.
$\underbrace{1769 .} \mathbb{V}^{E}$ found the longitude of Port-Royal bay, in this ifland, as fettled by Captain Wallis, who difcovered it on the 9 th of June 1767 , to be within half a degree of the truth. We found Point Venus, the northern extremity of the ifland, and the eaftern point of the bay, to lie in the longitude of $149^{\circ} 30^{\prime}$ this being the mean refult of a great number of obfervations made upon the fpot. The ifland is furrounded by a reef of coral rock, which forms feveral excellent bays and harbours, fome of which have been particularly defcribed, where there is room and depth of water for any number of the largeft fhips. Port-Royal bay, called by the natives Matavai, which is not inferior to any in Otaheite, may eafily be known by a very high mountain in the middle of the ifland, which bears due fouth from Point Venus. To fail into it, either keep the weft point of the reef that lies before Point Venus, clofe on board, or give it a birth of near half a mile, in order to avoid a fmall fhoal of coral rocks, on which there is but two fathom and an half of water. The beft anchoring is on the eaftern fide of the bay, where there is fixteen and fourteen fathom upon an oufey bottom. The fhore of the bay is a fine fandy beach, behind which runs a river of frefh water, fo that any number of fhips may water here without incommoding each other; but the only wood for firing, upon the whole illand, is that of fruit



fruit trees, which muft be purchafed of the natives, or all hope of living upon good terms with them given up. There are fome harbours to the weftward of this bay which have, not been mentioned, but, as they are contiguous to it, andlaid down in the plan, a defcription of them is unneceffary.

The face of the country, except that part of it which bor ders upon the fea, is very uneven; it rifes in ridges that run up into the middle of the ifland, and there form mountains, which may be feen at the diftance of fixty miles: between the foot of thefe ridges and the fea, is a border of low land, furrounding the whole ifland, except in a few places where the ridges rife directly from the fea: the border of low land is in different parts of different breadths, but no where more than a mile and a half. The foil, except upon the very tops-of the ridges, is extremely rich and fertile, watered bya great number of rivulets of excellent water, and covered with fruit trees of various kinds, fome of which are of a ftately growth and thick foliage, fo as to form one continued wood; and even the tops of the ridges, though in general they are bare, and burnt up by the fun, are, in fome parts, not without their produce.

The low land that lies between the foot of the ridges and the fea, and fome of the vallies, are the only parts of the ifland that are inhabited, and here it is populous; the houfes do not form villages or towns, but are ranged along the whole border at the diftance of about fifty yards from each other, with little plantations of plantains, the tree which furnifles them with cloth. The whole ifland, according to Tupia's account, who certainly knew, could furnifh fix thoufand feven hundred and eighty fighting men, from which the number of inhabitants may eafily be computed.

> Vol, II.
1769. Produce.

The produce of this inland is bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, bananas, of thirteen forts, the beft we had ever eaten; plantains; a fruit not unlike an apple, which, when ripe, is very pleafant ; fweet potatoes, yams, cocoas, a kind of Arum; a fruit known here by the name of Jambu, and reckoned moft delicious; fugar cane, which the inhabitants eat raw; a root of the falop kind, called by the inhabitants Pea; a plant called Ethee; of which the root only is eaten; a fruit that grows in a pod, like that of a large kidney-bean, which, when it is roafted, eats very much like a chefnut, by the natives called. Abie; a tree called Wbarra, called in the Eaft Indies Pandane.r, which prodices fruit, fomething like the pinc-apple; a fhrub. called Nono; the Morinda, which alfo produces fruit; a fpecies of fern, of which the root is eaten, and fometimes the leaves; and a plant called Theve, of which the root alfo is. eaten: but the fruits of the Nono, the fern, and the Theve, are eaten only by the inferior pcople, and in times of fcarcity. All thefe, which ferve the inhabitants for food, the earth produces fpontaneoufly, or with fo little culture, that they feem to be exempted from the firft general curfe, that " man fhould eat his bread in the fweat of his brow." They have alfo the Chinefe paper mulberry, morus. papyrifera, which they call Aouta; a tree refembling the wild fig-tree of the Weft Indies; another fpecies of fig, which they call Matte; the cordia febefine orientalis, which they call Etou; a kind of Cyperus grafs, which they call Moo; a fpecies of tournefortia; which they call Tabeinoo; another of the convolvuhus poluce, which they call Eurbe; the folmum centifolium, which they call Ebooa; the calaphyllum mophytum, which they call Tamannu; the bibicus tiliaceus, called Poeroi, a frutefcent nettle; the urtice argentea, called Erowa; with many other plants which cannot here be particularly mentioned: thofe that have been named already, will be referred to in the fubfequent part of this work.

They have no European fruit, garden ftuff, pulfe, or legumes, nor grain of any kind.

Of tame animals they have only hogs, dogs, and poultry ; neither is there a wild animal in the ifland, except ducks, pigeons, paroquets, with a few other birds, and rats, there being no other quadruped, nor any ferpent. But the fea fupplies them with great variety of moft excellent fifh, to eat which is their chief luxury, and to catch it their principal labour.
As to the people they are of the largeft fize of Europeans. The men are tall, ftrong, well-limbed, and finely fhaped. The talleft that we faw was a man upon a neighbouring ifland, called Huaheine, who meafured fix feet three inches and an half. The women of the fuperior rank are alfo in general above our middle fature, but thofe of the inferior clafs are rather below it, and fome of them are very fmall. This defect in fize probably proceeds from their early commerce with men, the only thing in which they differ from their fuperiors, that could poffibly affect their growth.
Their natural complexion- is that kind of clear olive, or Brunette, which many people in Europe prefer to the fineft white and red. In thofe that are expofed to the wind and fun, it is confiderably deepened, but in others that live under fhelter, efpecially the fuperior clafs of women, it continues of its native hue, and the fkin is moft delicately fmooth and foft ; they have no tint in their cheeks, which we diftinguilh by the name of colour. The fhape of the face is comely, the cheek bones are not high, neither are the eyes hollow, nor the brow prominent : the only feature that does not correfpond with our ideas of beauty is the nofe, which, in general, is fomewhat flat; but their cyes, efpecially thofe of the women, are full of expreffion, fometimes fparkling with Bb 2 fire,
${ }^{1769}$. fire, and fometimes melting with fofnefs; their teeth alfo are, almon without exception, mof beautifully even and white, and their breath perfectly without taint.

The hair is almoft univerfally black, and rather coarfe; the men have beards which they wear in many faflions, always, however, plucking out great part of them, and keeping the reft perfectly clean and neat. Both fexes alfo eradicate every hair from under their arms, and accufed us of great uncleanlinefs for not doing the fame. In their motions there is at once vigour and cafe; their walk is graceful, their deportment liberal, and their behaviour to ftrangers and to each other affable and courteous. In their difpofitions alfo, they feemed to be brave, open, and candid, without either fufpicion or treachery, cruelty or revenge; fo that we placed the fame confidence in them as in our beft friends, many of us, particularly Mr. Banks, fleeping frequently in their houfes in the woods, without a companion, and confequently wholly in their power. They were, however, all thieves; and when that is allowed, they need not much fear a competition with the people of any other nation upon earth. During our flay in this ifland we faw about five or fix perfons, like one that was met by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander on the $24^{\text {th }}$ of April, in their walk to the eaftward, whofe fkins were of a dead white, like the nofe of a white horfe; with white hair, beard, brows, and eye-lafhes; red, tender eyes; a flhort fight, and fcurfy fkins, covered with a kind of white down; but we found that no two of thefe belonged to the fame family, and therefore concluded, that they were not a feccies, but unhappy individuals, rendered anomalous by difeafe.

It is a cuftom in moft countrics where the inhabitants have long hair, for the men to cut it fhort and the women to pride them-

## ROUND THE WORLD.

themfelves in its length. Here, however, the contrary cuftom prevails; the women always cut it fhort round their ears, and the men, except the fifhers, who are almoft continually in the water, fuffer it to flow in large waves over their fhoulders, or tie it up in a bunch on the top of their heads.

They liave a cuftom alfo of anointing their heads, with what they call Monoe, an oil exprefled from the cocoa-nut, in which fome fweet herbs or flowers have been infufed: as the oil is generally rancid, the fmell is at firft very difagreeable to a European; and as they live in a hot country, and have no fuch thing as a comb, they are not able to keep their heads free from lice, which the children and common people fometimes pick out and eat: a hateful cuftom, wholly different from their manners in every other particular ; for they are delicate and cleanly almoft without example, and thofe to whom we diftributed combs, foon delivered themfelves from vermin, with a diligence which fhowed that they were not. more odious to us than to them.

They have a cuftom of faining their bodies, nearly in the fame manner as is practifed in many other parts of the world, which they call Tattowing. They prick the flkin, fo as juft not to fetch blood, with a fmall inftrument, fomething in the form of a hoe; that part which anfwers to the blade is made of a bone or fhell, fcraped very thin, and is from a quarter of an inch to an inch and a half wide; the edge is cut into fharp teeth or points, from the number of three to twenty, according to its fize: when this is to be ufed, they dip the tecth into a mixture of a kind of lamp-black, formed of the fmoke that rifes from an oily nut which they burn inflead of candles, and water; the teeth, thus prepared, are placed upon the flain, and the handle to which they are faftened
'tened being ftruck, by quick fmart blows, with a fick fitted to the purpofe, they pierce it, and at the fame time carry into the puncture the black compofition, which leaves an indelible ftain. The operation is painful, and it is fome days before the wounds are healed. It is performed upon the youth of both fexes when they are about twelve or fourteen years of age, on feveral parts of the body, and in various figures, according to the fancy of the parent, or perhaps the rank of the party. The women are generally marked with this flain, in the form of a Z , on every joint of their fingers and toes, and frequently round the outfide of their feet: the men are alfo marked with the fame figure, and both men and women have fquares, circles, crefcents, and ill-defigned reprefentations of men, birds, or dogs, and various other devices impreffed upon their legs and arms, fome of which we were told had fignifications, though we could never learn what they were. But the part on which thefe ornaments are lavifhed with the greateft profufion, is the breech : this, in both fexes, is covered with a deep black; above which, arches are drawn one over another as high as the fhort ribs. They are often a quarter of an inch broad, and the edges are not ftrait lines, but indented. Thefe arches are their pride, and are fhewn both by men and women with a mixture of oftentation and pleafure; whether as an ornament, or a proof of their fortitude and refolution in bearing pain, we could not determine. The face in general is left unmarked; for we faw but one inftance to the contrary. Some old men had the greateft part of their bodies covered with large patches of black, deeply indented at the edges, like a rude imitation of flame; but we were told, that they came from a low ifland called Noouoora, and were not natives of Otaheite.

Mr. Banks faw the operation of tattowing performed upon the backfide of a girl about thirteen years old. The inftru-

ment ufed upon this occafion had thirty teeth, and every ftroke, of which at leaft a hundred were made in a minute, drew an ichor or ferum a little tinged with blood. The girl bore it with moft ftoical refolution for about a quarter of an hour; but the pain of fo many hundred punctures as the had received in that time then became intolerable: fhe firt complained in murmurs, then wept, and at laft burt into loud lamentations, earnefly imploring the operator to defift. He was, however, inexorabie; and when fhe began to ftruggle, fhe was held down by two women, who fometimes foothed and fometimes chid her, and now and then, when. fhe was moft unruly, gave her a fmart blow. Mr. Banks ftaid in a neighbouring houfe an hour, and the operation was not over when he went away; yet it was performed but upon one fide, the other having been done fometime before; and the arches upon the loins, in which they moft pride themfelves, and which give more pain than all the reft, were fill to be done.

It is frange that thefe people fhould value themfelves upon what is no diftinction; for 1 never faw a native of this ifland, either man or woman, in a flate of maturity, in whom thefe marks were wanting: poffibly they may have their rife in fuperfition, efpecially as they produce no vifible advantage, and are not made without great pain ; but though we enquired of many hundreds, we could never get any account of the matter.

Their clothing confifts of cloth or matting of different kinds, which will be defcribed among their other manufactures. The cloth, which will not bear wetting, they wear in dry weather, and the matting when it rains; they are put on in many different ways, jult as their fancy leads them; for in their garments nothing is cut into fhape, nor are any
${ }^{1769 .}$ two pieces fewed together. The drefs of the better fort of women confifts of three or four pieces: one piece, about two yards wide and eleven yards long, they wrap feveral times round their waift, fo as to hang down like a petticoat as low as the middle of the leg, and this they call Parou: two or three other pieces, about two yards and an half long and one wide, each having a hole cut in the middle, they place one upon another, and then putting the head through the holes, they bring the long ends down before and behind; the others remain open at the fides, and give liberty to the arms: this, which they call the Tebuta, is gathered round the waift, and confined with a girdle or fafh of thinner cloth, which is long enough to go many times round them, and exactly refembles the garment worn by the inhabitants of Peru and Chili, which the Spaniards call Poncho. The drefs of the men is the fame, except that inftead of fuffering the cloth that is wound about the hips to hang down like a petticoat, they bring it between their legs fo as to have fome refemblance to breeches, and it is then called Maro. This is the drefs of all ranks of people, and being univerfally the fame as to form, the gentlemen and ladies diftinguifh themfelves from the lower people by the quantity; fome of them will wrap round them feveral pieces of cloth, eight or ten yards long, and two or three broad; and fome throw a large piece loofely over their fhoulders in the manner of a cloak, or perhaps two pieces, if they are very great perfonages, and are defirous to appear in ftate. The inferior fort, who have only a fmall allowance of cloth from the tribes or families to which they belong, are obliged to be more thinly clad. In the heat of the day they appear almoft naked, the women having only a fcanty petticoat, and the men nothing but the fafh that is paffed between their legs and faftened round the waif. As finery is always troublefome, and particularly in
a hot country, where it confifts in putting one covering upon another, the women of rank always uncover themfelves as low as the waift in the evening, throwing off all that they wear on the upper part of the body, with the fame negligence and eafe as our ladies would lay by a cardinal or double handkerchief. And the Chiefs, even when they vifited us, though they had as much cloth round their middle as would clothe a dozen people, had frequently the reft of the body quite naked.

Upon their legs and feet they wear no covering; but they fhade their faces from the fun with little bonnets, either of matting or of cocoa-nut leaves, which they make occafionally in a few minutes. This, however, is not all their headdrefs ; the women fometimes wear little turbans, and fometimes a drefs which they value much more, and which, indeed, is much more becoming, called Tomou ; the Tomou confifts of human hair, plaited in threads, fcarcely thicker than fewing filk. Mr. Banks has pieces of it above a mile in length, without a knot. Thefe they wind round the head in fuch a manner as produces a very pretty effect, and in a very great quantity; for I have feen five or fix fuch pieces wound about the head of one woman: among thefe threads they ftick flowers of various kinds, particularly the cape-jeffamine, of which they have great plenty, as it is always planted near their houfes. The men fometimes flick the tail feather of the Tropic-bird upright in their hair, which, as I have obferved before, is often tied in a bunch upon the top of their heads: fometimes they wear a kind of whimfical garland, made of flowers of various kinds, ftuck into a piece of the rind of a plantain ; or of fcarlet peas, ftuck with gum upon a piece of wood: and fometimes they wear a kind of wig, made of the hair of men or dogs, or perlaps of cocoa-nut ftrings, woven upon one thread, which is tied under their

[^4]C c
hair,


## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. hair, fo that thefe artificial honours of their head may hang down behind. Their perfonal ornaments, befides flowers, are few; both fexes wear ear-rings, but they are placed only on one fide: when we came they conifted of fimall pieces of fhell, ftone, berries, red peas, or fome fmall pearls, three in a fring; but our beads very foon fupplanted them all.

The children go quite naked; the girls till they are three or four years old, and the boys till they are fix or feven.

The houfes, or rather dwellings of thefe people have been occafionally mentioned before: they are all built in the wood, between the fea and the mountains, and no more ground is cleared for each houfe, than juft fufficient to prevent the dropping of the branches from rotting the thatch with which they are covered; from the houfe, therefore, the inhabitant fteps immediately under the thade, which is the moft delightful that can be imagined. It confifts of groves of bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, without underwood, which are interfected, in all directions, by the paths that lead from one houfe to the other. Nothing can be more grateful than this fhade in fo warm a climate, nor any thing more beautiful than thefe walks. As there is no underwood, the fhade cools without impeding the air; and the houfes, having no walls, receive the gale from whatever point it blows. I thall now give a particular defeription of a houfe of a middling fize, from which, as the ftructure is univerfally the fame, a perfect idea may be formed both of thofe that are bigger, and thofe that are lefs.

The ground which it covers is an oblong fquare, four and Ewenty feet long, and eleven wide; over this a roof is raifed, upon three rows of pillars or pofts, parallel to each other, one on each fide, and the other in the middle. This roof confifts of two flat fides inclining to each other, and termi-
mating in a ridge, exactly like the roofs of our thatched houses in England. The utmoft height within is about nine feet, and the eaves on each fide reach to within about three feet and an half of the ground: below this, and through the whole height at each end, it is open, no part of it being incloned with a wall. The roof is thatched with palm-leaves; and the floor is covered, forme inches deep, with foft hay; over this are laid mats, fo that the whole is one cuflaion, upon which they fit in the day, and fleep in the night. In fomehoufes, however, there is one fool, which is wholly appropriated to the matter of the family; befides this, they have no furniture, except a few little blocks of wood, the upper fide of which is hollowed into a curve, and which ferve them for pillows.

The houfe is indeed principally ufed as a dormitory; for, except it rains, they eat in the open air, under the fliade of the next tree. The clothes that they wear in the day, ferve them for covering in the night; the floor is the common bed of the whole houfehold, and is not divided by any partition. The matter of the house and his wife fleep in the middle, next to them the married people, next to them the unmarried women, and next to them, at a little diflance, the unmarried men; the fervants, or Toutous, as they are called, fleep in the open air, except it rains, and in that cafe -they come jut within the fled.

There are, however, houfes of another kind, belonging to the Chiefs, in which there is fome degree of privacy. There are much faller, and fo conftrueted as to be carried about in their canoes from place to place, and fer up occafionaliy, like a tent; they are inclofed on the fides with cocoa-nut leaves, bur not fo clofe as to exclude the air, and the Chief and his wife fleep in them alone.
1769. There are houfes alfo of a much larger fize, not built either for the accommodation of a fingle Chief, or a fingle family; but as common receptacles for all the people of a diftrict. Some of them are two hundred feet long, thirty broad, and, under the ridge, twenty feet high; thefe are built and maintained at the common expence of the diffriet, for the accommodation of which they are intended; and have on one fide of them a large area, inclofed with low pallifadoes.

Thefe houfes, like thofe of feparate families, have no walls. Privacy, indeed, is little wanted among people who have not even the idea of indecency, and who gratify every appetite and paffion before witneffes, with no more fenfe of impropriety than we feel when we fatisfy our hunger at a focial board with our family or friends. Thofe who have no idea of indecency with refpect to actions, can have none with refpect to words ; it is, therefore, fcarcely neceffary to obferve, that, in the converfation of thefe people, that which is the principal fource of their pleafure, is always the principal topic ; and that every thing is mentioned without any reftraint or emotion, and in the moft direct terms, by both fexes.
Food. Of the food eaten here the greater part is vegetable. Here are no tame animals except hogs, dogs, and poultry, as I have obferved before, and thefe are by no means plenty. When a Chief kills a hog, it is almoft equally divided among his dependants; and as they are very numerous, the fhare of each individual at thefe feafts, which are not frequent, muft neceflarily be finall. Dogs and fowls fall fomewhat more fréquently to the fhare of the common people. I cannot much commend the flavour of their fowls; but we all agreed, that a South Sea dog was little inferior to an Englifh lamb; their

## ROUND THE WORLD.

their excellence is probably owing to their being kept up, and fed wholly upon vegetables. The fea affords them a great variety of fifh. The fmaller fifh, when they catch any, are generally eaten raw, as we eat oyfters; and nothing that the fea produces comes amifs to them : they are fond of lobfters, crabs, and other fhell-fifh, which are found upon the coaft ; and they will eat not only fea-infects, but what the feamen call Blubbers, though fome of them are fo tough, that they are obliged to fuffer them to become putrid before they: can be chewed. Of the many vegetables that have been mentioned already as ferving them for food, the principal is the bread-fruit, to procure which cofts them no trouble ar labour but climbing a tree : the tree which produces it, does not indced fhoot up fpontaneoully; but if a man plants ten of them in his lifetime, which he may do in about an hour, he will as completely fulfil his duty to his own and future generations, as the native of our lefs temperate climate can do by ploughing in the cold of winter, and reaping in the fummer's heat, as often as thefe feafons return; even if, after he has procured bread for his prefent houfehold, he fhould convert a furplus into money, and lay it up for his children.

It is true, indeed, that the bread-fruit is not always in feafon ; but cocoa-nuts, bananas, plantains, and a great variety of other fruits, fupply the deficiency.

It may well be fuppofed, that cookery is but little fludied by thefe people as an art ; and, indeed, they have but two ways of applying fire to drefs their food, broiling and baking; the operation of broiling is fo fimple that it requires no defcription, and their baking has been defcribed already, (page 152.) in the account of an entertainment prepared for us by Tupia. Hogs, and large fifh, are extremely well dreffed in the fame manner; and, in our opinion, were more juicy and more equally done than by any art of cookery now practifed in Europe. Bread-fruit is alpo cooked in an oven of the fame kind, which renders it foft, and fomething like a boiled potatoes; not quite fo farinaceous as a good one, but more fo than thole of the middling fort:
Of the bread-fruit they alfo make three difhes, by putting either water or the milk of the cocoa-nut to it, then beating it to a pate with a flone pefle, and afterwards mixing it with ripe plantains, bananas, or the four pale which they call Mable.

The mahie, which has been mentioned as a fuccedaneum for ripe bread-fruit, before the feafon for gathering a fret crop comes on, is thus made :
The fruit is gathered jut before it is perfectly ripe, and being laid in heaps, is clofely covered with leaves; in this fate it undergoes a fermentation, and becomes difagreeably feet: the core is then taken out entire, which is done by gently pulling the fall, and the reft of the fruit is thrown into a hole which is dug for that purpofe, generally in the houfes, and neatly lined in the bottom and fides with graft; the whole is then covered with leaves, and heavy fines laid upon them: in this fate it undergoes a fecond fermentation, and becomes four, after which it will fuffer no change for many months: it is taken out of the hole as it is wanted for ufe, and being made into balls, it is wrapped up in leaves and baked; after it is dreffed, it will keep five or fix weeks. It is eaten both cold and hot, and the natives feldom make a meal without it, though to us the tate was as difagreeable as that of a pickled olive generally is the firlt time it is eaten.

As the making of this mahie depends, like brewing, upon fermentation, fo, like brewing, it fometimes fails, without
their being able to afcertain the caufe; it is very natural, therefore, that the making it fhould be connected with fuperftitious notions and ceremonies. It generally falls to the lot of the old women, who will fuffer no creature to touch any thing belonging to $i t$, but thofe whom they employ as affiltants, nor even to go into that part of the houfe where the operation is carrying on. Mr. Banks happened to fpoil a large quantity of it only by inadvertently touching a leaf which lay upon it. The old woman, who then prefided over thefe myfteries, told him, that the procefs would fail; and immediately uncovered the hole in a fit of vexation and defpair. Mr. Banks regretted the mifchief he had done, but was fomewhat confoled by the opportunity which it gave him of examining the preparation, which perhaps, but for fuch an accident, would never have offered.

Such is their food, to which falt-water is the univerfal fauce, no meal being eaten without it: thofe who live near the fea have it fetched as it is wanted; thofe who live at fome diftance kecp it in large bamboos, which are fet up in their houfes, for ufe. Salt-water, however, is not their only fauce; they make another of the kernels of cocoa-nuts, which being fermented till they difolve into a pafte fomewhat refembling butter, are beaten up with falt-water. The flavour of this is very frong, and was, when we firft tafted it, exceedingly naufeous; a little ufe, however, reconciled fome of us to it fo much, that they preferred it to our own fauces, efpecially with fifh. The natives feemed to confider it as a dainty, and do not ufe it at their common meals; poffibly, becaufe they think it ill management to ufe cocoa-nuts fo lavihly, or perhaps, when we were at the ifland, they were farcely ripe enough for the purpofe.

For drink, they have in general nothing but water, or the juice of the cocon-nut; the art of producing liquors that in-
toxicate, by fermentation, being happily unknown among them; neither have they any narcotic which they chew, as the natives of fome other countries do opium, beetle-root, and tobacco. Some of them drank freely of our liquors, and in a few inftances became very drunk; but the perfons to whom this happened were fo far from defiring to repeat the debauch, that they would never touch any of our liquors afterwards. We were however informed, that they became drunk by drinking a juice that is expreffed from the leaves of a plant which they call Ava Ava. This plant was not in feafon when we were there, fo that we faw no inftances of its effects; and as they confidered drunkennefs as a difgrace, they probably would have concealed from us any inftances which might have happened during our flay. This vice is almoft peculiar to the Chiefs, and confiderable perfons, who vic with each other in drinking the greatef number of draughts, each draught being about a pint. They keep this intoxicating juice with great care from their women.

Table they have none; but their apparatus for eating is fet out with great neatnefs, though the articles are too fimple and too few to allow any thing for fhow: and they commonly eat alone; but when a franger happens to vifit them, he fometimes makes a fecond in their mefs. Of the meal of one of their principal people I fhall give a particular defcription.

He fits down under the fhade of the next tree, or on the fhady fide of his houfe, and a large quantity of leaves, either of the bread-fruit or banana, are neatly fpread before him upon the ground as a table-cloth; a bafket is then fet by him that contains his provifion, which, if fifh or flefh, is ready dreffed, and wrapped up in leaves, and two cocoa-nut fhells, one full of falt water and the other of frefh: his attendants, which are not few, feat themfelves round him, and when all is ready, he begins by wafhing his hands and his mouth thoroughly
thoroughly with the frefl-water, and this he repeats almoft continually throughout the whole meal; he then takes part of his provifion out of the balket, which generally confifts of a fmall fifh or two, two or three bread-fruits, fourteen or fifteen ripe bananas, or fix or feven apples: he firft takes half a bread-fruit, peels off the rind, and takes out the core with his nails; of this he puts as much into his mouth as it can hold, and while he chews it, takes the fifh out of the leaves, and breaks one of them into the falt water, placing the other, and what remains of the bread-fruit, upon the leaves that have been fpread before him. When this is done, he takes up a fmall piece of the fifh that has been broken into the falt-water, with all the fingers of one hand, and fucks it into his mouth, fo as to get with it as much of the falt-water as poffible: in the fame manner he takes the reft by different morfels, and between each, at leaft very frequently, takes a fmall fup of the falt-water, either out of the cocoa-nut fhell, or the palm of his hand: in the mean time one of his attendants has prepared a young cocoa-nut, by peeling off the outer rind with his teeth, an operation which to an European appears very furprifing; but it depends fo much upon llight, that many of us were able to do it before we left the ifland, and fome that could fcarcely crack a filbert: the mafter, when he chufes to drink, takes the cocoa-nut thus prepared, and boring a hole through the fhell with his finger, or breaking it with a ftone, he fucks out the liquor. When he lias eaten his breal-fruit and fifl, he begins with his plantains, one of which makes but a mouthful, though it be as big as a black-pudding; if inftead of plantains he has apples, he never tattes then till they have been pared ; to do this a fhell is picked up from the ground, where they are always in plenty, and toffed to him by an attendant : he immediately begins to cut or ferape

[^5]D d
1769. off the rind, but fo awkwardly that great part of the fruit is wafted. If, inftead of fifh, he has flefh, he muft have fome fuccedaneum for a knife to divide it; and for this purpofe a piece of bamboo is toffed to him, of which he makes the neceffary implement by fplitting it tranfverfely with his nail. While all this has been doing, fome of his attendants have been employed in beating bread-fruit with a fone pefle upon a block of wood; by being beaten in this manner, and Prinkled from time to time with water, it is reduced to the confiftence of a foft paite, and is then put into a veffel fomewhat like a butcher's tray, and either made up alone, or mixed with banana or mahie, according to the tafte of the mafter, by pouring water upon it by degrees and fqueezing it often through the hand: under this operation it acquires the confiftence of a thick cuftard, and a large cocoa-nut thell full of it being fet before him, he fips it as we fhould do a jelly if we had no fpoon to take it from the glafs: the meal is then finifhed by again wafhing his hands and his mouth. After which the cocoa-nut fhells are cleaned, and every thingthat is left is replaced in the bafket.

The quantity of food which the fe people eat at a meal is prodigious: I have feen one man devour two or three fifhes as big as a perch ; three bread-fruits, each bigger than two fifts; fourteen or fifteen plantains or bananas, each of them fix or feven inches long, and four or five round; and riear a quart of the pounded bread-fruit, which is as fubftantial as the thickeft unbaked cuftard. This is fo extraordinary that I farcely expect to be believed; and I would not have related it upon my own fingle teftimony, but Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and moft of the other Gentlemen, have had ocular demonftration of its truth, and know that I mention them upon the occafion.

It is very wonderful, that thefe people, who are remarkaably fond of fociety, and particularly that of their women, fhould exclude its pleafures from the table, where among all other nations, whether civil or favage, they have been principally enjoyed. How a meal, which every where elfe brings families and friends together, came to feparate them here, we often enquired, but could never learn. They eat alone, they faid, becaufe it was right; but why it was right to eat alone, they never attempted to tell us: fuch, however, was the force of habit, that they expreffed the flrongeft diflike, and even difguft, at our eating in fociety, efpecially with our women, and of the fame victuals. At firlt, we thought this flrange fingularity arofe from fome fupertitious opinion; but they conflantly affirmed the contrary. We obferved alfo fome caprices in the cuftom, for which we could as little account as for the cuftom itfelf. We could -never prevail with any of the women to partake of the victuals at our table when we were dining in company; yet they would go, five or fix together, into the fervants apartments, and there eat very heartily of whatever they could find, of which I have before given a particular inflance; nor were they in the lean difconcerted if we came in while they were doing it. When any of us have been alone with a woman, fhe has fometimes eaten in our company; but then the has expreffed the greateft unwillingnefs that it flould be known, and always extorted, the ftrongen promifes of recrecy.
Among themfelves, even two brothers and two fifters hiave each their feparate bafkets, with provifion and the apparatus of their meal. When they firf vifited us at our tents, each brought his bafket with him ; and when we fat down to table, they would go out, fit down upon the ground, at two or three yards diftance from each other, and turning their Dd 2
faces

## LIEUTENANT GOOK's VOYAGE

1769. faces different ways, take their repaft without interchanging a fingle word.

The women not only abftain from eating with the men, and of the fame victuals, but even have their victuals feparately prepared by boys kept for that purpofe, who depofit it in a feparate shed, and attend them with it at their meals.

But though they would not eat with us or with each other, they have often afked us to eat with them, when we have vifited thofe with whom we were particularly acquainted at their houfes; and we have often upon fuch occafions eaten out of the fame bafket, and drunk out of the fame cup. The elder women, however, always appeared to be offended at this liberty; and if we happened to touch their victuals, or even the bafket that contained it, would throw it away.

Domefticlife, and amufements.

After meals, and in the heat of the day, the middle-aged people of the better fort generally fleep; they are indeed extremely indolent, and fleeping and cating is almoft all that they do. Thofe that are older are lefs drowzy, and the boys and girls are kept awake by the natural activity and fprightlinefs of their age.

Their amufements have occafionally been mentioned in my account of the incidents that happened during our refidence in this ifland, particularly mufic, dancing, wreftling, and fhooting with the bow; they alfo fometimes vie with each other in throwing a lance. As fhooting is not at a mark, but for diftance ; throwing the lance is not for diftance, but at a mark: the weapon is about nine feet long, the mark is the bole of a plantain, and the diftance about twenty fards.

Their only mufical inftruments are flutes and drums; the flutes are made of a hollow bamboo about a foot long, and, as has been obferved before, have only two flops, and confequently but four notes, out of which they fecm hitherto to
have formed but one tune; to thefe flops they apply the fore finger of the left hand and the middle finger of the
 right.

The drum is made of a hollow block of wood, of a cylindrical form, folid at one end, and covered at the other with fhark's fkin: thefe they beat not with fticks, but their hands; and they know how to tune two drums of different notes into concord. They have alfo, an expedient to bring the flutes that play together into unifon, which is to roll up a leaf fo as to flip over the end of the fhorteft, like our fliding tubes for telefcopes, which they move up or down till the purpofe is anfwered, of which they feem to judge by their ear with great nicety.

To thefe inftruments they fing; and, as I have obferved before, their fongs are often extempore: they call every two verfes or couplet a fong, Pebay; they are generally, though not always in rhime ; and when pronounced by the natives, we could difcover that they were metre. Mr. Banks took great pains to write down fome of them which were made upon our arrival, as nearly as he could exprefs their founds by combinations of our letters; but when we read them, not having their accent, we could fcarcely make them either metre or rhime. The Reader will eafily perceive that they: arc of very different ftructure.

Tede pahai de parow-a
Ha maru no mina.
E pahah Tayo malama tai ya
No Tabane tonatou whannomi ya:
E Turai eattu terara patee whennua toai
Ino o maio Pretane to whennuaia no Tute:

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1969. Of the fe verfes our knowlege of the language is too imperfect to attempt a tranflation. They frequently amufe themfelves by finging fuch couplets as thefe when they are alone, or with their families, efpecially after it is dark; for though they need no fires; they are not without the comfort of artificial light between funfet and bed-time. Their candles are made of the kernels of a kind of oily nut, which they ftick one over another upon a fkewer that is thruft through the middle of them; the upper one being lighted, burns down to the fecond, at the fame time confuming that part of the fkewer which goes through it; the fecond taking fire burns in the fame manner down to the third, and fo of the reft: fome of thefe candles will burn a confiderable time, and they give a very tolerable light. They do not often fit up above an hour after it is dark; but when they have ftrangers who fleep in the houfe, they generally keep a light burning all night, poffibly as à check upon fuch of the women as they wifh not to honour them with their favours.

Of their itinerary concerts I need add nothing to what has been faid already; efpecially as I fhall have occafion, more particularly, to mention them when I relate our adventures upon another ifland.

In other countries, the girls and unmarried women are fuppofed to be wholly ignorant of what others upon fome occafions may appear to know; and their conduct and converfation are confequently reftrained within narrower bounds, and kept at a more remote diftance from whatever relates to a connection with the other fex: but here, it is juft contrary. Among other diverfions, there is a dance, called Timorodee, which is performed by young girls, whenever eight or ten of them can be collected together, confifting of motions and geftures beyond imagination wanton, in the practice of which
they are brought up from their earlieft childhood, accompanied by words, which, if it were poffible, would more explicitly convey the fame ideas. In thefe dances they keep time with an exact nefs which is fcarcely excelled by the beft performers upon the ftages of Europe. But the practice which is allowed to the virgin, is prohibited to the womanfrom the moment that the has put thefe hopeful leffons in practice, and realized the fymbols of the dance.

It cannot be fuppofed that, among thefe people, chaftity is held in much eflimation. It might be expected that fifters and daughters would be offered to ftrangers, either as a courtefy, or for reward ; and that breaches of conjugal fidelity, even in the wifc; fhould not be otherwife punifhed than by a few hard words, or perhaps a flight beating, as indeed is the cafc: but there is a fcale in diffolute fenfuality, which thefe people have afcended, wholly unknown to every other nation whofe manners have been recorded from the beginning of the world to the prefent lour, and which no imagination could: poffibly conceive:

A very confiderable number of the principal people of Otaheite, of both fexes, have formed themfelves into a fociety, in which every woman is common to every man; thus fecuring a perpetual variety as often as their inclination, prompts them to feek it, which is fo frequent, that the fame man and woman feldom cohabir together more than two or three days.
Thefe focieties are diftinguifhed by the name of Aircoy; and the members have meetings, at which no other is prefent, where the men amufe themfelves by wreftling, and the women, notwithflanding their occafional connection with different men, dance the Timorodee in all its latitude, as an macitement to defires which it is faid are frequently gratified
1769. upon the fpot. This however is comparatively nothing. If any of the women happen to be with child, which in this manner of life happens lefs frequently than if they were to cohabit only with one man, the poor infant is fmothered the moment it is born, that it may be no incumbrance to the father, nor interrupt the mother in the pleafures of her diabolical proftitution. It fometimes indeed happens, that the paffion which prompts a woman to enter into this fociety, is furmounted when the becomes a mother, by that inftinctive affection which Nature has given to all creatures for the prefervation of their offspring; but even in this cafe, fhe is not permitted to fpare the life of her infant, except the can find a man who will patronife it as his child: if this can be done, the murder is prevented; but both the man and woman, being deemed by this act to have appropriated each other, are ejected from the community, and forfeit all claim to the privileges and pleafures of Arreoy for the future; the woman from that time being diftinguifhed by the term Whannownow, " bearer of children," which is here a term of reproach; tbough none can be more honourable in the eftimation of wifdom and humanity, of right reafon, and every paffion that diftinguifhes the man from the brute.

It is not fit that a practice fo horrid and fo ftrange fhould be imputed to human beings upon light evidence, but I have fuch as abundantly juftifies me in the account I have given. The people themfelves are fo far from concealing their connection with fuch a fociety as a difgrace, that they boaft of it as a privilege; and both myfelf and Mr. Banks, when particular perfons have been pointed out to us as members of the Arreoy, have queftioned them about it, and received the account that has been here given from their own lips. They have acknowledged, that they had long been of
this accurfed fociety, that they belonged to it at that time, and that feveral of their children had been put to death.

But I muft not conclude my account of the domentic life of thefe people without mentioning their perfonal cleanlinefs. If that which leffens the good of life and increafes the evil is vice, furely cleanlinefs is a virtue: the want of it tends to deftroy both beauty and health, and mingles difguft with our beft pleafures. The natives of Otaheite, both men and women, conflantly wafh their whole bodies in running water three times every day; once as foon as they rife in the morning, once at noon, and again before they fleep at night, whether the fea or river is near them or at a diftance. I have already obferved, that they wafh not only the mouth, but the hands at their meals, almof between every morfel ; and their clothes, as well as their perfons, are kept without fpot or ftain; fo that in a large company of thefe people, nothing is fuffered but heat, which, perhaps, is more than can be faid of the politeft affembly in Europe.

## C H A P. XVIII.

## Of the Manufactures, Boats, and Navigation of Otabeite.

 F neceflity is the mother of invention, it cannot be fuppofed to have been much exerted where the liberality of Nature has rendered the diligence of Art almoft fuperfluous; yet there are many inftances both of ingenuity and labour among thefe people, which, confidering the want of metal for tools, do honour to both.

Manufactures.

Their principal manufacture is their cloth, in the making and dying of which I think there are fome particulars which may inftruct even the artificers of Great Britain, and for that reafon my defcription will be more minute.

Their cloth is of three kinds; and it is made of the bark of three different trees, the Chinefe paper mulberry, the bread-fruit tree, and the tree which refembles the wild figtree of the Weft Indies.

The fineft and whiteft is made of the paper mulberry, Aouta; this is worn chiefly by the principal people, and when it is dyed red takes a better colour. A fecond fort, inferior in whitenefs and foftnefs, is made of the bread-fruit tree, Oroo, and worn chiefly by the inferior people; and a third of the tree that refembles the fig, which is coarfe and harfh, and of the colour of the darkeft brown paper: this, though it is lefs pleafing both to the eye and the touch, is the moft valuable, becaufe it refifts water, which the other two forts will not. Of this, which is the moft rare as well as the moft ufeful,
ufeful, the greater part is perfumed, and worn by the Chiefs as a morning drefs.

All thefe trees are propagated with great care, particularly the mulberry, which covers the largeft part of the cultivated land, and is not fit for ufe after two or three year's growth, when it is about fix or eight feet high, and fomewhat thicker than a man's thumb; its excellence is to be thin, ftrait, tall, and without branches: the lower leaves, therefore, are carefully plucked off, with their germs, as often as there is any appearance of their producing a branch.

But though the cloth made of thefe three trees is different, it is all manufactured in the fame manner; I fhall, therefore, defcribe the procefs only in the fine fort, that is made of the mulberry. When the trees are of a proper fize, they are drawn up, and ftripped of their branches, after which the roots and tops are cut off; the bark of thefe rods being then flit up longitudinally is eafily drawn off, and, when a proper quantity has been procured, it is carried down to fome running water, in which it is depofited to foak, and fecured from floating away by heavy ftones: when it is fuppofed to be fufficiently foftened, the women fervants go down to the brook, and flripping themfelves, fit down in the water, to feparate the inner bark from the green part on the outfide; to do this they place the under fide upon a flat fmooth board, and with the fhell which our dealers call Tyger's tongue, Tellina gargadia, fcrape it very carefully, dipping it continually in the water till nothing remains but the fine fibres of the inner coat. Being thus prepared in the afternoon, they are fpread out upon plantain leaves in the evening; and in this part of the work there appears to be fome difficulty, as the miftrefs of the family always fuperintends the doing

$$
\text { E c } 2
$$

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. of it: they are placed in lengths of about eleven or twelve yards, one by the fidc of another, till they are about a foot broad, and two or three layers are alfo laid one upon the other : care is taken that the cloth fhall be in all parts of an equal thicknefs, fo that if the bark happens to be thinner in any particular part of one layer than the reft, a piece that is fomewhat thicker is picked out to be laid over it in the next. In this ftate it remains till the morning, when great part of the water which it contained when it was laid out, is either drained off or evaporated, and the feveral fibres adhere together, fo as that the whole may be raifed from the ground in one piece.

It is then taken away, and laid upon the fmooth fide of a long piece of wood, prepared for the purpofe, and beaten by the women fervants, with inftrmments about a foot long and three inches thick, made of a hard wood which they call Etoa. The flhape of this inftrument is not unlike a fquare razor flrop, only that the handle is longer, and each of its four fides or faces is marked, lengthways, with fmall grooves, or furrows, of different degrees of finenefs; thofe on one fide being of a width and depth fufficient to receive a fmall packthread, and the others finer in a regular gradation, fo tlat the laft are not more than equal to fewing filk.

They beat it firft with the coarfeft fide of this mallet, keeping time like our fmiths; it fpreads very faft under the ftrokes, chiefly however in the breadth, and the grooves in the mallet mark it with the appearance of threads ; it is fucceffively beaten with the other fides, laft with the fineff, and is then fit for ufe. Sometimes, however, it is made ftill thinner, by beating it with the fineft fide of the mallet, after it has been feveral times doubled: it is then called Hoboo, and is almoft as thin as a muflin; it becomes very white by being bleached

bleached in the air, but is made ftill whiter and fofter by being wafhed and beaten again after it has been worn.

Of this cloth there are feveral forts, of different degrees of finenefs, in proportion as it is more or lefs beaten without being doubled : the other cloth alfo differs in proportion as it is beaten; but they differ from each other in confequence of the different materials of which they are made. The bark of the bread-fruit is not taken till the trees are confiderably longer and thicker than thofe of the fig; the procefs afterwards is the fame.

When cloth is to be wafhed after it has been worn, it is taken down to the brook, and left to foak, being kept faft to the bottom, as at firt, by a ftone; it is then gently wrung or fqueezed; and fometimes feveral pieces of it are laid one upon another, and beaten together with the coarfeft fide of the mallet, and they are then equal in thicknefs to broadcloth, and much more foft and agreeable to the touch, after they have been a little while in ufe, though, when they come immediately from the mallet, they feel as if they had been. flarched. This cloth fometimes breaks in the beating, but. is cafily repaired by pafting on a patch with a gluten that is prepared from the root of the Pea, which is done fo nicely that it cannot be difcovered. The women alfo employ themfelves in removing blemifhes of every kind, as our ladies do in needle-work or knotting; fometimes when their work is intended to be very fine, they will pafle an entire covering of hobon over the whole. The principal excellencies of this cloth are its coolnefs and foftnefs; and its imperfections, its being pervious to water like paper, and almoft as eafily torn.

The colours with which they die this cloth are principally red and yellow. The red is exceedingly beautiful, and I may venture to fay, a brighter and more delicate colour than
$\underbrace{1769 .}$ any we have in Europe; that which approaches neareft is our full fcarlet, and the beft imitation which Mr. Banks's natural hittory painter could produce, was by a mixture of vermilion and carmine. The yellow is alfo a bright colour, but we have many as good.

The red colour is produced by the mixture of the juices of two vegetables, neither of which feparately has the leaft tendency to that hue. One is a fpecies of fig, called here Matte, and the other the Cordia Sebeftima, or Etou; of the fig the fruit is ufed, and of the Cordia the leaves.

The fruit of the fig is about as big as a rounceval pea, or very fmall goofeberry; and each of them, upon breaking off the ftalk very clofe, produces onc drop of a milky liquor, re fembling the juice of our figs, of which the tree is indeed a fpecies. This liquor the women collect into a fmall quantity of cocoa-nut water : to prepare a gill of cocoa-nut water will require between three and four quarts of thefe little figs. When a fufficient quantity is prepared, the leaves of the Etou are well wetted in it, and then laid upon a plantain leaf, where they are turned about till they become more and more flaccid, and then they are gently fqueezed, gradually increafing the preffure, but fo as not to break them; as the flaccidity increafes, and they become fpungy, they are fupplied with more of the liquor ; in about five minutes the colour begins to appear upon the veins of the leaves, and in about ten or a little more, they are perfectly faturated with it: they are then fqucezed, with as much force as can be applicd, and the liquor ftrained at the fame time that it is expreffed.

For this purpofe, the boys prepare a large quantity of the Moo, by drawing it between their teeth, or two little fticks, till it is freed from the green bark and the branny fubfance
that lies under it, and a thin web of the fibres only remains; in this the leaves of the Etou are inveloped, and through thefe the juice which they contain is ftrained as it is forced out. As the leaves are not fucculent, little more juice is preffed out of them than they have imbibed: when they have been once emptied, they are filled again, and again preffed till the quality which tinctures the liquor as it paffes through them is exhaufted, they are then thrown away; but the Mon, being deeply ftained with the colour, is preferved, as a brufh to lay the dye upon the cloth.

The expreffed liquor is always received into fmall cups made of the plantain leaf, whether from a notion that it has any quality favourable to the colour, or from the facility with which it is procured, and the convenience of fmall veffels to diftribute it among the artificers, I do not know.

Of the thin cloth they feldom dye more than the edges, but the thick cloth is coloured through the whole furface; the liquor is indeed ufed rather as a pigment than a dye, for a coat of it is laid upon one fide only, with the fibres of the Moo; and though I have feen of the thin cloth that has appeared to have been foaked in the liquor, the colour has not had the fame richnefs and luftre, as when it has been applied in the other manner.

Though the leaf of the Etou is generally ufed in this procefs, and probably produces the fineft colour; yet the juice of the figs will produce a red by a mixture with the fpecies of Tournefortia, which they call Tabeinoo, the Pobuc, the Eurbe or Convolvulus Brafilienfis, and a fpecies of Solanum called Ebooa; from the ufe of thefe different plants, or from different proportions of the materials, many varieties are obobfervable in the colours of their cloth, forme of which are confpicuoully fuperior to others.

## IIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. The beauty, however, of the beft is not permanent; but it is probable that fome method might be found to fix it, if proper experiments were made, and perhaps to fearch for latent qualities, which may be brought out by the mixture of one vegetable juice with another, would not be an unprofitable employment: our prefent moft valuable dyes afford fufficient encouragement to the attempt; for by the mere infpection of indico, woad, dyer's weed, and moft of the leaves which are ufed for the like purpofes, the colours which they yield could never be difcovered. Of this Indian red I fhall only add, that the women who have been employed in preparing or ufing it, carefully preferve the colour upon their fingers and nails, where it appears in its utmoft beauty, as a great ornament.

The yellow is made of the bark of the root of the Morinda citrifolia, called Nono, by fcraping and infufing it in water; after ftanding fome time, the water is ftrained and ufed as a dye, the cloth being dipped into it. The Morinda, of which this is a fpecies, feems to be a good fubject for examination with a view to dyeing. Brown, in his hiftory of Jamaica, mentions three fpecies of it, which he fays are ufed to dye brown; and Rumphius fays of the Bancuda Ausufifolia, which is nearly allied to our Nono, that it is ufed by the inhabitants of the Eaft-Indian iflands, as a fixing drug for red colours, with which it particularly agrees.

The inhabitants of this inland alfo dye yellow with the fruit of the Tamanu; but how the colour is extracted, we had no opportunity to difcover. They have alfo a preparation with which they die brown and black; but thefe colours are fo indifferent, that the method of preparing them did not excite our curiofity.

Another confiderable manufacture is matting of various kinds; fome of which is finer, and better in every refpect, than any we have in Europe: the coarfer fort ferves them to fleep upon, and the finer to wear in wet weather. With the fine, of which there are alfo two forts, much pains is taken, efpecially with that made of the bark of the Poerou, the Hibifcus tiliaceus of Linnxus, fome of which is as fine as a coarfe cloth: the other fort, which is fill more beautiful, they call Vanne; it is white, gloffy, and fhining, and is made of the leaves of their Wharrou, a fpecies of the Pandanus, of which we had no opportunity to fee either the flowers or fruit: they have other matts, or as they call them Moeas, to fit or to fleep upon, which are formed of a great varicty of rufhes and grafs, and which they make, as they do every thing elfe that is plaited, with amazing facility and difpatch.

They are alfo very dexterous in making baiket and wickerwork; their bafkets are of a thoufand different patterns, many of them exceedingly neat; and the making them is an art that every one practifes, both men and women : they make occafional bafkets and panniers of the cocoa-nut leaf in a few minutes, and the women who vifited us carly in a morning ufed to fend, as foon as the fun was high, for a few of the leaves, of which they made littic bonnets to fhade their faces, at fo fmall an expence of time and trouble, that, when the fun was again low in the evening, they ufed to throw them away. Thefe bonnets, however, did not cover the head, but confifted only of a band that went round $i_{2}$ and a fhade that projected from the forehead.

Of the bark of the Poerou they make ropes and lines, from the thicknefs of an inch to the fize of a fmall packthread: Yol. II. Ff
with
1769.
-

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

${ }^{1769 .}$, with thefe they make nets for fifhing: of the fibres of the cocoa-nut they make thread, for faftening together the feveral parts of their canoes, and belts, either round or flat, twifted or plaited; and of the bark of the Erowa, a kind of nettle which grows in the mountains, and is therefore rather farce, they make the beff fifhing lines in the world: with thefe they hold the ftrongeft and moft active fifh, fuch as Bonetas and Albicores, which would fnap our ftrongeft filk lines in a minute, though they are twice as thick.

They make alfo a kind of feine, of a coarfe broad grafs, the blades of which are like flags: thefe they twift and tie together in a loofe manner, till the net, which is about as wide as a large fack, is from fixty to eighty fathom long: this they haul in fhoal fmooth water, and its own weight keeps it fo clofe to the ground that fcarcely a fingle fifh can efcape.

In every expedient, indeed, for taking fifh, they are exceedingly ingenious; they make harpoons of cane, and point them with hard wood, which in their hands frike fifh more effectually, than thofe which are headed with iron can do in ours, fetting afide the advantage of ours being faftened to a line, fo that the filh is fecured if the hook takes place, shough it does not mortally wound him.

Of fifh-hooks they have two forts, admirably adapted in their conftruction as well to the purpofe they are to anfwer ${ }_{2}$. as to the materials of which they are made. One of thefe, which they call Wittee Wittee, is ufed for towing. The fhank is made of mother of pearl, the moft gloffy that can be got: the infide, which is naturally the brighteft, is put behind. To thefe hooks a tuft of white dog's or hog's hair is fixed, fo as fomewhat to refemble the tail of a fifh; thefe implements, there-
fore, are both hook and bait, and are ufed with a rod of bamboo, and line of Erowa. The fifher, to fecure his fuccefs, watches the flight of the birds which conftantly attend the Bonetas when they fwim in fhoals, by which he directs his canoe, and when he has the advantage of thefe guides, he feldom returns without a prize.

The other kind of hook is alfo made of mother of pearl, or fome other hard fhell: they cannot make them bearded like our hooks; but to effect the fame purpofe, they make the point turn inwards. Thefe are made of all fizes, and ufed to catch various kinds of fifh, with great fuccefs. The manner of making them is very fimple, and every fifherman is his own artificer: the fhell is firt cut into fquare pieces, by the edge of another Shell, and wrought into a form correfponding with the outline of the hook by pieces of coral, which are fufficiently rough to perform the office of a file; a hole is then bored in the middle, the drill being no other than the firft fone they pick up that has a fharp corner : this they fix into the end of a piece of bamboo, and turn it between the hands like a chocolare mill; when the fhell is perforated, and the hole fufficiently wide, a fmall file of coral is introduced, by the application of which the hook is in a fhort time completed, few cofting the artificer more time than a quarter of an hour.

Of their mafonry, carving, and architecture, the Reader has already formed fome idea from the account that has been given of the Morais, or repofitories of the dead: the other moft important article of building and carving is their boats; Boatso and perhaps, to fabricate one of their principal veffels with their tools, is as great a work, as to build a Britifh man of war with ours.
1769. They have an adze of ftone; a chiffel, or gouge, of bone, generally that of a man's arm between the wrift and elbow; a rafp of coral; and the fkin of a fling-ray, with coral fand; as a file or polifher.

This is a complete catalogue of their tools, and with thefe they build houfes, conftruct canoes, hew ftone, and fell, cleave, carve, and polifh timber.

The ftone which makes the blade of their adzes is a kind of Bafaltes, of a blackifh or grey colour, not very hard, but of confiderable toughnefs: they are formed of different fizes; fome, that are intended for felling, weigh from fix to eight pounds; others, that are ufed for carving, not more than fo many ounces; but it is neceffary to fharpen both almoft every minute; for which purpofe, a ftone and a cocoa-nut fhell full of water are always at hand.

Their greateft exploit, to which thefe tools are lefs equal than to any other, is felling a tree : this requires many hands, and the conftant labour of feveral days. When it is down, they fplit it, with the grain, into planks from three to four inches thick, the whole length and breadth of the tree, many of which are eight feet in the girt, and forty to the branches, and nearly of the fame thicknefs throughout. The tree generally ufed is in their language called Avie, the ftem of which is tall and ftrait; though fome of the fmaller boats are made of the bread-fruit tree, which is a light fpongy wood, and cafily wrought. They fmooth the plank very expeditioufly and dexteronfly with their adzes, and can take off a thin coat from a whole plank without miffing a froke. As they have not the art of warping a plank, every part of she canoe, whether hollow or flat, is haped by hand.

The canoes, or boats, which are ufed by the inhabitants of this and the neighbouring iflands, may be divided into two general claffes; one of which they call Ivababs, the other Pabies.
The Ivahah is ufed for fhort excurfions to fea, and is wallfided and flat-bottomed ; the Pahie for longer voyages, and is bow-fided and fharp-bottomed. The Ivahahs are all of thefame figure, but of different fizes, and ufed for different purpofes: their length is from feventy-two fect to ten, but the breadth is by no means in proportion; for thofe of ten feet are about a foot wide, and thofe of more than feventy are fcarcely two. There is the fighting Ivahah, the fifhing Ivahah, and the travelling Ivahah; for fome of thefe go from one iffand to another. The fighting Ivahah is by far the longeit, and the head and ftern are confiderably raifed above the body, in a femicircular form; particularly the ftern, which is fometimes feventeen or eighteen feet high, though the boat itfelf is fcarcely three. Thefe never go to fea fingle ; but are faftened together, fide by fide, at the diffance of about three feet, by ftrong poles of wood, which are laid acrofs them and lafhed to the gunwales. Upon thefe, in the fore-part, a flage or platform is raifed, about ten or twelve feet long, and fomewhat wider than the boats, which is fupported by pillars about fix feet high : upon this flage fland the fighting men, whofe miffile weapons are flings and fpears; for, among other fingularities in the manners of there people, their bows and arrows are ufed only for diverfion, as we throw quoits: below thefe flages fit the rowers, who receive from them thofe that are wounded, and furnifh frefh men to afcend in their room. Some of thefe have a platform of bamboos or other light wood, through their whole length, and confiderably broader, by means of which they will carry

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

r769., a great number of men; but we faw only one fitted in this manner.
The fifhing Ivahahs vary in length from about forty feet to the fmalleft fize, which is about ten; all that are of the length of twenty-five feet and upwards, of whatever fort, occafionally carry fail. The travelling Ivahah is always double, and furnifhed with a fmall neat houfe about five or fix feet broad, and fix or feven feet long, which is faftened upon the fore-part for the convenience of the principal people, who fit in them by day, and fleep in them at night. The fifhing Ivahahs are fometimes joined together, and have a houfe on board; but this is not common.

Thofe which are fhorter than five and twenty feet, feldom or never carry fail ; and, though the ftern rifes about four or five feet, have a flat head, and a board that projects forward about four feet.
The Pahie is alfo of different fizes, from fisty to thirty feet long; but, like the Ivahah, is very narrow. One that I meafured was fifty-one feet long, and only one foot and a half wide at the top. In the wideft part, it was about three feet; and this is the general proportion. It does not, however, widen by a gradual fwell; but the fides being ftrait, and paraliel, for a little way below the gunwale, it fwells abruptly, and draws to a ridge at the bottom ; fo that a tranfverfe fection of it has fomewhat the appearance of the mark upon cards called a Spade, the whole being much wider in proportion to ins length. Thefe, like the largeft Ivahahs, are ufed for fighting; but principally for long voyages. The fighting Pahie, which is the largeft, is fitted with the ftage or platform, which is proportionably larger than thofe of the Ivahah, as their form enables them to fuftain a much greater weight. Thofe that are ufed for failing are generally double; and the middle
fize are faid to be the beft fea-boats. They are fometimes out a month together, going from ifland to ifland; and fometimes, as we were credibly informed, they are a fortnight or twenty days at fea, and could kcep it longer if they had more ftowage for provifions, and conveniencies to hold frefh water.

When any of thefe boats carry fail fingle, they make ufe of a log of wood which is faftened to the end of two poles that lie crofs the veffel, and project from fix to ten feet, according to the fize of the veffel, beyond its fide, fomewhat like what is ufed by the flying Proa of the Ladrone Iflands, and called in the Account of Lord Anfon's Voyage, an Outsigger. To this outrigger the fhrouds are faftened, and it is effentially neceffary in trimming the boat when it blows frefh.

Some of them have one maft, and fome two; they are made of a fingle ftick, and when the length of the canoe is thirty feet, that of the maft is fomewhat lefs than five and twenty; it is fixed to a frame that is above the canoe, and receives a fail of matting about one third longer than itfelf: the fail is pointed at the top, fquare at the bottom, and curyed at the fide ; fomewhat refembling what we call a fhoulder of mutton fail, and ufe for boats belonging to men of war: it is placed in a frame of wood, which furrounds it on: every fide, and has no contrivance either for reefing or furling; fo that, if either fhould become neceffary, it muft be cut away, which, however, in thefe equal climates can feldom happen. At the top of the maft are faftened ornaments of feathers, which are placed inclining obliquely forwards; the fhape and pofition of which will be conceived at once from the figure, in one of the cuts.
1769. The oars or paddles that are ufed with thefe boats, have a long handle and a flat blade, not unlike a baker's peel. Of thefe every perfon in the boat has one, except thofe that fit under the awning; and they pufh her forward with them at a good rate. Thefe boats, however, admit fo much water at the feams, that one perfon at leaft is continually employed in throwing it out. The only thing in which they excel is landing, and putting off from the fhore in a furf: by their great length and high fterns they land dry, when our boats could fcarcely land at all; and have the fame advantages in putting off by the height of the head.

The Ivahahs are the only boats that are ufed by the inhabitants of Otaheite; but we faw feveral Pahies that came from other iflands. Of one of thefe I fhall give the exact dimenfions from a careful admeafurement, and then particularly deferibe the manner in which they are built.


To illuftrate my defeription of the manner in which thefe veffels are built, it will be necelfary to refer to the figure; in which $a \operatorname{a}$ is the firft feam, $b 6$ the fecond, and $c c$ the third.


The firft ftage or keel, under $a a$, is made of a tree hollowed out like a trough; for which the longeft trees are chofen that can be got, fo that there are never more than three in the whole length : the next flage, under $b b$, is formed of ftrait plank, about four feet long, fifteen inches broad, and two inches thick : the third ftage, under $c c$, is, like the bottom made of trunks, hollowed into its bilging form; the laft is alfo cut out of trunks, fo that the moulding is of one piece with the upright. To form thefe parts feparately, without faw, plane, chiffel, or any other iron tool, may well be thought no eafy tafk; but the great difficulty is to join them together.

When all the parts are prepared, the keel is laid upon blocks, and the planks being fupported by fanchions, are fewed or clamped together with flrong thongs of plaiting, which are paffed feveral times through holes that are bored with a gouge or auger of bone, that has been defcribed already; and the nicety with which this is done, may be inferred from their being fufficiently water-tight for ufe without caulking. As the plaiting foon rots in the water, it is renewed at leaft once a-year ; in order to which, the veffel is taken entirely to pieces. The head and ftern are rude with refpect to the defign; but very neatly finifhed, and polifhed to the higheit degree.

Thefe Pahies are kept with great care, in a kind of houfe built on purpofe for their reception; the houfes are formed of poles fet upright in the ground, the tops of which Vol. II.
1769. are drawn towards each other, and faftened together with their ftrongeft cord, fo as to form a kind of Gothic arch, which is completely thatched quite to the ground, being open only at the ends; they are fometimes fifty or fixty paces long.

As connected with the navigation of thefe people, I fhall mention their wonderful fagacity in foretelling the weather, at leaft the quarter from which the wind fhall blow at a future time; they have feveral ways of doing this, of which however I know but one. They fay, that the Milky-way is always curved laterally; but fometimes in one direction, and fometimes in another: and that this curvature is the effect of its being already acted upon by the wind, and its hollow part therefore towards it ; fo that, if the fame curvature continues a night, a correfponding wind certainly blows the next day. Of their rules, I fhall not pretend to judge; but I know that, by whatever means, they can predict the weather, at leaft the wind, with much greater certainty than we can.

In their longer voyages, they fteer by the fun in the day, and in the night by the fars; all of which they diftinguifh feparately by names, and know in what part of the heavens they will appear in any of the months during which they are vifible in their horizon; they alfo know the time of their annual appearing and difappearing with more precifion than will eafily be believed by an European aftronomer.

CHAP.

## C H A P. XIX.

> Of the Divifon of Time in Otabeite; Numeration, Connputation of Diftance, Langruage, Dijeafes, Difpofal of the Dead, Religion, War, Weapons, and Government; with fome general Obfervations for the Ufe of future Navigators.

WE were not able to acquire a perfect idea of their method of dividing time ; but obferved, that in
1769.

Time. fpeaking of it, either paft or to come, they never ufed any term but Malanna, which fignifies Moon. Of thefe moons they count thirtcen, and then begin again; which is a demonftration that they have a notion of the folar year: but how they compute their months fo that thirteen of them fhall be commenfurate with the year, we could not difcover; for they fay that each month has twenty-nine days, including one in which the moon is not vifible. They have names for them feparately, and have frequently told us the fruits that would be in feafon, and the weather that would prevail, in each of them; and they have indecd a name for them collectively, though they ufe it only when they fpeak of the myfteries of their religion.
Every day is fubdivided into twelve parts, each of two hours, of which fix belong to the day, and fix to the night. At thefe divifions they guefs pretty nearly by the height of the fun while he is above the horizon; but there are few of them that can guefs at them, when he is below it, by the ftars.

$$
\text { Gg } 2
$$

1769. In numeration they proceed from one to ten, the number of fingers on both hands; and though they have for each number a different name, they generally take hold of their fingers one by one, fhifting from one hand to the other till they come to the number they want to exprefs. And in other inftances, we obferved that, when they were converfing with each other, they joined figns to their words, which were fo expreffive that a ftranger might eafily apprehend their meaning.

In counting from ten they repeat the name of that number, and add the word more; ten, and one more, is eleven; ten, and two more, twelve ; and fo of the reft, as we fay one and twenty, two and twenty. When they come to ten and ten more, they have a new denomination, as we fay a fcore; and by thefe fcores they count till they get ten of them, when they have a denomination for two hundred; and we never could difcover that they had any denomination to exprefs a greater number: neither, indeed, do they feem to want any; for ten of thefe amount to two thoufand, a greater number than they can ever apply.

In meafuring diftance they are much more deficient than in computing numbers, having but one term which anfwers to fathom; when they fpeak of diftances from place to place, they exprefs it, like the Afiatics, by the time that is required to pafs it.

Their language is foft and melodious; it abounds with vowels, and we eafily learnt to pronounce it: but found it exceedingly difficult to teach them to pronounce a fingle word of ours; probably not only from its abounding in confonants, but from fome peculiarity in its ftructure ; for Spanifh and Italian words, if ending in a vowel, they pronounced with great facility.

Whether it is copious, we were not fufficiently acquainted with it to know ; but it is certainly very imperfect, for it is almoft totally without inflexion, both of nouns and verbs. Few of the nouns have more than one cafe, and few of the verbs more than one tenfe ; yet we found no great difficulty in making ourfelves mutually underfood, however ftrange it may appear in fpeculation.

They have, however, certain affixa, which, though but few in number, are very ufeful to them, and puzzled us extremely. One aflis another, Harre bea? "Whare are you " going ?" the other anfwers Ivabinera, " To my wives;" upon which the firf repeating the anfwer interrogatively, "To your wives ?" is anfwered, Ivabinereira; "Yes, I am going "to my wives." Here the fuffixa era and eira fave feveral words to both parties.

I have inferted a few of their words, from which perhaps fome idea may be formed of the language.

Pupo,
Ahewh,
Roourou,
Outou,
Niheo,
Arrero,
Meu-eumi,
Tiarraboa,
Tuamo,
Tuah,
Oama,
Eu ,
Oboo,
Rema,
the bead. Oporema,
the nofe. Manneow, the fingers.
the bair. Mieu,
the mouth. Touhe, the teeth. Hoouhah,
the tongue. Avia,
the beard. Tapoa,
the throat. Booa,
the Joulders. Moa,
the back. Euree,
the breaft. Eure-eure,
the nipples. Ooroo,
the belly. Hearce, the arm. Mia,
1769.


Among people whofe food is fo fimple, and who in general are feldom drunk, it is fcarcely neceffary to fay, that there are but few difeafes; we faw no critical difeafe during err ftay upon the ifland, and but few inftances of ficknefs, which were accidental fits of the colic. The natives, howcver, are afflicted with the eryfipelas, and cutancous eruptions of the fcaly kind, very nearly approaching to a leprofy. Thofe in whom this diftemper was far advanced, lived in a flate of feclufion from all fociety, each in a fmall houfe built upon fome unfrequented fpot, where they were fupplied with provifions: but whether they had any hope of relief, or languifhed out the remainder of their lives in folitude and defpair, we could not learn. We obferved alfo a few who had ulcers upon different parts of their bodies, fome of which had a very virulent appearance ; yet they feemed not much to be regarded by thofe who were afflicted with them, for they were left intirely without application even to kcep off the flies.

Where intemperance produces no difeafes, there will be no phyficians by profeffion; yet where there is fufferance, there will always be attempts to relieve; and where the caufe of the mifchief and the remedy are alike unknown, thefe will naturally be directed by fuperftition: thus it happens, that in this country, and in all others which are not further injured by luxury, or improved by knowlege, the management of the fick falls to the lot of the prieft. The method of cure that is practifed by the priells of Otaheite, confifts chiefly ofprayers and ceremonies. When he vifits his patient he repeats certain fentences, which appear to be fet forms contrived for the occafion, and at the fame time plaits the leaves of the cocoa-nut into different figures very neatly; fome of thefe he faftens to the fingers and toes of the fick,
and often leaves behind him a few branches of the thefpecia populnea, which they call $E^{\prime}$ midho: thefe ceremonies are repeated till the patient recovers or dies. If he recovers, they fay the remedies cured him, if he dies, they fay the difeafe was incurable, in which perhaps they do not much differ from the cuftom of other countries.

If we had judged of their fkill in furgery from the dreadful fcars which we fometimes faw, we fhould have fuppofed it to be much fuperior to the art not only of their phyficians, but of ours. We faw one man whofe face was almoft intirely deftroyed, his nofe, including the bone, was perfectly flat, and one cheek and one eye were fo beaten in, that the hollow would almoft receive a man's fift, yet no ulcer remained; and our companion, Tupia, had been pierced quite through his body by a fpear headed with the bone of the fting-ray, the weapon having entered his back, and come out juft under his breaft; but except in reducing diflocations and fractures, the beft furgeon can contribute very little to the cure of a wound; the blood itfelf is the beft vulnerary balfam, and when the juices of the body are pure, and the patient is temperate, nothing more is neceffary as an aid to Nature in the cure of the worft wound, than the keeping it clean.

Their commerce with the inhabitants of Europe has, however, already entailed upon them that dreadful curfe which avenged the inhumanities committed by the Spaniards in America, the vencreal difeafe. As it is certain that no European veffel befides our own, except the Dolphin, and the two that were under the command of Monf. Bougainville, ever vifited this ifland, it muft have been brought either by one of them or by us. That it was not brought by the Dolphin, Captain Wallis has demonftrated in the account of her
voyage, [vol.I. p. 489, 490.] and nothing is more certain than that when we arrived it had made moft dreadful ravages in the ifland. One of our people contracted it within five days after we went on hore, and by the enquiries among the natives, which this occafioned, we learnt, when we came to underfand a little of their language, that it had been brought by the verfels which had been there about fifteen months before us, and had lain on the eaft fide of the ifland. They diftinguifhed it by a name of the fame import with rottcnnefs, but of a more extenfive fignification, and slefcribed, in the moft pathetic terms, the fufferings of the firt victims to its rage, and told us that it caufed the hair and the nails to fall off, and the flefh to rot from the bones: that it fpread a univerfal terror and confternation among them, fo that the fick were abandoned by their neareft relations, left the calamity fhould fpread by contagion, and left to perifh alone in fuch mifery as till then had never been known among them. We had fome reafon, however, to hope that they had found out a fpecific to cure it: during our flay upon the inland we faw none in whom it had made a great progrefs, and one who went from us infected, returned after a fhort time in perfect health; and by this it appeared either that the difeafe had cured itfelf, or that they were not unacquainted with the virtucs of fimples, nor implicit dupes to the fuperflitious follies of their priefts. We endcavoured to learn the medical qualities which they imputed to their plants, but our knowlege of their language was too imperfect for us to fucceed. If we could have learnt their fpecific for the venereal difeafe, if fuch they have, it would have been of great advantage to us, for when we left the iीland it had been contracted by more than half the people on board the fhip.

It is impoffible but that, in relating incidents, many particulars with refpect to the cuthoms, opinions, and works of Vol. II.

H h
there

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. 

Difpofal of Dead.
there people should be anticipated; to avoid repetition, therefore, I fall only fupply deficiencies. Of the manner of difpofing of their dead, much has been fail already. I mut more explicitly obferve that there are two places in which the dead are depofited; one a kind of fled, where the flesh is fuffered to putrefy; the other an enclofure, with erections of fine, where the bones are afterwards buried: The feds are called Tupapow, and the enclofures Moral: The Morals are alfo places of worhip.
As foo as a native of Otaheite is known to be dead, the house is filled with relations, who deplore their lofs, forme by loud lamentations, and forme by left clamorous, but more genuine expreffions of grief. Thole who are in the neareft degree of kindred, and are really affected by the event, are filent; the reft are one moment uttering paffionate exclamatons in a chorus, and the next laughing and talking without the leaf appearance of concern. In this manner the remainer of the day on which they affemble is f pent, and all the fucceeding night. On the next morning the body is fhrouded in their cloth, and conveyed to the fa fide upon a bier, which the bearers fupport upon their fhoulders, attended by the pricft, who having prayed over the body, repears his fentences during the proceffion: when it arrives at the water's edge, it is fer down upon the beach; the prieft renews his prayers, and taking up forme of the water in his hands, fprinkles it towards the body, but not upon it. It is then carried back forty or fifty yards, and foo after brought again to the beach, where the prayers and fprinkling are repeated: it is thus removed backwards and forwards feveral times, and while there ceremonies have been performing a houfe has been built, and a fall face of ground railed in. In the center of this houfe, or Tupapow, pots are fer up to fupport the bier, which is at length conveyed thither, and placed


Wh.Woollett sculp.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

${ }^{1769 .}$ thefe people fhould be anticipated; to avoid repetition, Dead. therefore, I thall only fupply deficiencies. Of the manner of difpofing of their dead, much has been faid already. I muft more explicitly obferve that there are two places in which the dead are depofited; one a kind of fhed, where the flefh is fuffered to putrefy; the other an enclofure, with erections of ftone, where the bones are afterwards buried. The fheds are called Tupapow, and the enclofures Morai: The Morais are alfo places of worfhip.

As foon as a native of Otaheite is known to be dead, the houfe is flled with relations, who deplore their lofs, fome by loud lamentations, and fome by lefs clamorous, but more genuine expreffions of grief. Thofe who are in the neareft degree of kindred, and are really affected by the event, are filent; the reft are one moment uttering paffionate exclamations in a chorus, and the next laughing and talking without the leaft appearance of concern. In this manner the remainder of the day on which they affemble is fpent, and all the fucceeding night. On the next morning the body is fhrouded in their cloth, and conveyed to the fea fide upon a bier, which the bearers fupport upon their fhoulders, attended by the pricft, who having prayed over the body, repeats his fentences during the proceffion: when it arrives at the water's edge, it is fet down upon the beach; the prieft renews his prayers, and taking up fome of the water in his hands, fprinkles it towards the body, but not upon it. It is then carried back forty or fifty yards, and foon after brought again to the beach, where the prayers and fprinkling are repeated: it is thus removed backwards and forwards feveral times, and while thefe ceremonies have been performing a houfe has been built, and a fmall fpace of ground railed in. In the center of this houfe, or Tupapow, pofs are fet up to fupport the bier, which is at length conveyed thither, and placed

placed upon it, and here the body remains to putrify till the flefh is wholly wafted from the bones.
Thefe houfes of corruption are of a fize proportioned to the rank of the perfon whofe body they are to contain; thofe allotted to the lower clafs are juft fufficient to cover the bier, and have no railing round them. The largeft we ever faw was eleven yards long, and fuch as thefe are ornamented according to the abilities and inclination of the furviving kindred, who never fail to lay a profufion of good cloth about the body, and fometimes almoft cover the outfide of the houfe. Garlands of the fruit of the palm-nut or pandamus, and cocoa leaves, twifted by the priefts in myfterious knots, with a plant called by them Ethee no Morai, which is particularly confecrated to funereal folemnities, are depofited about the place; provifion and water are alfo left at a little diftance, of which, and of other decorations, a more particular defcription has been given already.

As foon as the body is depofited in the Tupapow, the mourning is renewed. The women affemble, and are led to the door by the neareft relation, who ftrikes a fhark's tooth feveral times into the crown of her head: the blood copioully follows, and is carefully received upon pieces of linen, which are thrown under the bier. The reft of the women follow this example, and the ceremony is repeated at the interval of two or three days, as long as the zeal and forrow of the partics hold out. The tears alfo which are fhed upon thefe occafions, are received upon pieces of cloth, and offered as oblations to the dead : fome of the younger people cut off their hair, and that is thrown under the bier with the other offerings. This cuftom is founded upon a notion that the foul of the deceafed, which they believe to exift in a feparate flate, is hovering about the place where

1769: the body is depofited : that it obferves the actions of the furvivors, and is gratified by fuch teftimonies of their affection and grief.

Two or three days after thefe ceremonies have been commenced by the women, during which the men feem to be wholly infenfible of their lofs, they alfo begin to perform their part. The neareft relations take it in turn to affume the drefs, and perform the office which have already been particularly defcribed in the account of Tubourai Tamaide's having acted as chief mourner to an old woman, his relation, who died while we were in the ifland. One part of the ceremony, however, which accounts for the running away of the people as foon as this proceffion is in fight, has not been mentioned. The chief mourner carries in his hand a long flat flick, the edge of which is fet with fhark's teeth, and in a phrenzy, which his grief is fuppofed to have infpired, he runs at all he fees, and if any of them happen to be overtaken, he ftrikes them moft unmercifully with this indented cudgel, which cannot fail to wound them in a dangerous manner.

Thefe proceffions continue at certain intervals for five moons, but are lefs and lefs frequent, by a gradual diminution, as the end of that time approaches. When it is expired, what remains of the body is taken down from the bier, and the bones having been fcraped and wafhed very clean, are buried, according to the rank of the perfon, either within or without a Morai: if the deceafed was an Earee, or Chief, his fkull is not buried with the reft of the bones, but is wrapped up in fine cloth, and put in a kind of box made for that purpofe, which is alfo placed in the Morai. This coffer is called Ewharre no te Orometua, the houfe of a teacher or mafter. After this the mourning ceafes, except fome of
the women continue to be really aflicted for the lofs, and in that cafe they will fometimes fuddenly wound themfelves with the fhark's tooth wherever they happen to be: this perhaps will account for the paffion of grief in which Terapo wounded herfelf at the fort; fome accidental circumftance might forcibly revive the remembrance of a friend or relation whom the had loft, with a pungency of regret and tendernefs which forced a vent by tears, and prompted her toa repetition of the funcreal rite.

The ceremonies, however, do not ceafe with the mourning: prayers are ftill faid by the prieft, who is well paid by the furviving relations, and offerings made at the MoraiSome of the things, which from time to time are depofited there, are emblematical: a young plantain reprefents the deceafed, and the bunch of feathers the deity who is invoked. The prieft places himfelf over-againft the fymbol of the God; accompanied by fome of the relations, who are furnifhed with a fmall offering, and repeats his oraifon in a fet form, confifting of feparate fentences; at the fame time weaving the leaves of the cocoa-nut into different forms, which he afterwards depofits upon the ground where the bones have been interred; the deity is then addreffed by a fhrill fereech, which is ufed only upon that occafion. When the prieft retires, the tuft of feathers is removed, and the provifions left to putrify, or be devoured by the rats.

Of the religion of thefe people, we were not able to ac- Religion. quire any clear and confiftent knowlege: we found it like the religion of moft other countries, involved in myftery, and perplexed with apparent inconfiftences. The religious language is alfo here, as it is in China, different from that which is ufed in common; fo that Tupia, who took great pains to inftruct us, having no words to exprefs his mean-

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

$\underbrace{1769 .}$ ing which we underfoot, gave us lectures to very little purpofe: what we learnt, however, I will relate with as much perfpicuity as I can.

Nothing is more obvious to a rational being, however innorant or ftupid, than that the univerfe and its various parts, as far as they fall under his notice, were produced by forme agent inconceivably more powerful than himfelf; and nothing is more difficult to be conceived, even by the mot fagracious and knowing, than the production of them from nothing, which among us is expreffed by the word Creation. It is natural therefore, as no Being apparently capable of producing the univerfe is to be feen, that he should be fuppofed to refide in forme diftant part of it, or to be in his. nature invifible, and that he fhould have originally produced all that now exifts in a manner fimilar to that in which nature is renovated by the fucceflion of one generaton to another; but the idea of procreation includes in it that of two perfons, and from the conjunction of two perfons there people imagine every thing in the univerfe either originally or derivatively to proceed.

The Supreme Deity, one of the fe two firft beings, they call Taroatainetoomoo, and the other, whom they fuppofe to have been a rock, Tepapa. A daughter of the fe was Tettowmatatayo, the year, or thirteen months collectively, which they never name but upon this occafion, and the, by the common father, produced the months, and the months, by conjunction with each other, the days: the ftars they fuppofe partly to be the immediate offspring of the firft pair, and partly to have increafed among themfelves; and they have the fame notion with refpect to the different fpecies of plants. Among other progeny of Taroataihetoomoo and Tepapa, they fuppofe an inferior race of deities whom they call

Eatuas. Two of thefe Eatuas, they fay, at fome remote period of time, inhabited the earth, and were the parents of the firt man. When this man, their common anceftor, was born, they fay that he was round like a ball, but that his mother, with great care, drew out his limbs, and having at length moulded him into his prefent form, fhe called him Еотне, which fignifies fini/bed. That being prompted by the univerfal inftinct to propagate his kind, and being able to find no female but his mother, he begot upon her a daughter, and upon the daughter other daughters for feveral generations, before there was a fon; a fon, however, being at length born, he, by the affiftance of his fifters, peopled the world.

Befides their daughterTettowmatatayo, the firft progenitors of nature had a fon whom they called Tane. Taroataihetoomoo, the Supreme Deity, they emphatically file the caufer of earthquakes; but their prayers are more generally addreffed to Tane, whom they fuppofe to take a greater part. in the affairs of mankind.

Their fubordinate deities or Eatuas, which are numerous, are of both fexes: the male are worfhipped by the men, and the female by the women; and each have Morais to which the other fex is not admitted, though they have alfo Morais common to both. Men perform the office of prieft to both fexes, but each fex has its priefts, for thofe who officiate for one fex, do not officiate for the other.
They believe the immortality of the foul; at leaft its exiftence in a feparate flate, and that there are two fituations of different degrees of happinefs, fomewhat analogous to our heaven and hell: the fuperior fituation they call Tavirua l'erai, the other Tiaboboo. They do not, however, confider them as places of reward and punifhment,

## LIEUTENANT COOK'S VOYAGE

1,769: but as receptacles for different claffes; the firft, for their Chiefs and principal people, the other for thofe of inferior rank, for they do not fuppofe that their actions here in the leaf influence their future fate, or indced that they come under the cognizance of their deities at all. Their religion, therefore, if it has no influence upon their morals, is at leaft difinterefted; and their expreffions of adoration and reverence, whether by words or actions, arife only from a humble fenfe of their own inferiority, and the ineffable excellence of divine perfection.

The character of the prieft or Tahowa, is hereditary: the clafs is numerous, and confifts of all ranks of people; the chief, however, is generally the younger brother of a good family, and is refpected in a degree next to their kings. Of the little knowlege that is poffeffed in this country, the priefts have the greateft fhare ; but it confifts principally in an acquaintance with the names and ranks of the different Eatuas or fubordinate divinities, and the opinions concerning the origin of things, which have been traditionally preferved among the order in detached fentences, of which fome will repeat an incredible number, though but very few of the words that are ufed in their common dialect occur in them.

The priefts, however, are fuperior to the reft of the people in the knowlege of navigation and aftronomy, and indeed the name Tahowa fignifies nothing more than a man of knowlege. As there are priefts of every clafs, they officiate only among that clafs to which they belong: the prieft of the inferior clafs is never called upon by thofe of fuperior rank, nor will the prieft of the fuperior rank officiate for any of the inferior clafs.

Marriage in this ifland, as appeared to us, is nothing more than an agreement between the man and woman, with which
which the prieft has no concern. Where it is contracted it appears to be pretty well kept, though fometimes the parties feparate by mutual confent, and in that cafe a divorce takes place with as little trouble as the marriage.

But though the priefthood has laid the people under no tax for a nuptial benediction, there are two operations which it has appropriated, and from which it derives confiderable advantages. One is tattowing, and the other circumcifion, though neither of them have any connexion with religion. The tattowing has been defcribed already. Circumcifion has been adopted merely from motives of cleanlinefs; it cannot indeed properly be called circumcifion, becaufe the prepuce is not mutilated by a circular wound, but only flit through the upper part to prevent its contracting over the glans. As neither of thefe can be performed by any but a prieft, and as to be without either is the greateft difgrace, they may be confidered as a claim to furplice fees like our marriages and chriftenings, which are cheerfully and liberally paid, not according to any fettled ftipend, but the rank and abilities of the parties or their friends.

The Morai, as has already been obferved, is at once a burying ground and a place of worfhip, and in this particular our churches too much refemble it. The Indian, however, approaches his Morai with a reverence and humility that difgraces the chriftian, not becaufe he holds any thing facred that is there, but becaufe he there worfhips an invifible divinity, for whom, though he neither hopes for reward, nor fears punifhment, at his hand, he always expreffes the profoundeft homage and moft humble adoration. I have already given a very particular defcription both of the Morais and the altars that are placed near them. When an Indian is Vol. II.
about

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

${ }^{1769 .}$, about to worfhip at the Morai, or brings his offering to the altar, he always uncovers his body to the wafte, and his looks and attitude are fuch as fufficiently exprefs a correfponding difpofition of mind.

It did not appear to us that thefe people are, in any inflance, guilty of idolatry; at leaft they do not worfhip any thing that is the work of their hands, nor any vifible part of the creation. This ifland indeed, and the refl that lie near it, have a particular bird, fome a heron, and others a king's fifher, to which they pay a peculiar regard, and concerning which they have fome fuperftitious notions with refpect to good and bad fortune, as we have of the fwallow and robin-red-breaft, giving them the name of Eatua, and by no means killing or molefling them; yet they never addrefs a pecition to them, or approach them with any act of adoration.

Government. Though I dare not affert that thefe people, to whom the art of writing, and confequently the recording of laws; are utterly unknown, live under a regular form of government ; yet a fubordination is eflablifhed among them, that greatly refembles the early flate of every nation in Europe under the feudal fyftem, which fecured liberty in the moft licentious excefs to a few, and entailed the moft abject flavery upon the reft.

Their orders are, Earee rabie, which anfwers to king ; Earee, baron; Manabouni, vaffal; and Toutou, villain. The Earee rahie, of which there are two in this illand, one being the fovereign of each of the peninfulas of which it confifts, is treated with great refpect by all ranks, but did not appear to us to be invefted with fo much power as was exercifed by the Earees in their own diftricts; nor indeed did we, as I have before
before obferved, once fee the fovereign of Obereonoo, while we were in the ifland. The Eares are lords of one or more of the diftricts into which each of the peninfulas is divided, of which there may be about one hundred in the whole illand; and they parcel out their territories to the Manahounies, who cultivate each his part which he holds under the baron. The loweft clafs, called Toutous, feem to be nearly under the fame circumflances as the villains in feudal governments: thefe do all the laborious work, they cultivate the land under the Manahounies, who are only nominal cultivators for the lord, they fetch wood and water, and, under the direction of the miftrefs of the family, drefs the victuals; they alfo catch the fifh.

Each of the Earees keeps a kind of court, and has a great number of attendants, chiefly the younger brothers of their own tribe; and among thefe fome hold particular offices, but of what nature exactly we could not tell. One was called the Eorva no l'Earee, and another the Whanno no l'Earee, and thefe were frequently difpatched to us with meffages. Of all the courts of thefe Earees, that of Tootahah was the moft fplendid, as indeed might reafonably be expected, becaufe he adminiftered the government for Outou, his nephew, who was Earce rahie of Oberconoo, and lived upon his effate. The child of the baron or Earce, as well as of the fovereign or Earee rahie, fucceeds to the title and honours of the father as foon as it is born: fo that a baron, who was yeflerday called Earee, and was approached with the ceremony of lowering the garments, fo as to uncover the upper part of the body, is to-day, if his wife was latt night delivered of a child, reduced to the rank of a private man, all marks of refpect being transferred to the child, if it is fuffered to live,

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. though the father ftill continues poffeffor and adminiftrator of his eftate: probably this cuftom has its thare, among other inducements, in forming the focieties called Arreoy.

If a general attack happens to be made upon the ifland, every diftrict under the command of an Earee, is obliged to furnifh its proportion of foldiers for the common defence. The number furnifhed by the principal diftriets, which Tupia recollected, when added together, amounted, as I have obferved before, to fix thoufand fix hundred and eighty.

Upon fuch occafions, the united force of the whole ifland is commanded in chief by the Earee rahie. Private differences between two Earees, are decided by their own people, without at all difturbing the general tranquillity.
$W_{\text {eapons. }}$
Their weapons are flings, which they ufe with great dexterity, pikes headed with the flings of fling-rays, and clubs, of about fix or feven feet long, made of a very hard heavy wood. Thus armed, they are faid to fight with great obflinacy, which is the more likely to be true, as it is certain that they give no quarter to either man, woman, or child, who is fo unfortunate as to fall into their hands during the battle, or for fome hours afterwards, till their paffion, which is always violent, though not lafting, has fubfided.

The Earee rahie of Obereonoo, while we were here, was in perfect amity with the Earee rahie of Tiarreboo, the other peninfula, though he took himfelf the title of King of the whole ifland: this, however, produced no more jealoufy in the other fovereign, than the title of king of France, affumed by our fovereign, does in his moft Chriftian Majefty.

In a government fo rude, it cannot be expected that diftributive juftice fhould be regularly adminiftered, and indeed where
where there is fo little oppofition of intereft, in confequence of the facility with which every appetite and paffion is gratified, there can be but few crimes. There is nothing like money, the common medium by which every want and every wifh is fuppofed to be gratified by thofe who do not poffefs it ; there is no apparently permanent good which either fraud or force can unlawfully obtain; and when all the crimes that are committed by the inhabitants of civilized countries, to get money, are fet out of the account, not many will remain: add to this, that where the commerce with woman is reflrained by no law, men will feldom be under any temptation to commit adultery, efpecially as one woman is always lefs preferred to another, where they are lefs diftinguifhed by perfonal decorations, and the adventitious circumftances which are produced by the varieties of art, and the refinements of fentiment. That they are thieves is true; but as among thefe people no man can be much injured or benefited by theft, it is not neceffary to reftrain it by fuch punifhments, as in other countries are abfolutely neceffary to the very exiftence of civil fociety. Tupia, however, tells us, that adultery is fometimes committed as well as theft. In all cafes where an injury has been committed, the punifhment of the offender lies with the fufferer: adultery, if the parties are caught in the fact, is fometimes punifhed with death in the firft ardour of refentment; but without circumftances of immediate provocation, the female finner feldom fuffers more than a beating. As punifhment, however, is enforced by no law, nor taken into the hand of any magiffrate, it is not often inflicted, except the injured party is the ftrongeft ; though the Chiefs do fometimes punifh their immediate dependents, for faults committed againft each other, and even the dependents of others,
$\underbrace{1769 .}$ others, if they are accufed of any offence committed in their diftrict.

Having now given the beft defcription that I can of the ifland in its prefent ftate, and of the people, with their cuftoms and manners, language and arts, I thall only add a few general obfervations, which may be of ufe to future navigators, if any of the thips of Great Britain fhould receive orders to vifit it. As it produces nothing that appears to be convertible into an article of trade, and can be ufeful only by affording refrefhments to fhipping in their paffage through thefe feas, it might be made to anfwer this purpofe in a much greater degree, by tranfporting thither fheep, goats, and horned cattle, with European garden-ftuff, and other ufeful vegetables, which there is the greateft reafon to fuppofe will flourifl in fo fine a climate, and fo rich a foil.

Though this, and the neighbouring iflands lie within the tropick of Capricorn, yet the heat is not troublefome, nor did the winds blow conftantly from the eaft. We had frequently a frefh gale from the S. W. for two or three days, and fometimes, though very feldom, from the N. W. Tupia reported, that fouth wefterly winds prevail in October, November, and December, and we have no doubt of the faet. When the winds are variable, they are always accompanied by a fwell from the S. W. or W.S. W.; there is alfo a fwell from the fame points when it is calm, and the atmofphere loaded with clouds, which is a fure indication that the winds are variable, or wefterly out at fea, for with the fettled tradewind the weather is clear.

The meeting with wefterly winds, within the general limits of the eaftern trade, has induced fome navigators to fuppofe that they were near fome large track of land, of which, however, I think they are no indication.

## ROUND THE WORLD.

It has been found, both by us and the Dolphin, that the trade-wind, in thefe parts, does not extend farther to the fouth than twenty degrees, beyond which, we generally found a gale from the weftward; and it is reafonable to fuppofe, that when thefe winds blow ftrong, they will drive back the eafterly wind, and confequently incroach upon the limits within which they conftantly blow, and thus neceffarily produce variable winds, as either happens to prevail, and a fouth wefterly fwell. This fuppofition is the more probable, as it is well known that the trade-winds blow but faintly for fome diftance within their limits, and therefore may be more eafily ftopped or repelled by a wind in the contrary direction : it is alfo well known, that the limits of the trade-winds vary not only at different feafons of the year, but fometimes at the fame feafon, in different years.

There is therefore no reafon to fuppofe that fouth wefterly winds, within thefe limits, are caufed by the vicinity of large tracts of land, efpecially as they are always accompanied with a large fwell, in the fame direction in which they blow; and we find a much greater furf beating upon the fhores of the fouth weft fide of the iflands that are fituated juft within the limits of the trade-wind, than upon any other part of them.

The tides about thefe iflands, are perhaps as inconfiderable as in any part of the world. A fouth or S. by WV. moon, makes high water in the bay of Matavai at Otaheite ; but the water very feldom rifes perpendicularly above ten or twelve inches.

The variation of the compafs, I found to be $4^{\circ} 46^{\prime}$ Eafterly, this being the refult of a great number of trials made with four of Dr. Knight's necdles, adapted to azimuth compafles. Thefe
1769. Thefe compaffes I thought the beft that could be procured, yet, when applied to the meridian line, I found them to differ not only one from another, fometimes a degree and an half, but the fame needle, half a degree from itfelf in different trials made on the fame day; and I do not remember that I have ever found two needles which exactly agreed at the fame time and place, though I have often found the fame needle agree with itfelf, in feveral trials made one after the other. This imperfection of the needle, however, is of no confequence to navigation, as the variation can always be found to a degree of accuracy, more than fufficient for all nautical purpofes.






## C H A P. XX.

A Defcription of feveral other Iflands in the Neighbourbood of Otabeite, with various Incidents; a dramatic Entertainment; and many Particulars relative to the Cuflons and Manners of the Inbabitants.

AFTER parting with our friends, we made an eafy fail, with gentle breezes and clear weather, and were informed by Tupia, that four of the neighbouring iflands, which he diftinguifhed by the names of Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola, lay at the diftance of between one and two days fail from Otaheite; and that hogs, fowls, and other refrefhments, with which we had of late been but fparingly fupplied, were there to be procured in great plenty; but having difcovered from the hills of Otaheite, an ifland lying to the northward, which he called Tethuroa, I determined firft to ftand that way, to take a nearer view of it. It lies N. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. diftant eight leagues from the northern extremity of Otaheite, upon which we had obferved the tranfit, and to which we had, for that reafon, given the name of Point Venus. We found it to be a fmall low ifland, and were told by Tupia, that it had no fettled inhabitants, but was occafionally vifited by the inhabitants of Otaheite, who fometimes went thither for a few days to fifh; we therefore determined to fpend no more time in a farther examination of it, but to go in fearch of Huaheine and Ulietea, which he defcribed to be well peopled, and as large as Otaheite.

[^6]K k


## CH A P. XX.

A Description of Several other Iflands in the Neighbourhood of Otabeite, with various Incidents; a dramatic Entertainment; and many Particulars relative to the Cuftoms and Manners of the Inhabitants.

AFTER parting with our friends, we made an cary fail, with gentle breezes and clear weather, and were informed by Tupia, that four of the neighbouring iflands, which he diftinguifhed by the names of Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola, lay at the diftance of between one and two days fail from Otaheite; and that hogs, fowls, and other refrefloments, with which we had of late been but fparingly fupplied, were there to be procured in great plenty; but having difcovered from the hills of Otaheite, an inland lying to the northward, which he called Tfthuroa, I determined fief to flan that way, to take a nearer view of it. It lies $\mathrm{N} . \frac{.}{2}$ W. diftant eight leagues from the northern extremity of Otaheite, upon which we had obferved the tranfit, and to which we had, for that reafon, given the name of Point Venus. We found it to be a fall low inland, and were told by Tupia, that it had no fettled inhabitants, but was occafionally vifited by the inhabitants of Otaheite, who fometimes went thither for a few days to fifth; we therefore determined to fend no more time in a farther examination of $i t$, but to go in fearch of Huahcine and Ulietea, which he defcribed to be well peopled, and as large as Otaheite.

Vol. II.
K k
$\underset{\substack{1769 . \\ \text { July. }}}{ }$ $\xlongequal[\text { Thur day y } 3 \text {. }]{\text {. }}$
1769.

At fix o'clock in the morning of the I4th, the weftermoft part of Eineo, or York Ifland, bore S. E. $\frac{x}{2}$ S. and the body of Otaheite E. $\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{~S}$. At noon, the body of York Inland bore E. by S. $\frac{1}{2}$ S. and Port-Royal bay, at Otaheite, S. $70^{\circ} 45^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$. diftant 6i miles, and an ifland which we took to be Saunders's lfand, called by the natives Tapoamanao, bore S. S. W. We alfo faw land bearing N. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. which Tupia faid was Huaheine.

Saturday 15. On the 15 th, it was hazy, with light breezes and calmsfucceeding each other, fo that we could fee no land, and made but little way. Our Indian, Tupia, often prayed for a wind to his god Tane, and as often boafted of his fucs: cefs, which indeed he took a very effectual method to fecure, for he never began his addrefs to Tane, till he faw a breeze fo near that he knew it muft reach the thip before his oraifon. was well over.

Sunday 16.
On the roth, we had a gentle brecze; and in the morning about eight o'clock, being clofe in with the north weft part Huaheine. of the illand Huaheine, we founded, but had no bottom with 80 fathom. Some canoes very foon came off, but the people feemed afraid, and kept at a diftance till they difcovered Tupia, and then they ventured nearer. In one of the canoes that came up to the fhip's fide, was the king of the ifland and his wife. Upon affurances of friendfhip, frequently and earnefly repeated, their Majefties and fome others came on board. At firft they were fruck with aftonifhment, and wondered at every thing that was fhewn them; yet they made no enquiries, and feeming to be fatisfied with what was offered to their notice, they made no fearch after other objects of curiofity, with which it was natural to fuppore a building of fuch novelty and magnitude as the fhip muft abound. After fome time, they became more familiar. I
was given to underfand, that the name of the king was Oree, and he propofed, as a mark of amity, that we fhould exchange names. To this I readily confented; and he was $\underbrace{\substack{1769 . \\ \text { zuly. }}}_{\text {Sunday } 15_{0}}$ Cookce, for fo he pronounced my name, and I was Oree, for the reft of the time we were together. We found thefe people to be very nearly the fame with thofe of Otaheite, in perfon, drefs, language, and every other circumftance, except, if Tupia might be believed, that they would not fteal.

Soon after dinner, we came to an anchor, in a friall but excellent harbour on the weft fide of the ifland, which the Natives call Owharre, in eighteen fathom water, clear ground, and fecure from all winds. I went immediately afhore, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander; Mr. Monkhoufe, Tupia, King Cookee, and fome other of the natives who had been on board ever fince the morning. The moment we landed Tupia fripped himfelf as low as the waift, and defired Mr. Monkhoufe to do the fame: he then fat down before a great number of the natives, who were collected together in a large houfe or fhed; for here, as well as at Otaheite, a houfe confifts only of a roof fupported upon poles; the reft of us, by his defire, ftanding behind. He then began a fpeech or prayer which lafted about a quarter of an hour, the King who ftood over againft him every now and then anfwering in what appeared to be fet refponfes. In the courfe of this harangue he delivered at different times two handkerchiefs, a black filk neckcloth, fome beads, two fmall bunches of feathers, and fome plantains, as prefents to their Eatua, or Gorl. In return for thefe, he received for our Eatua, a hog, fome young plantains, and two fmall bunches of feathers, which he ordered to be carried on board the fhip. After thefe ceremonies, which we fuppofed to be the ratification of a treaty between us, every one was difmiffed K k 2

## LIEU'TENANT COOK'S. VOYAGE

ry69. to go whither he pleafed; and Tupia immediately repaired to offer his oblations at one of the Morais.

The next morning, we went on fhore again, and walked up the hills, where the productions were exactly the fame as thofe of Otaheite, except that the rocks and clay appeared to be more burnt. The houfes were neat, and the boathoufes remarkably large; one that we meafured was fifty paces long, ten broad, and twenty-four feet high; the whole formed a pointed arch, like thofe of our old cathedrals, which was fupported on one fide by twenty-fix, and on the other by thirty pillars, or rather pots, about two feet high, and one thick, upon moft of which were rudely carved the heads of men; and feveral fanciful devices, not altogether unlike thofe which we fometimes fee printed from wooden blocks, at the beginning and end of old books. "The plains; or flat part of the country, abounded in bread-fruit, and cocoa-nut trees; in fome places, however, there were falt fwamps and lagoons, which would produce neither.

Tuefday 18.
We went again a-fhore on the 18th, and would have taken the advantage of Tupia's company, in our perambulation; but le was too much engaged with his friends: we took however his boy, whofe name was TAyeto, and Mr. Banks went to take a farther view of what had much engaged his attention before; it was akind of cheft or ark, the lid of which was nicely fewed on, and thatched very neatly with palm-nut leaves: it was fixed upon two poles, and fupported on little arches of wood, very neatly carved; the ufe of the poles feemed to be to remove it from place to place, in the manner of our fedan chairs : in one end of it was a fquare hole, in the middle of which was a ring touching the fides; and leaving the angles open, fo as to form a round hole within a fquare one. The firft time Mr. Banks faw this cof-


## LIEUTENANT COOK's.VOYAGE

-1769. July.

Monday 17.
to go whither he pleafed; and Tupiaimmediately repaired to offer his oblations at one of the Morais.

The next morning, we went on fhore again, and walked up the hills, where the productions were exactly the fame as thofe of Otaheite, except that the rocks and clay appeared to be more burnt. The houfes were neat, and the boathoufes remarkably large; one that we meafured was fifty paces long, ten broad, and twenty-four feet high ; the whole formed a pointed arch, like thofe of our old cathedrals, which was fupported on one fide by twenty-fix, and on the other by thirty pillars, or rather pofs, about two feet high, and one thick, upon moft of which were rudely carved the heads of men, and feveral fanciful devices, not altogether unlike thofe which we fometimes fee printed from wooden blocks, at the beginning and end of old books. The plains, or flat part of the country, abounded in bread-fruit, and cocoa-nut trees; in fome places, however, there were falt fwamps and lagoons, which would produce neither.
Tuefday 18. We went again a-fhore on the 18 th, and would have taken the advantage of Tupia's company, in our perambulation; but he was too much engaged with his friends: we took however his boy, whofe name was Tayeto, and Mr. Banks went to take a farther view of what had much engaged his attention before; it was a kind of cheft or ark, the lid of which was nicely fewed on, and thatched very neatly with palm-nut leaves: it was fixed upon two poles, and fupported on little arches of wood, very neatly carved; the ufe of the poles feemed to be to remove it from place to place, in the manner of our fedan chairs : in one end of it was a fquare hole, in the middle of which was a ring touching the fides, and leaving the angles open, fo as to form a round hole within a fquare one. The firft time Mr. Banks faw this cof-

fer, the aperture at the end was ftopped with a piece of cloth, which, leaft he fhould give offence, he left untouched; probably there was then fomething within, but now the cloth was taken away, and, upon looking into it, it was found empty. The general refemblance between this repofitory and the Ark of the Lord among the Jews is remarkable; but it is ftill more remarkable, that upon enquiring of the boy what it was called, he faid, Ewbarre no Eatua, the boufe of the God: he could however give no account of its fignification or ufe. We had commenced a kind of trade with the natives, but it went on flowly; for when any thing was offered, not one of them would take it upon his own judgment, but collected the opinions of twenty or thirty people, which could not be done without great lofs of time. We got, however, eleven pigs, and determined to try for more the next day.

The next day, therefore, we brought out fome hatchets, wednef. rg. for which we hoped we fhould have had no occafion, upon an ifland which no European. had cver vifited before. Thefe procured us three very large hogs; and as we propofed to fail in the afternoon, King Oree and feveral others came on board to take their leave. To the King I gave a fmall plate of pewter, on which was ftamped this infcription, "His Bri" tannic Majefty's hip, Endeavour, Lieutenant Cook Com" mander, I6th July 1769 , Huaheinc." I gave him alfo fome medals or counters, refembling the coin of England, ftruck in the year 176I, with fome other prefents; and he promifed that with none of thefe, particularly the plate, he would ever part. I thought it as lafting a teftimony of our having firf difcovered this ifland, as any we could leave behind; and having difmiffed our vifitors well fatisfied, and in great good-humour, we fet fail, about half an hour after two . in the afternoon,

The:

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

$\underbrace{\substack{\text { I } \\ \text { July. } \\ \text { July. }}}_{\text {lednef. } 19 .}$
The ifland of Huaheine, or Huahene, is fituated in the latitude of $16^{\circ} 43^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$ and longitude $150^{\circ} 52^{\prime} \mathrm{WV}$. from Greenwich : it is diftant from Otaheite about thirty-one leagues, in the direction of N. $5^{9} \mathrm{~W}$. and is about feven leagues in compafs. Its furface is hilly and uneven, and it has a fafe 'and commodious harbour. The harbour, which is called by the natives Owalle, or Owharre, lies on the weft fide, under the northermof high land, and within the north end of the reef, which lies along that fide of the ifland; there are two inlets or openings, by which it may be entered, through the reef, about a mile and a half difant from each other ; the fouthermof is the widef, and on the fouth fide of it lies a very fmall fandy ifland.

Huaheine feems to be a month forwarder in its productions than Otaheite, as we found the cocoa-nuts full of kernel, and fome of the new bread-fiuit fit to eat. Of the cocoanuts the inhabitants make a food which they call Poe, by mixing them with yams; they fcrape both fine, and having incorporated the powder, they put it into a wooden trough, with a number of hot flones, by which an oily kind of hafty pudding is made, that our people relifhed very well, efpecially when it was fryed. Mr. Banks found not more than eleven or twelve new plants; but he obferved fome infects, and a fpecies of fcorpion which he had not feen before.

The inhabitants feem to be larger made, and more ftout, than thofe of Otaheite. Mr. Banks meafured one of the men, and found him to be fix fect three inches and an half high; yet they are fo lazy, that he could not perfuade any of them to go up the hills with him : they faid, if they were to attempt it, the fatigue would kill thern. The women were very fair, more fo than thofe of Otaheite; and in general, we thought them more handfome, though none that were equal
equal to fome individuals. Both fexes feemed to be lefs timid, and lefs curious: it has been obferved, that they made no enquiries on board the fhip; and when we fired a gun, they were frighted indced, but they did not fall down, as our friends at Otaheite conflantly did when we firf came among them. For this difference, however, we can eafily account upon other principles; the people at Huaheine lad not feen the Dolphin, thofe at Otaheite had. In one, the report of a gun was connected with the idea of inftant deftruction; to the other, there was nothing dreadful in it but the appearance and the found, as they had never experienced its power of difpenfing death.

While we were on fhore, we found that Tupia had commended them beyond their merit, when he faid that they would not fteal; for one of them was detected in the fact. But when he was feized by the hair, the reft, inftead of running away, as the people at Otaheite would have done, gathered round, and enquired what provocation had been given : but this alfo may be accounted for without giving them credit for fuperior courage; they had no experience of the confequence of European refentment, which the people at Otaheite had in many inflances purchafed with life. It muft however be acknowledged, to their honour, that when they underfood what had happened, they fhowed frong figns of difapprobation, and preferibed a good beating for the thief, which was immediately adminiftered.

We now made fail for the illand of Uiretea, which lies S. W. by W. diftant feven or eight leagues from Huaheine, and at half an hour after fix in the evening we were within three leagues of the fhere, on the eaftern fide. We ftood off and on all night, and when the day broke the next morning, we food in for the thore: we foon after difcovered an open-
1769. ing in the reef which lies before the inland, within which
July. Tupia told us there was a good harbour. I did not, however, implicitly take his word; but feat the matter out in the pinnace to examine it : he foo made the fignal for the flip to follow; we accordingly flood in, and anchored in two and twenty fathom with oft ground.

The natives foo came off to us in two canoes, each of which brought a woman and a pig. The woman we fuppoled was a mark of confidence, and the pig was a prefent; we received both with proper acknowledgments, and complimented each of the ladies with a pike nail and forme beads, much to their fatisfaction. We were told by Tupian, who has always expreffed much fear of the men of Bolabola, that they have made a conqueft of this inland; and that, if we remain here, they will certainly come down tomorrow, and fight us. We determined, therefore, to go on fore without delay, while the day was our own.

I landed in company with Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and the other Gentlemen, Tupia being also of the party. He introduced us by repeating the ceremonies which he had performed at Huaheine, after which I hoifted an Englifh jack, and took poffeffion of this and the three neighbouring iflands, Huaheine, Otaha, and Bolabola, which were all in fight, in the name of his Britannic Majefty. After this, we took a walk to a great Moral, called Tapodeboatea. We found it very different from thofe of Otaheite ; for it conflicted only of four walls, about eight feet high, of coral tones, forme of which were of an immenfe fize, inclofing an area of about five and twenty yards fquare, which was filled up with faller flones: upon the top of it many planks were fer up an end, which were carved in their whole length : at a little distance we found an altar, or Ewhatta, upon which lay the
laft oblation or facrifice, a hog of about eighty pounds weight, which had been offered whole, and very nicely roafted. Here were alfo four or five Ewharre-no-Eatua, or houfes of God, to which carriage poles were fitted, like that which we had feen at Huaheinc. One of thefe Mr. Banks examined by putting his hand into it, and found a parcel about five feet long and one thick, wrapped up in matts: he broke a way through feveral of thefe matts with his fingers, but at length came to one which was made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut, fo firmly plaited together that he found it imposfible to tear it, and therefore was forced to defift; efpecially as he perceived, that what he had done already gave great offence to our new friends. From hence we went to a long houfe, not far diftant, where among rolls of cloth, and feveral other things, we faw the model of a canoe, about three feet long, to which were tied eight human jaw-bones: we had already learnt that thefe, like fcalps among the Indians of North America, were trophies of war. Tupia affirmed that they were the jaw-bones of the natives of this ifland; if fo, they might have been hung up, with the model of a canoe, as a fymbol of invafion, by the warriors of Bolabola, as a memorial of their conqueft.

Night now came on apace, but Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander continued their walk along the fhore, and at a little diftance faw another Ewharre-no-Eatua, and a tree of the fig kind, the fame as that which Mr. Green had feen at Otaheite, in great perfection, the trunk, or rather congeries of the roots of which was forty-two paces in circumference.
On the 2 Ift , having difpatched the Mafter in the long-boat Friday 2 . to examine the coaft of the fouth part of the ifland, and one of the Mates in the yawl, to found the harbour where the fhip lay, I went myfclf in the pinnace, to furvey that part Vol. II,

LI
of
1759. of the inland which lies to the north. Mr. Banks and the

Saturday 22. Sunday 23. Mondsy zt. Gentiemen were again on fhore, trading with the natives, and examining the products and curioficies of the country; they faw nothing, however, worthy notice, but fome more jawbones, of which they made no doubt but that the account they had heard was true.
On the 22 d and 23 d, having flrong gales and hazey weather, I did not think it fafe to put to fea; but on the 24 th, though the wind was ftill variable, I got under fail, and plyed to the northward within the reef, with a view to go out at a wider opening than that by which I had entered; in doing this, however, I was unexpectedly in the moft imminent danger of flriking on the rock: the Mafter, whom 1 had ordered to keep continually founding in the chains, fuddenly called out, "two fathom." This alarmed me, for though I knew the fhip drew at leaft fourteen feet, and that therefore it was impoffible fuch a fhoal fhould be under her keel; yet the Mafter was either miftaken, or fhe went along the edge of a coral rock, many of which, in the neighbourhood of thefe iffands, are as fleep as a wall.

This harbour or bay is called by the natives Oopoa, and taken in its. greateft extent, it is capable of holding any number of flipping. In extends almoft the whole length of the eaft fide of the ifliand, and is defended from the fea by a reef of coral rocks: the fouthermoft opening in this reef, or channel into the harbour, by which we entered, is little more than a cable's length wide; it lies off the eaftermoft point of the ifland, and may be known by another fmall woody inland, which lies a little to the fouth eaf of it, called by the people here Oatara. Between three and four miles north: weft from this ifland lie two other iflets, in the fame direction as the reef, of which they are a part, called Opururu


## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1759. of the ifland which lies to the north. Mr. Banks and the

Saturday 22. Sunday 23. Monday 24 . Gentlemen were again on fhore, trading with the natives, and examining the products and curiofities of the country; they faw nothing, however, worthy notice, but fome more jawbones, of which they made no doubt but that the account they had heard was true.

On the $2=d$ and 23 d, having ftrong gales and hazey weather, I did not think it fafe to put to fea; but on the 24 th, though the wind was ftill variable, I got under fail, and plyed to the northward within the reef, with a view to go out at a wider opening than that by which I had entered; in doing this, however, I was unexpectedly in the moft imminent danger of ftriking on the rock: the Mafter, whom I had ordered to keep continually founding in the chains, fuddenly called out, " two fathom." This alarmed me, for though I knew the fhip drew at leaft fourteen feet, and that thercfore it was impoffible fuch a fhoal fhould be under her keel; yet the-Mafter was either miftaken, or fhe went along the edge of a coral rock, many of which, in the neighbourhood of thefe iflarids, are as fteep as a wall.

This harbour or bay is called by the natives Oopoa, and. taken in its greateft extent, it is capable of holding any number of fhipping. It extends almott the whole length of the eaft fide of the ifland, and is defended from the fea by a reef ofcoral rocks: the fouthermoft opening in this reef, or channel into the harbour, by which we entered, is little morethan a cable's length wide; it lies off the eaftermoft point of the inland, and may be known by another fmall woody inland, which lies a little to the fouth eaft of it, called by the

Catara.

Opurura. people here Ontara. Between three and four miles north: weft from this ifland lie two other iflets, in the fame direction as the reef, of which they are a part, called Opururu

and Tamou; between thefe lies the other channel into the harbour, through which I went out, and which is a full quarter of a mile wide. Still farther to the north weft are fome other fmall iflands, near which I am told there is another fmall channel into the harbour; but this I know only by report.

The principal refrefhments that are to be procured at this part of the ifland are, plantains, cocoa-nuts, yams, hogs, and fowls; the hogs and fowls, however, are fcarce; and the country, where we faw it, is neither fo populous, nor fo rich in produce as Otaheite, or even Huaheine. Wood and water may alfo be procured here; but the water cannot conveniently be got at.

We were now again at fea, without having received any interruption from the hoftile inhabitants of Bolabola, whom, notwithftanding the fears of Tupia, we intended to vifit. At four o'clock in the afternoon of the 25 th, we were within a league of Otaha, which bore N. 77 W . To the northward of the fouth end of that ifland, on the eaft fide of it, and fomething more than a mile from the fhore, lie two fmall iflands, called Toahoutu and Whennuaia; between which, Tupia fays, there is a channel into a very good harbour, which lies within the reef, and appearances confirmed his report.

As I difcovered a broad channel between Otaha and Bolabola, I determined rather to go through it, than run to the northward of all ; but the wind being right a-head, I got no ground.

Between five and fix in the evening of the 26 th , as I was Wedncf. 36 . ftanding to the northward, I difcovered a fmall low ifland, lying N. by W. or N.N. W. diftant four or five leagucs from Bolabola. We were told by Tupia that the name of this
1769.
July. ifland is Tubai ; that it produces nothing but cocoa-nuts, and is inhabited only by three families; though it is vifited by the inhabitants of the neighbouring iflands, who refort thither to catch fifh, with which the coaft abounds.

Thurfay 27. On the 27 th, about noon, the peak of Bolabola bore N. 25 W. and the north end of Otaha, N. 80 W. diftant three leagues. The wind continued contrary all this day and the Friday 28. night following. On the 28th, at fix in the morning, we were Otaba. near the entrance of the harbour on the eaft fide of Отана, which has been juft mentioned; and finding that it might be examined without lofing time, I fent away the Mafter in the long-boat, with orders to found it; and, if the wind did not hift in our favour, to land upon the ifland, and traffic with the natives for fuch refrefhments as were to be had. In this boat went Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, who landed upon the ifland, and before night purchafed three hogs, twentyone fowls, and as many yams and plantains as the boat would hold. Plantains we thought a more ufeful refrefhment even than pork; for they were boiled and ferved to the fhip's company as bread, and were now the more acceptable as our bread was fo full of vermin, that notwithftanding all poffible care, we had fometimes twenty of them in our mouths at a time, every one of which tafted as hot as muftard. The ifland feemed to be more barren than Ulietea, but the produce was of the fame kind. The people alfo exactly refembled thofe that we had feen at the other iflands; they were not numerous, but they flocked about the boat whereever fhe went from all quarters, bringing with them whatever they had to fell. They paid the ftrangers, of whom they had received an account from Tupia, the fame compliment which they ufed towards their own Kings, uncovering their thoulders, and wrapping their garments round their breafts;

## ROUND THE WORLD.

and were fo folicitous to prevent its being neglected by any of their people, that a man was fent with them, who called out to every one they met, telling him what they were, and
1769. July. Friday 28. what he was to do.

In the mean time, I kept plying off and on, waiting for the boat's return ; at half an hour after five, not feeing any thing of her, I fired a gun, and after it was dark hoifted a light; at half an hour after cight, we heard the report of a mufquet, which we anfwered with a gun, and foon after the boat came on board. The Mafter reported, that the harbour was fafe and commodious, with good anchorage from twenty-five to fixteen fathom water, clear ground.

As foon as the boat was hoifted in, I made fail to the northward, and at eight o'clock in the morning of the 29 th, we were clofe under the Peak of Bolabola, which was high; rude, and craggy. As the ifland was altogether inacceffible in this part, and we found it impoffible to weather it, we tacked and ftood off, then tacked again, and after many trips did not weather the fouth end of it till twelve o'clock at night. At eight o'clock the next morning, we difcovered an Sunday 30. inland, which bore from us $\mathrm{N} .63^{\circ} \mathrm{W}$. diftant about eight leagues; at the fame time the Peak of Bolabola bore N. $\frac{x}{2}$ E. diftant three or four leagues. This ifland Tupia ealled MAU- Maurua. RUA, and faid that it was fmall, wholly furrounded by a reef, and without any harbour for fhipping ; but inhabited, and bearing the fame produce as the neighbouring iflands: the middle of it rifes in a high round hill, that may be feen at the diftance of ten leagues.

When we were off Bolabola, we faw but few people on the fhore, and were told by Tupia that many of the inhabitants were gone to Ulietea. In the afternoon we found ourfelves nearly the length of the fouth end of Ulietea, and to

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1;69.
$\xrightarrow{\text { July. }}$ Sunday 30.
windward of fome harbours that lay on the weff fide of this ifland. Into one of thefe harbours, though we had before been afthore on the other fide of the ifland, I intended to put, in order to ftop a leak which we had fprung in the powder room, and to take in more ballaft, as I found the fhip too light to carry fail upon a wind. As the wind was right
Augut. againft us, we plied off one of the harbours, and about three Tuefday i. o'clock in the afternoon on the ift of Auguft, we came to an anchor in the entrance of the channel leading into it in fourteen fathom water, being prevented from working in, by a tide which fet very ftrong out. We then carried out the kedge-anchor, in order to warp into the harbour ; but when this was done, we could not trip the bower-anchor with all the purchafe we could make; we were therefore obliged to Wednef. 2. lie fill all night, and in the morning, when the tide turned, the fhip going over the anchor, it tripped of itfelf, and we warped the fhip into a proper birth with eafe, and moored in twenty-cight fathom, with a fandy bottom. While this was doing many of the natives came off to us with hogs, fowls, and plantains, which they parted with at an eafy rate.
When the fhip was fecured, I went on fhore to look for a proper place to get ballaft and water, both which I found in a very convenient fituation.

This day Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander fpent on fhore very much to their fatisfaction; cvery body feemed to fear and refpect them, placing in them at the fame time the utmont confidence, behaving as if confcious that they poffeffed the power of doing them mifchief, without any propenfity to make ufemef it. Men, women and children crowded round them, and followed them wherever they went; but none of them were guilty of the leaft incivility: on the contrary, whenever there happened to be dirt or water in the way, the
men vied with each other to carry them over on their backs. They were conducted to the houfes of the principal people, and were received in a manner altogether new: the people, who followed them while they were in their way, ruftied forward as foon as they came to a houfe, and went haftily in before them, leaving however a lane fufficiently wide for them to pafs. When they entered, they found thofe who had preceded them ranged on each fide of a long matt, which was fpread upon the ground, and at the farther end of which fat the family : in the firf houfe they entered they found fome very young women or children, dreffed with the utmoft neatnefs, who kept their ftation, expecting the ftrangers to come up to them and make them prefents, which they did with the greatef pleafure; for prettier children or better dreffed they had never feen. One of them was a girl about fix years old; her gown, or upper garment, was red; a large quantity of plaited hair was wound round her head, the ornament to which they give the name of Tamou, and which they value more than any thing they poffefs. She fat at the upper cind of a matt thirty feet long, upon which none of the fpectators prefumed to fet a foot, notwithftanding the crowd; and the leaned upon the arm of a well-looking woman about thirty, who was probably her nurfe. Our Gentlemen walked up to her, and as foon as they approached, fhe ftretched out her hand to receive the beads which they offered her, and no Princefs in Europe could have done it with a better grace.

The people were fo much gratified by the prefents which. were made to thefe girls, that when Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander returned they feemed attentive to nothing but how to oblige them ; and in one of the houfes they were, by order of the mafter, entertained with a dance, differeur from any that they had feen. It was performed by one man, who put

## LIEUTENANTCOOK's VOYAGE

upon his head a large cylindrical piece of wicker-work, or bafket, about four feet long and eight inches in diameter, which was faced with feathers, placed perpendicularly, with the tops bending forwards, and edged round with fhark's teeth, and the tail feathers of Tropic birds: when he had put on this head-drefs, which is called a Whow, he began to dance, moving flowly, and often turning his head fo as that the top of his high wicker-cap defcribed a circle, and fometimes throwing it fo near the faces of the fpectators as to make them flart back: this was held among them as a very good joke, and never failed to produce a peal of laughter, efpecially when it was played off upon one of the flrangers.
On the 3 d , we went along the fhore to the northward, which was in a direction oppofite to that of the route Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander had taken the day before, with a defign to purchafe fock, which we always found the people more ready to part with, and at a more eafy price, at their houfes than at the market. In the courfe of our walk we met with a company of dancers, who detained us two hours, and during all that time afforded us great entertainment. The company confifted of two women dancers, and fix men, with three drums; we were informed by Tupia, that they were fome of the moft confiderable people of the ifland, and that though they were continually going from place to place, they did not, like the little flrolling companies of Otaheite, take any gratuity from the fpectators. The women had upon their heads a confiderable quantity of Tamou, or plaited hair, which was brought feveral times round the head, and adorned in many parts with the flowers of the cape-jeffamine, which were ftuck in with much tane, and made a head-drefs truly elegant. Their necks, fhoulders, and arms were naked; fo were the breafts alfo as low as the parting of



## ROUND THE WORLD.

the arm; below that, they were covered with black cloth, which fet clofe to the body; at thie fide of each breaft, next thie arm, was placed a fmall plume of black feathers, much in the fame manner as our ladies now wear their nofegays or Bouquets; upon their hips refted a quantity of cloth plaited very full, which reached up to the breaft, and fell down below into long petticoats, which quite concealed their feet, and which they managed with as much dexterity as our opera dancers could have done: the plaits above the waift were brown and white alternately, the petticoats below were all white.

In this drefs they advanced fideways in a meafured ftep, kecping excellent time to the drums, which beat brikkly and loud; foon after they began to fhake their hips, giving the folds of cloth that lay upon them a very quick motion, which was in fome degree continued through the whole dance, though the body was thrown into various poftures; fometimes flanding, fometimes fitting, and fometimes refting on their knees and elbows, the fingers alfo being moved at the fame time with a quicknefs fcarcely to be imagined. Much of the dexterity of the dancers, however, and the entertainment of the fpectators, confifted in the wantonnefis of their attitudes and geftures, which was, indeed, fuch as exceeds all defcription.
Onc of thefe girls had in her ear three pearls; one of them was very large, but fo foul that it was of little value; the other two were as big as a middling pea ; thefe were clear, and of a good colour and fhape, though fpoiled by the drilling. Mr. Banks would fain have purchafed them, and offered the owner any thing fhe would afk for them, but fhe could not be perfuaded to part with them at any price: he tempted her with the value of four hogs, and whatever elfe Vol. II,

M m
the

the arm; below that, they were covered with black cloth, which fet clofe to the body; at the fide of each breaft, next the arm, was placed a fmall plume of black feathers, much in the fame manner as our ladies now wear their nofegays or Bouquets; upon their hips refted a quantity of cloth plaited very full, which reached up to the breaft, and fell down below into long petticoats, which quite concealed their feet, and which they managed with as much dexterity as our opera dancers could have done: the plaits above the waift were brown and white alternately, the petticoats below were all white.

In this drefs they advanced fideways in a meafured ftep, keeping excellent time to the drums, which beat brifkly and loud; foon after they began to fhake their hips, giving the folds of cloth that lay upon them a very quick motion, which was in fome degree continued through the whole dance, though the body was thrown into various poftures, fometimes ftanding, fometimes fitting, and fometimes refting on their knees and elbows, the fingers alfo being moved at the fame time with a quicknefs fcarcely to be imagined. Much of the dexterity of the dancers, however, and the entertainment of the fpectators, confifted in the wantonnefs of their attitudes and geftures, which was, indeed, fuch as exceeds all defcription.

Onc of thefe girls had in her ear three pearls; one of them was very large, but fo foul that it was of little value; the other two were as big as a middling pea; thefe were clear, and of a good colour and flape, though fpoiled by the drilling. Mr. Banks would fain have purchafed them, and offered the owner any thing the would afk for them, but the could not be perfuaded to part with them at any price: he tempted her with the value of four hogs, and whatever elfe

Vol. II.
M m
the

## LIEUTENANT COOK'S VOYAGE

1769. 

fhe fhould chufe, but without fuccefs; and indeed they fet a value upon their pearls very nearly equal to what they would fetch among us, except they could be procured before they are drilled.

Between the dances of the women, the men performed a kind of dramatic interlude, in which there was dialogue as well as dancing; but we were not fufficiently acquainted with their language to undertand the fubject.
Friday 4. On the 4 th, fome of our gentlemen faw a much more regular entertainment of the dramatic kind, which was dividect into four acts.

Tupia had often told us that he had large poffeffions in this ifland, which had been taken away from him by the inhabitants of Bolabola, and he now pointed them out in the very bay where the fhip was at anchor. Upon our going on fhore, this was confirmed by the inhabitants, who fhewed us feveral diftricts or Whennuas, which they acknowledged to be his right.
Saturday 5. On the 5th, I received a prefent of three hogs, fome fowls, feveral pieces of cloth, the largeft we had feen, being fifty yards long, which they unfolded and difplayed fo as to make the greateft fhow poffible; and a confiderable quantity of plantains, cocoa nuts, and other refrefhments, from Opoony, the formidable king, or, in the language of the country, Earee rahie, of Bolabola, with a meffage that he was at this time upon the ifland, and that the next day he intended to pay me a vifit.

In the mean time Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went upon the hills, accompanicd by feveral of the Indians, who conducted them by excellent paths, to fuch a height, that they plainly faw the other fide of the ifland, and the paffage through which the fhip had paffed the reef between the little iflands of Opururu and Tamou, when we landed upon it the firft

## ROUND THE WORLD.

firft time. As they were returning, they faw the Indians exercifing themfelves at what they call Erowhaw, which is nothing more than pitching a kind of light lance, headed with hard wood, at a mark : in this amufement, though they feem very fond of it, they do not excel, for not above one in twelve ftruck the mark; which was the bole of a plantain tree, at about twenty yards diftance.

On the 6th, we all faid at home, expecting the vifit of the Eunday 6 . great king, but we were difappointed; we had, however, much more agrecable company, for he fent three very pretty girls to demand fomething in return for his prefent : perhaps he was unwilling to truf himfelf on board the fhip, or perhaps he thought his meffengers would procure a more valuable return for his hogs and poultry than he could himfelf; be that as it may, we did not regret his abfence, nor his meffengers their vifit.

In the afternoon, as the great king would not come to us, we determined to go to the great king. As he was lord of the Bolabola men, the conquerors of this, and the terror of all the other iflands, we expected to fee a Chief young and vigorous, with an intelligent countenance, and an enterprifing fpirit: we found, however, a poor feeble wretch, withered and decrepit, half blind with age, and fo fluggifh and ftupid that he appeared fcarcely to have underftanding enough left to know that it was probable we hould be gratified either by hogs or women. He did not receive us fitting, or with any flate or formality as the other Chiefs had done: we made him our prefent, which he accepted, and gave a hog in return. We had learnt that his principal relidence was at Otaha'; and upon our telling him that we intended to go thither in our boats the next morning, and that
1769.
Augut. we fhould be glad to have him along with us, he promifed to be of the party.

Early in the morning, therefore, I fet out both with the pinnace and long-boat for Otaha, having fome of the gentlemen with me; and in our way we called upon Opoony, who was in his canoe, ready to join us. As foon as we landed at Otaha, I made him a prefent of an ax, which I thought might induce him to encourage his fubjects to bring us fuch provifion as we wanted; but in this we found ourfelves fadly difappointed, for after ftaying with him till noon, we left him without being able to procure a fingle article. I then proceeded to the north point of the illand, in the pinnace, having fent the long-boat another way. As I went along I picked up half a dozen hogs, as many fowls, and fome plantains and yams. Having viewed and flketched the harbour on this fide of the ifland, I made the beft of my way back, with the long-boat, which joined me foon after it was dark; and about ten o'clock at night we got on board the fhip.

In this excurfion Mr. Banks was not with us; he fpent the morning on board the fhip, trading with the natives, who came off in their canoes, for provifions and curiofities; and in the afternoon he went on fhore with his draughtfman, to fketch the dreffes of the dancers which he had feen a day or two before. He found the company exactly the fame, except that another woman had been added to it: the dancing alfo of the women was the fame, but the interludes of the men were fomewhat varied; he faw five or fix performed, which were different from each other, and very much re-

Tuefday 8. fembled the drama of our flage dances. The next day, he went afhore again, with Dr. Solander, and they directed their courfe towards the dancing company, which, from the
time of our fecond landing, had gradually moved about two leagues in their courfe round the illand. They faw more dancing and more interludes, the interludes ftill varying from each other: in one of them the performers, who were all men, were divided into two parties, which were diftinguifhed from each other by the colour of their cloaths, one being brown, and the other white. The brown party reprefented a mafter and fervants, and the white party a company of thicves: the mafter gave a bafket of meat to the reft of his party, with a charge to take care of it: the dance of the white party confifted of feveral expedients to fteal it, and that of the brown party in preventing their fuccefs. After fome time, thofe who had charge of the bafket placed themfelves round it, upon the ground, and leaning upon it, appeared to go to fleep; the others, improving this opportunity, came gently upon them, and lifting them up from the bafket, carried off their prize: the fleepers foon after awaking, miffed their bafket, but prefently fell a dancing, without any farther regarding their lofs; fo that the dramatic action of this dance was, according to the fevereft laws of criticifm, one, and our lovers of fimplicity would here have been gratified with an entertainment perfectly fuited to the chaftity of their tafte.

On the gth, having fpent the morning in trading with the Wednef. g*. canoes, we took the opportunity of a breeze, which fprung up at Eaft, and having flopped our leak, and got the frefh ftock which we had purchafed on board, we failed out of the harbour. When we were failing away, Tupia flrongly urged me to fire a fhot towards Bolabola, poffibly as a mark of his refentment, and to fhew the power of his new allies: in this I thought proper to gratify him, though we were feven leagues diftant.
1769. While we were about thefe iflands, we expended very little of the flip's provifions, and were very plentifully fupplied with hogs, fowls, plantains and yams, which we hoped would have been of great ufe to us in our courfe to the fouthward; but the hogs would not eat European grain of any kind, pulfe, or bread-duft, fo that we could not preferve them alive; and the fowls were all very foon feized with a difeafe that affected the head fo, that they continued to hold it down between their legs till they died: much dependence therefore muft not be placed in live fock taken on board at thefe places, at leaft not till a difcovery is made of fome food that the hogs will eat, and fome remedy for the difeafe of the poultry.
Having been neceffarily detained at Ulietea fo long, by the carpenters in flopping our leak, we determined to give up our defign of going on thore at Bolabola, efpecially as it appeared to be difficult of accefs.
To thefe fix iflands, Ulietea, Otaha, Bolabola, Huaheine, Tubai, and Maurua, as they lie contiguous to each other, I gave the names of Society Islands, but did not think it proper to diftinguifh them feparately by any other names than thofe by which they were known to the natives.
They are fituated between the latitude of $16^{\circ}$ 10 and $16^{\circ}$ $55^{\prime}$ S. and between the longitude of $150^{\circ} 57^{\prime}$ and $15^{\circ}{ }^{\circ} \mathrm{W}$. from the meridian of Greenwich. Ulietea and Otaha lie within about two miles of each other, and are both inclofed within one reef of coral rocks, fo that there is no paffage for fhipping between them. This reef forms feveral excelkent harbours; the entrances into them, indeed, are but narrow, yet when a fhip is once in, nothing can hurt her. The harbours on the eaft fide have been defcribed already; and on the weff fide of Ulietea, which is the largeft of the two, there
are three. The northermoft, in which we lay, is called Ohamaneno: the channel leading into it is about a quarter of a mile wide, and lies between two low fandy iflands, which are the northermoft on this fide; between, or juft within the two iflands, there is good anchorage in twentyeight fathom, foft ground. This harbour, though fmall, is preferable to the others, becaufe it is fituated in the moft fertile part of the ifland, and where frefl water is eafily to be got. The other two harbours lie to the fouthward of this, and not far from the fouth end of the ifland: in both of them there is good anchorage, with ten, twelve, and fourteen fathom. They are eafily known by three fmall woody iflands at their entrance. The fouthermoft of thefe two harbours lies within, and to the fouthward of the fouthermoft of thefe iflands, and the other, lies between the two northermof. I was told that there were more harbours at the fouth end of this illand, but I did not examine whether the report was true.

Otaha affords two very good harbours, one on the eaft fide, and the other on the weft. That on the eaft fide is called Ohamene, and has been mentioned already; the other is called. Oherurua, and lies about the middle of the fouth: weft fide of the ifland; it is pretty large, and affords good anchorage in twenty and twenty-five fathom, nor is there any want of frefh water. The breach in the reef, that forms, a channel into this harbour, is about a quarter of a mile broad, and like all the reft is very fteep on both fides; in general there is no danger here but what is vifible.

The ifland of Bolabola lies N. W. and by W. from Otaha, diftant about four leagues; it is furrounded by a reef of rocks, and feveral finall iflands, in compafs together about eight leagues. I was told, that on the fouth weft fide of:
1769.
the ifland there is a channel through the reef into a very good harbour, but I did not think it worth while to examine it, for the reafons that have been jut affigned. This ifland is rendered very remarkable by a high craggy hill, which appears to be almoft perpendicular, and terminates at the top in two peaks, one higher than the other.
The land of Ulietea and Otaha is hilly, broken, and irregular, except on the fea coaft, yet the hills look green and pleafant, and are in many places clothed with wood. The feveral particulars in which thefe iflands and their inhabitants differ from what we had obferved at Otaheite, have been mentioned in the courfe of the narrative.

We purfued our courfe without any event worthy of note

Sunday 13. Oheteroa.

Monday 14. till the $\mathrm{I}_{\mathrm{g}}$ th, about noon, when we faw land bearing S.E. which Tupia told us was an ifland called Oheteroa. About fix in the evening, we were within two or three leagues of it, upon which I fhortened fail, and flood off and on all night : the next morning food in for the land. We ran to leeward of the ifland, keeping clofe in fhore, and faw feveral of the natives, though in no great numbers, upon the beach. At nine o'clock I fent Mr. Gore, one of my Lieutenants, in the pinnace, to endeavour to land upon the ifland, and learn from the natives whether there was anchorage in a bay then in fight, and what land lay farther to the fouth. ward. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander accompanied Mr. Gore in this expedition, and as they thought Tupia might be ufeful, they took him with them.
As the boat approached the fhore, thofe on board perceived the natives to be armed with long lances; as they did not intend to land till they got round a point which run out at a little diffance, they flood along the coaft, and the natives therefore very probably thought they were afraid of them.

They had now got together to the number of about fixty, and all of them fat down upon the fhore, except two, who were difpatched forward to obferve the motions of thofe in the boat. Thefe men, after walking a-breaft of her fome time, at length leaped into the water, and fwam towards her, but were foon left behind; two more then appeared, and attempted to board her in the fame manner, but they alfo were foon left behind; a fifth man then ran forward alone, and having got a good way a-head of the boat before he took to the water, eafily reached her. Mr. Banks urged the officer to take him in, thinking it a good opportunity to get the confidence and good-will of a people, who then certainly looked upon them as enemies, but he obftinately refufed: this man therefore was left behind like the others, and fo was a fixth, who followed him.

When the boat had got round the point, fhe perceived that all her followers had defifted from the purfuit: fhe now opened a large bay, at the bottom of which appeared another body of men, armed with long lances like the firf. Here our people prepared to land, and pufhed towards the fhore, a canoe at the fame time putting off to meet them. As foon as it came near them, they lay upon their oars, and calling out to them, told them that they were friends, and that if they would come up they would give them nails, which were held up for them to fee: after fome hefitation they came up to the boat's ftern, and took fome nails that were offered them with great feeming fatisfaction; but in lefs than a minute they appeared to have formed a defign of boarding the boat, and making her their prize: three of them fuddenly leaped into it, and the others brought up the canoe, which the motion in quitting her had thrown off a little, manifefly with a defign to follow their affociates, and fupport them in Vol. II. N n
their
their attempt. The firft that boarded the boat, entered clofe to Mr. Banks, and inftantly fnatched his powder-horn out of his pocket: Mr. Banks feized it, and with fome difficulty wrenched it out of his hand, at the fame time prefling againft his breaft in order to force him over-board, but he was too ftrong for him, and kept his place: the officer then fnapped his piece, but it miffed fire, upon which he ordered fome of the people to fire over their heads; two pieces were accordingly difcharged, upon which they all inftantly leaped into the water: one of the people, either from cowardice or cruelty, or both, levelled a third piece at one of them as he was fwimming away, and the ball grazed his forehead; happily, however, the wound was very flight, for he recovered the canoe, and ftood up in her as active and vigorous as the reft. The canoe immediately flood in for the fhore, where a great number of people, not lefs than two hundred, were now affembled. The boat alfo puflied in, but found the land guarded all round with a fhoal, upon which the fea broke with a confiderable furf; it was therefore thought advifable by the officer to proceed along fhore in fearch of a more convenient landing-place: in the mean time the people on board faw the canoe go on fhore, and the natives gather eagerly round her to enquire the particulars of what had happened. Soon after, a fingle man ran along the fhore, armed with his lance, and when he came a-breaft of the boat he began to dance, brandifh his weapon, and call out in a very fhrill tone, which Tupia faid was a defiance from the people. The boat continued to row along the fhore, and the champion followed it, repeating his defiance by his voice and his geftures; but no better landing-place being found than that where the canoe had put the natives on fhore, the officer turned back with a view to attempt it there, hoping, that if
it flould not be practicable, the people would come to a conference either on the fhoals or in their canoes, and that a $\underbrace{\text { Auguft. }}_{\text {Monday } 14 .}$ treaty of peace might be concluded with them.

As the boat rowed flowly along the fhore back again, another champion came down, fhouting defiance, and brandifhing his lance: his appearance was more formidable than that of the other, for he wore a large cap made of the tail feathers of the tropic bird, and his body was covered with ftripes of different coloured cloth, yellow, red, and brown. This gentleman alfo danced, but with much more nimblenefs and dexterity than the firf ; our people therefore, confidering his agility and his drefs, diftinguifhed him by the name of Harlequin. Soon after a more grave and elderly man came down to the beach, and lailing the people in the boat, enquired who they were, and from whence they came; Tupia anfwered in their own language, from Otaheite: the three natives then walked peaceably along the fhore till they came to a fhoal, upon which a few people were collected; here they ftopped, and after a fhort conference, they all began to pray very loud: Tupia made his refponfes, but continued to tell us that they were not our friends. When their prayer, or as they call it, their Poorab, was over, our pcople entered into a parley with them, telling them, that if they would lay by their lances and clubs, for fome had one and fome the other, they would come on fhore, and trade with them for whatever they would bring: they agreed, but it was only upon condition that we would leave behind us our mufquets: this was a condition which, however equitable it might appear, could not be complied with, nor indeed would it have put the two parties upon an equality, except their numbers had been equal. Here then the negociation feemed to be at an end; but in a little time they ventured to come nearer to the boat, and at laft came near enough to trade,
which they did very fairly, for a fmall quantity of their cloth and fome of their weapons; but as they gave our people no hope of provifions, nor indeed any thing elfeexcept they would venture through a narrow channel to the fhore, which, all circumftances confidered, they did not think it prudent to do, they put off the boat and left them.

With the fhip and the boat we had now made the circuie of the ifland, and finding that there was neither harbour nor anchorage about it, and that the hoftile difpofition of the people would render landing impracticable, without bloodfhed, I determined not to attempe it, having no motive that could juftify the rink of life:

The bay which the boat entered lies on the weft fide of the ifland, the bottom was foul and rocky, but the water fo clear that it could plainly be feen at the depth of five and twenty fathom, which is one hundred and fifty feet.

This ifland is fituated in the latitude of $22^{\circ} 27^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and in the longitude of $150^{\circ} 47^{\prime}$ W. from the meridian of Greenwich. It is thirteen miles in circuit, and rather high than low, but neither populous nor fertile in proportion to the other iflands that we had feen in thefe feas. The chief produce feems to be the tree of which they make their weapons, called in their language Etoa; many plantations of it were feen along the fhore, which is not furrounded, like the neighbouring illands, by a recf.

The people feemed to be lufty and well-made, rather browner than thofe we had left: under their arm-pits they had black marks about as broad as the hand, the edges of which formed not a ftrait but an indented line; they had alfo circles of the fame colour, but not fo broad, round their arms and legs, but were not marked on any other part of the body.

Their drefs was very different from any that we had feen before, as well as the cloth of which it was made. The cloth was of the fame materials as that which is worn in the other
 Monday 14. iflands, and moft of that which was feen by our people was dyed of a bright but deep yellow, and covered on the outfide with a compofition like varnifh, which was either red, or of a dark lead-colour; over this ground it was again painted in ftripes of many different patterns, with wonderful regularity, in the manner of our ftriped filks in England; the cloth that was painted red was ftriped with black, and that which was painted lead-colour with white. Their habit was a fhort jacket of this cloth, which reached about as low as their knces; it was of one piece, and had no other making than a hole in the middle of it, flitched round with long flitches; in which it differed from all that we had feen before: through this hole the head was put, and what hung down was confined to their bodies by a piece of yellow cloth or fafh, which paffing round the neck behind, was croffed upon the breaft, and then collected round the waift like a belt, which paffed over another belt of red cloth, fo that they made a very gay and warlike appearance; fome had caps of the feathers of the tropic bird, which have been before defcribed, and fome had a piece of white or lead-coloured cloth wound about the head like a fmall turban, which our people thought more becoming.

Their arms were long lances, made of the Etoa, the wood of which is very hard; they were well polifhed and fharpened at one end: fome were near twenty feet long, though not more than three fingers thick: they had alfo a weapon which was both club and pike, made of the fame wood, about feven feet long; this alfo was well polifhed, and fharpened at one end into a broad point. As a guard

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. Auguft. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Monday } 14 .}$
againft thefe weapons, when they attack each other, they have matts folded up many times, which they place under their clothes from the neck to the waift: the weapons themfelves indeed are capable of much lefs mifchief than thofe of the fame kind which we faw at the other iflands, for the lances were there pointed with the fharp bone of the ftingray that is called the fling, and the pikes were of much greater weight. The other things that we faw here were all fupcrior in their kind to any we had feen before; the cloth was of a better colour in the dye, and painted with greater neatnefs and taite; the clubs were better cut and polifhed, and the canoe, though a fmall one, was very rich in ornament, and the carving was executed in a better manner : among other decorations peculiar to this canoe, was a line of fmall white feathers, which hung from the head and flern on the outfide, and which, when we faw them, were thoroughly wetted by the fpray.

Tupia told us, that there were feveral iflands lying at different diftances and in different directions from this, between the fouth and the north weft; and that at the diftance of three days fail to the north eaft, there was an inland called Manua, bird-ifland: he feemed, however, molt defirous that we fhould fail to the weftward, and deferibed feveral iflands in that direction which he faid he had vifited : he told us that he had been ten or twelve days in going thither, and thirty in coming back, and that the Pabie in which he had made the voyage, failed much fafter than the fhip: reckoning his Pahic thercfore to go at the rate of forty leagues a day, which from my own obfervation I have great reafon to think thefe boats will do, it would make four hundred leagues in ten days, which I compute to be the diftance of Bofcawen and Keppel's Iflands, difcovered by Captain Wallis,
weltward of Ulietea, and therefore think it very probable that they were the iflands he had vifited. The fartheft ifland that he knew any thing of to the fouthward, he faid, lay at the diftance of about two days fail from Oteroah, and was called Moutou; but he faid that his father had told him there were iflands to the fouthward of that: upon the whole, I was determined to ftand fouthward in fearch of a continent, but to fpend no time in fearching for iflands, if we did not happen to fall in with them during our courfe.


## A N <br> $\begin{array}{lllllll}A & \mathrm{C} & \mathrm{C} & \mathrm{O} & \mathrm{U} & \mathrm{N} & \mathrm{T}\end{array}$ <br> OFA <br> VOYAGE round the WORLD.

## B O O K II.

C HAP. I.
The Paffage from Oteroab to New Zealand; Incidents which bappened on going a-fbore there, and while the Ship lay in Poverty Bay.

WE failed from Oteroah on the 15 th of Auguft, and on Friday the $25^{\text {th }}$ we celebrated the anniverfary of our leaving England, by taking a Chefhire cheefe from a locker, where it had been carefully treafured up for this occafion and tapping a cafk of porter, which proved to be very good and in excellent order. On the 2gth, one of the failors got fo drunk, that the next morning he died: we thought at firft that he could not have come honeftly by the liquor, but we afterwards learnt that the boatfwain, whofe mate he was, had in mere good-nature given him part of a bottle of rum.

On the 30 th we faw the comet; at one o'clock in the morn- Wedner. 30. ing it was a little above the horizon in the eaftern part of the heavens; at about half an hour after four it paffed the meridian, and its tail fubtended an angle of forty-two de-

Vol. II.
0 o
grees.


## A N <br> A $\quad$ C $\quad$ C $\quad \mathrm{O} \quad \mathrm{U}$ N T OFA <br> VOYAGE round the WORLD.

## B O O K II.

C H A P. I.
The Paffage from Oteroab to New Zealand; Incidents which bappened on going a-fbore there, and while the Ship lay in Poverty Bay.

WE failed from Oteroah on the 15 th of Auguit, and on Friday the 25 th we celebrated the anniverfary of our leaving England, by taking a Chefhire cheefe from a locker,
1769.

Auguft. where it had been carefully treafured up for this occafion, and tapping a cafk of porter, which proved to be very good and in excellent order. On the 2gth, one of the failors got fo drunk, that the next morning he died: we thought at firft that he could not have come honeftly by the liquor, but we afterwards learnt that the boatfwain, whofe mate he was, had in mere good-nature given him part of a bottle of rum,

On the 3 oth we faw the comet; at one o'clock in the morn- Wedner. 30. ing it was a little above the horizon in the eaftern part of the heavens; at about half an hour after four it paffed the meridian, and its tail fubtended an angle of forty-two deVol. II.

O o
grees.
176.9. grees. Our latitude was $38^{\circ} 20^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. our longitude, by log Augult. Wednef, 30. r $47^{\circ} 6^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and the variation of the needle, by the azimuth, $g^{\circ} 9^{\prime}$ E. Among others that obferved the comet, was Tupia, who inflantly cried out, that as foon as it fhould be feen by the people of Bolabola, they would kill the inhabitants of Ulietea, who would with the utmoft precipitation fly to the mountains.

September. Friday 1.

Saturday 2.

Sunday 3.

Tuefday 19.

Sunday 24. ation to be $8^{\circ} 32^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$. On the $24^{\mathrm{th}}$, being in latitude $33^{\circ} 18^{\prime}$, longitude $162^{\circ} 51^{\prime}$, we obferved a fmall piece of fea weed, and a piece of wood covered with barnacles: the variation here was $10^{\circ} 4^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$.
Wednef 27. On the 27 th, being in latitude $28^{\circ} 59^{\prime}$, longitude $169^{\circ} 5^{\prime}$, we faw a feal aflcep upon the water, and feveral bunches of fea
Thurfay 28. weed. The next day we faw more fea weed in bunches, and Friday 29. on the 2 gth, a bird, which we thought a land bird; it fomeOctober. Sunday 1 .

On the next day, there being ftrong gales to the weftward, I brought to, with the fhip's head to the northward; but in the morning of the 3 d , the wind being more moderate, we loofened the reef of the main-fail, fet the top-fails, and plied to the weftward.

We continued our courfe till the igth, when our latitude being $29^{\circ}$ and our longitude $159^{\circ} 29^{\prime}$, we obferved the variwhat refembled a fnipe, but had a fhort bill. On the ift of October, we faw birds innumerable, and another feal afleep

On the ift of September, being in the latitude of $40^{\circ} 22^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $174^{\circ} 29^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and there not being any figns of land, with a heavy fea from the weftward, and frong gales, I wore, and ftood back to the northward, fearing that we might receive fuch damage in our fails and rigging, as would hinder the profecution of the voyage. upon the water; it is a general opinion that feals never go out of foundings, or far from land, but thofe that we faw in thefe
thefe feas prove the contrary. Rock-weed is, however, a certain indication that land is not far diflant. The next day, it being calm, we hoifted out the boat, to try whether there was a current, but found none. Our latitude was $37^{\circ} 10^{\prime}$, longitude $172^{\circ} 54^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. On the 3 d , being in latitude $36^{\circ} 56^{\prime}$, Tuefday ${ }^{\circ}$. longitude $173^{\circ} 27^{\prime}$, we took up more fea-weed, and another piece of wood covered with barnacles. The next day we Wedner. 4 . faw two more feals, and a brown bird, about as big as a raven, with fome white feathers under the wing. Mr. Gore told us, that birds of this kind were feen in great numbers about Falkland's Iflands, and our people gave them the name of Port-Egmont hens.

On the 5 th, we thought the water changed colour, but upon cafting the lead, had no ground with 180 fathom. In the evening of this day, the variation was $12^{\circ} 50^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$. and while we were going nine leagues it encreafed to $14^{\circ} 2^{\prime}$.

On the next day, Friday, October the 6th, we faw land from the maft-head, bearing W. by N. and ftood directly for it ; in the evening it could juft be difcerned fiom the deck, and appeared large. The variation this day was, by azimuth and amplitude, $15^{\circ} 4^{\prime} \frac{1}{2} \mathrm{E}$. and by obfervation made of the fun and moon, the longitude of the fhip appeared to be $180^{\circ} 55^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and by the medium of this and fubfequent obfervations, there appeared to be an error in the fhip's account of longitude during her run from Otaheite of $3^{\circ} 16^{\prime}$, the being fo much to the weftward of the longitude refulting from the log. At midnight, I brought to and founded, but had no ground with one hundred and feventy fathom.

On the 7 th, it fell calm, we therefore approached the land flowly, and in the afternoon, when a breeze fprung up, we were ftill diftant feven or eight leagues. It appeared ftill larger as it was more diftinctly feen, with four or five ranges

$$
002
$$

1769. 

Oalober.


Monday 2.
of hills, rifing one over the other, and a chain of mountains above all, which appeared to be of an enormous height. This land became the fubject of much eager converfation; but the general opinion feemed to be that we had found the Terra aufralis incognita. About five o'clock we faw the opening of a bay, which feemed to run pretty far inland, upon which we hauled our wind and ftood in for it; we alfo faw fmoke afcending from different places on thore. When night came on, however, we kept plying off and on till day-light, when we found ourfelves to the leeward of the bay, the wind being at north : we could now perceive that the hills were cloathed with wood, and that fome of the trees in the valleys were very large. By noon we fetched in with the fouth weft point; but not being able to weather it, tacked and flood off: at this time we faw feveral canoes ftanding crofs the bay, which in a little time made to fhore, without feeming to take the leaft notice of the fhip; we alfo faw fome houfes, which appeared to be fmall, but neat; and near one of them a confiderable number of the people collected together, who were fitting upon the beach, and who, we thought, were the fame that we had feen in the canoes. Upon a fmall peninfula, at the north eaft head, we could plainly perceive a pretty high and regular paling, which inclofed the whole top of a hill; this was alfo the fubject of much fpeculation, fome fuppofing it to be a park of deer, others an inclofure for oxen and fheep. About four o'clock in the afternoon, we anchored on the north weft fide of the bay, before the entrance of a fmall river, in ten fathom water, with a fine fandy bottom, and at about half a league from the ihore. The fides of the bay are white cliffs of a great height; the middle is low land, with hills gradually rifing behind, one towering above another, and terminating in the chain of mountains which appeared to be far inland.

In the evening I went on fhore, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, with the pinnace and yawl, and a party of men. We landed abreaft of the fhip, on the ealt fide of the
1769. October. Sunday 8. river, which was here about forty yards broad; but feeing fome natives on the weft fide whom I wifhed to fpeak with, and finding the river not fordable, I ordered the yawl in to carry us over, and left the pinnace at the entrance. When we came near the place where the people were affembled, they all ran away; however, we landed, and leaving four boys to take care of the yawl, we walked up to fome huts which were about two or three hundred yards from the water-fide. When we had got fome diftance from the boat, four men, armed with long lances, rufhed out of the woods, and running up to attack the boat, would certainly have cut her off, if the people in the pinnace had not difcovered them, and called to the boys to drop down the ftream: the boys inftantly obeyed; but being clofely purfued by the Indians, the Cockfwain of the pinnace, who had the charge of the boats, fired a mufquet over their heads; at this they ftopped and looked round them, but in a few minutes renewed the purfuit, brandifhing their lances in a threatening manner: the Cockfwain then fired a fecond mufquet over their heads, but of this they took no notice; and one of them lifting up his fpear to dart it at the boat, another piece was fired, which fhot him dead. When he fell, the other three flood motionlefs for fome minutes, as if petrified with aftonifhment; as foon as they recovered, they went back, dragging after them the dead body, which however they foon left, that it might not incumber their flight. At the report of the firf mufquet we drew together, having ftraggled to a little diftance from each other, and made the beft of our way back to the boat; and croffing the river, we foon faw the Indian lying dead upon the ground. Upon examining the body, we found
1769. October. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Sunday } 8 .}$
that he had been fhot through the heart: he was a man of the middle fize and fature ; his complexion was brown, but not very dark; and one fide of his face was tattowed in £piral lines of a very regular figure: he was covered with a fine cloth, of a manufacture altogether new to us, and it was tied on exactly according to the reprefentation in Valentyn's Account of Abel Tafman's Voyage, vol. iii. part 2. page 50. his hair alfo was tied in a knot on the top of his head, but had no feather in it. We returned immediately to the fhip, where we could hear the people on fhore talking with great earneftnefs, and in a very loud tone, probably about what had happened, and what fhould be done.

In the morning, we faw feveral of the natives where they had been feen the night before, and fome walking with a quick pace towards the place where we had landed, moft of them unarmed; but three or four with long pikes in their hands. As I was defirous to eftablifh an intercourfe with them, I ordered three boats to be manned with feamen and marines, and proceeded towards the fhore, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, the other Gentlemen, and Tupia; about fifty of them feemed to wait for our landing, on the oppofite fide of the river, which we thought a fign of fear, and feated themfelves upon the ground : at firft, therefore, myfelf, with only Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia, landed from the little boat, and advanced towards them ; but we had not proceeded many paces before they all ftarted up, and every man produced either a long pike, or a fnall weapon of green Talc, extremely well polifhed, about a foot long, and thick enough to weigh four or five pounds: Tupia called to them in the language of Otaheite; but they anfwered only by flourithing their weapons, and making figns to us to depart; a mufquet was then fired wide of them, and the ball ftruck the water, the river being ftill between us:
they faw the effect, and defifted from their threats ; but we thought it prudent to retreat till the marines could be landed. This was foon done; and they marched, with a jack carried before them, to a little bank, about fifty yards from the water-fide; here they were drawn up, and I again advanced, with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander; Tupia, Mr. Green, and Mr. Monkhoufe, being with us. Tupia was again directed to fpeak to them, and it was with great pleafure that we perceived he was perfectly underfood, he and the natives fpeaking only different dialects of the fame language. He told them that we wanted provifion and water, and would give them iron in exchange, the properties of which he explained as well as he was able. They were willing to trade, and defired that we would come over to them for that purpofe : to this we confented, provided they would lay by their arms; which, however, they could by no means be perfuaded to do. During this converfation, Tupia warned us to be upon our guard, for that they were not our friends: we then preffed them in our turn to come over to us; and at laft one of them ftripped himfelf, and fwam over without his arms: he was almoft immediately followed by two more, and foon after by moft of the reft, to the number of twenty or thirty; but thefe brought their arms with them. We made them all prefents of iron and beads; but they feemed to fet little value upon either, particularly the iron, not having the leaft idea of its ufe; fo that we got nothing in return but a few feathers: they offered indeed to exchange their arms for ours, and, when we refufed, made many attempts to fnatch them out of our hands. As foon as they came over, Tupia repeated his declaration, that they were not our friends, and again warned us to be upon our guard; their attempts to fnatch our weapons, therefore, did not fucceed; and we gave them to underftand by Tupia, that we fhould
1769. October. Monday 9. be obliged to kill them if they offered any farther violence. In a few minutes, however, Mr. Green happening to turn about, one of them fnatched away his hanger, and retiring to a little diftance, waved it round his head, with a flout of exultation : the reft now began to be extremely infolent, and we flaw more coming to join them from the oppofite file of the river. It was therefore become neceffary to reprefs them, and Mr. Banks fired at the man who had taken the hanger with foal shot, at the diftance of about fifteen yards: when the foot fuck him, he ceafed his cry ; but inftead of returning the hanger, continued to flourifh it over his head, at the fame time lowly retreating to a greater diflance. Mr. Monkhouse feeing this, fired at him with ball, and he inftantly dropped. Upon this the main body, who had retired to a rock in the middle of the river upon the firft difcharge, began to return; two that were near to the man who had been killed, ran up to the body, one feized his weapon of green Talc, and the other endeavoured to fecure the hanger, which Mr. Monkhoufe had but juft time to prevent. As all that had retired to the rock were now advancing, three of us difcharged our pieces, loaded only with fall foot, upon which they foam back for the fore; and we perceived, upon their landing, that two or three of them were wounded. They retired lowly up the country, and we reimbarked in our boats.
As we had unhappily experienced that nothing was to be done with there people at this place, and finding the water in the river to be fat, I proceeded in the boats round the head of the bay in fearch of frefli water, and with a defign, if poffible, to furprife fome of the natives, and take them on board, where by kind treatment and prefents I might obtain their friendfhip, and by their means eflablifh an amicable correfpondence with their countrymen.

To my great regret, I found no place where I could land, a dangerous furf every where beating upon the fhore ; but I faw two canoes coming in from the fea, one under fail, and
1769. October. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Monday } 9 .}$ the other worked with paddles. I thought this a favourable opportunity to get fome of the people into my poffeflion without mifchief, as thofe in the canoe were probably fifhermen and without arms, and I had three boats full of men. I therefore difpofed the boats fo as moft effectually to intercept them in their way to the fhore; the people in the canoe that was paddled perceived us fo foon, that by making to the neareft land with their utmof ftrength, they efcaped us; the other failed on till fhe was in the midft of us, without difcerning what we were; but the moment fhe difcovered us, the people on board ftruck their fail, and took to their paddles, which they plied fo brifkly that fle out-ran the boat. They were however within hearing, and Tupia called out to them to come along fide, and promifed for us that they fhould come to no hurt : they chofe, however, rather to truft to their paddles than our promifes, and continued to make from us with all their power. I then ordered a mufquet to be fired over their heads, as the leaft exceptionable expedient to accomplifh my defign, hoping it would either make them furrender or leap into the water. Upon the difcharge of the piece, they ceafed paddling; and all of them, being feven in number, began to ftrip, as we imagined to jump overboard; but it happened otherwife. They immediately formed a refolution not to fly, but to fight; and when the boat came up, they began the attack with their paddles, and with ftones and other offenfive weapons that were in the boat, fo vigoroufly, that we were obliged to fire upon them in our own defence: four were unhappily killed, and the other three who were boys, the eldeft about nineteen, and the youngeft about eleven, inflantly leaped into the water;

[^7]176 .
October. the eldeft fwam with great vigour, and refifted the attempts of our people to take him into the boat by every effort that he could make: he was however at laft overpowered, and the other two were taken up with lefs difficulty. I am confcious that the feeling of every reader of humanity will cenfure me for having fired upon thefe unhappy people, and it is impofible that, upon a calm review, I fhould approve it myfelf. They certainly did not deferve death for not chufing to confide in my promifes; or not confenting to come on board my boat, even if they had apprehended no danger; but the nature of my fervice required me to obtain a knowlege of their country, which I could no otherwife effect than by forcing my way into it in a hoftile manner, or gaining admiflion through the confidence and good-will of the people. I had already tried the power of prefents without effeet; and I was now prompted, by my defire to avoid further hoftilities, to get fome of them on board, as the only method left of convincing them that we intended them no harm, and had it in our power to contribute to their gratification and convenience. Thus far my intentions certainly were not criminal; and though in the conteft, which I had not the leaft reafon to expect, our victory might have been complete witliout fo great an expence of life ; yct in fuch fituations, when the conmmand to fire has been given, no man can reftrain its excefs, or prefcribe its effect.

As foon as the poor wretches whom we had taken out of the water were in the boat, they fquatted down, expeeting no doubt inftantly to be put to death: we made hafte to convince them of the contrary, by every method in our power; we furnifhed them with clothes, and gave them every other tefimony of kindnefs that could remove their fears and engage their good-will. Thofe who are acquainted with human nature will not wonder, that the fudden joy of thefe
young favages at being unexpectedly delivered from the fear of death, and kindly treated by thofe whom they fuppofed would have been their inftant exccutioners, furmounted their concern for the friends they had loft, and was ftrongly expreffed in their countenances and bchaviour. Before we reached the fhip, their fufpicions and fears being wholly removed, they appeared to be not only reconciled to their fituation but in high fpirits, and upon being offered fome bread when they came on board, they devoured it with a voracious appetite. They anfwered and afked many queftions, with great appearance of pleafure and curiofity ; and when our dinner came, they expreffed an inclination to tafte every thing that they faw: they feemed beft pleafed with the falt pork, though we had other provifions upon the table. At fun-fet, they eat another meal with great cagernefs, each devouring a large quantity of bread, and drinking above a quart of water. We then made them beds upon the lockers, and they went to fleep with great feeming content. In the night, however, the tumult of their minds having fubfided, and given way to reflection, they fighed often and loud. Tupia, who was always upon the watch to comfort them, got $u_{p}$, and by foothing and encouragement made them not only eafy but cheerful; their cheerfulnefs was encouraged fo that they fung a fong with a degree of tafte that furprifed us: the tune was folemn and flow, like thofe of our Pfalms, containing many notes and femitones. Their countenances were intelligent and expreffive, and the middlemoft, who fecmed to be about fifteen, had an opennefs in his afpect, and an eafe in his deportment which were very ftriking: we found that the two eldeft were brothers, and that their names were Taahourange and Koikerange; the name of the youngeft was Maragovete. As we were returning to the fhip, after having taken thefe boys into the boat, we picked up a large piece of pummice fone floating upon the water ; a fure fign that there either is, or has been a volcano in this neighbourhood.
In the morning, they all feemed to be cheerful, and eat another enormous meal; after this we dreffed them, and adorned them with bracelets, anclets, and necklaces, after their own fafhion, and the boat being hoifted out, they were told that we were going to fet them afhore : this produced a tranfport of joy; but upon perceiving that we made towards our firt landing-place near the river, their countenances changed, and they entreated with great earnefnefs that they might not be fet afhore at that place, becaufe they faid, it was inhabited by their enemies, who would kill them and eat them. This was a great difappointment to me; becaufe I hoped the report and appearance of the boys would procure a favourable reception for ourfelves. I had already fent an officer on fhore with the marines and a party of men to cut wood, and I was determined to land near the place; not however to abandon the boys, if, when we got afhore, they fhould be unwilling to leave us; but to fend a boat with them in the evening to that part of the bay to which they pointed, and which they called their home. Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander and Tupia were with me, and upon our landing with the boys, and croffing the river, they feemed at firft to be unwilling to leave us; but at length they fuddenly changed their mind, and, though not without a manifeft ftruggle, and fome tears, they took their leave: when they were gone, we proceeded along a fwamp, with a defign to fhoot fome ducks, of which we faw great plenty, and four of the marines attended us, walking abreat of us upon a bank that overlooked the country. After we had advanced about a mile, thefe men called out to us and told us, that a large body of the Indians was in fight, and advancing at a
great rate. Upon receiving this intelligence, we drew together, and refolved to make the beft of our way to the boats; we had fcarcely begun to put this into execution, when the three Indian boys ftarted fuddenly from fome bufhes, where they had concealed themfelves, and again. claimed our protection: we readily received them, and repairing to the beach as the cleareft place, we walked brifkly towards the boats. The Indians were in two bodies; one ran along the bank which had been quitted by the marines, the other fetched a compafs by the fwamp fo that we could not fee them: when they perceived that we had formed into one body, they flackened their pace; butftill followed us in a gentle walk; that they flackened their pace, was for us, as well as for them, a fortunate circumftance; for when we came to the fide of the river, where we expected to find the boats that were to carry us over to the wooders, we found the pinnace at lealt a-mile from her ftation, having been fent to pick up a bird which had been fhot by the officer on fhore, and the little boat was obliged to make three trips before we could all get over to the reft of the party. As foon as we were drawn up on the other fide, the Indians came down, not in a body as we expected, but by two or three at a time, all armed, and in a fhort time their number increafed to about two hundred : as we now defpaired of making peace with them, feeing that the dread of our fmall arms did not keep them at a diftance, and that the fhip was too far off to reach the place with a fhot, we refolved to re-imbark, left our fay fhould imbroil: us in another quarrel, and coft more of the Indians their lives. We therefore advanced towards the pinnace which, was now returning, when one of the boys fuddenly cried. out, that his uncle was among the people who had marcheds down to us, and defired us to ftay and talk with them : wecomplied, and a parley immediately commenced between.
theme
1769. October. $\xrightarrow[\text { Tuesday }]{ }$
them and Tupia; during which the boys held up every thing we had given them as tokens of our kindnefs and liberality; but neither would either of the boys fivim over to them, or any of them to the boys. The body of the man who had been killed the day before, fill lay expofed upon the beach; the boys fecing it lie very near us, went up to it, and covered it with come of the clothes that we had given them; and foo after a fingle man, unarmed, who proved to be the uncle of Maragovete, the youngeft of the boys, fam over to us, bringing in his hand a green branch, which we fuppofed, as well here as at Otaheite, to be an emblem of peace. We received his branch by the hands of Tupia, to whom he gave it, and made him many prefents; we alfo invited him to go on board the hip, but he declined it; we therefore left him, and expected that his nephew, and the two other young Indians would have fid with him, but to our great furprize, they chofe rather to go with us. As foo as we had retired, he went and gathered another green branch, and with this in his hand, he approached the dead body which the youth had covered with part of his clothes, walking fideways, with many ceremonies, and then throwing it towards him. When this was done, he returned to his companions, who had fat down upon the fad to observe the iffue of his negotiation : they immediately gathered round him, and continued in a body above an hour, without feeming to take any farther notice of us. We were more curious than they, and obferving them with our glaffes from on board the flip, we fay forme of them crofs the river upon a kind of raft, or catamarine, and four of them carry off the dead body which had been covered by the boy, and over which his uncle had performed the ceremony of the branch, upon a kind of bier, between four men : the other body was dill fuffered to remain where it had been firft left.

After dinner, I directed Tupia to ank the boys, if they had now any objection to going afhore, where we had left their uncle, the body having been carried off, which we underftood was a ratification of peace : they faid, they had not; and the boat being ordered, they went into it with great alacrity: when the boat, in which I had fent two midhipmen, came to land, they went willingly afhore; but foon after fhe put off, they returned to the rocks, and wading into the water, earneftly entreated to be taken on board again; but the people in the boat, having pofitive orders to leave them, could not comply. We were very attentive to what happened on: fhore, and keeping a conftant watch with our glaffes, we faus a man pafs the river upon another raft, and fetch them to a place where forty or fifty of the natives were affembled, whor clofed round them, and continued in the fame place till funfet: upon looking again, when we faw them in motion, we could plainly diftinguifh our three prifoners, wha feparated themfelves from the reft, came down to the beach, and having waved their hands three times towards the fhip, rar nimbly back and jeined their companions, who walked leifurely away towards that part which the boys had pointed to as their dwelling-place; we had therefore the greateft reafon to believe that no mifchicf would happen to them, efpecially as we perceived that they went off in tile clothes we had given them.

After it was dark, loud voices were heard on fhore in thebottom of the bay as ufual, of which we could never learn: the meaning.

## C H A P. II.

A Defcription of Poverty Bay, and the Face of the adjacent Country. The Range from thence to Cape Turnagain, and back to Tolaga; with fome Account of the People and the Country, and feveral Incidents that bappened on that Part of the Coaft.
1769. October. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Wednef. 11. }}$

THE next morning, at fix o'clock, we weighed, and ftood away from this unfortunate and inhofpitable place, to which I gave the name of Poverty Bay, and which by the natives is called Taoneroa or Long Sand, as it did not afford us a fingle article that we wanted except a little wood. It lies in latitude $38^{\circ} 42^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $181^{\circ} 36^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.; it is in the form of an horfe-fhoe, and is known by an ifland lying clofe under the north eaft point: the two points which form the entrance are high, with fteep white cliffs, and lie a league and a half or two leagues from each other, N.E. by E. and S.W. by W.: the depth of water in the bay is from twelve to five fathom, with a fandy bottom and good anchorage; but the fituation is open to the wind between the fouth and caft: boats can go in and out of the river at any time of the tide in fine weather; but as there is a bar at the entrance, no boat can go either in or out when the fea runs high : the beft place to attempt it, is on the north caft fide, and it is there practicable when it is not fo in any other part. The fhore of the bay, a little within its entrance, is a low flat fand; behind which, at a fmall diftance, the face of the country is finely diverfified by hills and valleys, all clothed with
with wood, and covered with verdure. The country alfo appears to be well inhabited, efpecially in the valleys leading up from the bay, where we daily faw fmoke rifing in clouds one behind another to a great diftance, till the view terminated in mountains of a ftupendous height.

The fouth weft point of the bay I named Young Nick's Head, after Nicholas Young, the boy who firft faw the land; at noon, it bore N. W. by W. diftant about three or four leagues, and we were then about three miles from the fhore. The main land extended from N. E. by N. to fouth, and I propofed to follow the direction of the coalt to the fouthward as far as the latitude of 40 or 41 ; and then, if I met with no encouragement to proceed farther, to return to the north ward.

In the afternoon we lay becalmed, which the people on fhore perceiving, feveral canoes put off, and came within lefs than a quarter of a mile of the veffel; but could not be perfuaded to come nearer, though Tupia exerted all the powers of his lungs and his eloquence upon the occafion, thouting, and promifing that they fhould not be hurt. Another canoe was now feen coming from Poverty Bay, with only four people on board, one of whom we well remembered to have feen in our firt interview upon the rock. This canoe, without flopping or taking the leaft notice of the others, came directly alongfide of the fhip, and with very little perfuafion, we got the Indians on board. Their example was foon followed by the reft, and we had about us feven canoes, and about fifty men. We made them all prefents with a liberal hand; notwithftanding which, they were fo defirous to have more of our commodities, that they fold us every thing they had, even the clothes from their backs, and the paddles from their boats. There were but two weapons

Vol. II.
1769.

Ottober.
Wedner, 1,
1769. among them, thefe were the inftruments of green talc, which were fhaped fomewhat like a pointed battledore, with a fhort handle and tharp edges; they were called Patoo-Patoo, and were well contrived for clofe-fighting, as they would certainly fplit the thickeft fcull at a fingle blow.

When thefe people had recovered from the firft impreflions of fear, which notwithitanding their refolution in coming on board, had manifeftly thrown them into fome confufion, we enquired after our poor boys. The man who firft came on board immediately anfwered, that they were unhurt and at home; adding, that he had been induced to venture on board by the account which they had given him of the kindnefs with which they had been treated, and the wonders that were contained in the fhip.

While they were on board they fhewed every fign of friendfhip, and invited us very cordially to go back to our old bay, or to a fmall cove which they pointed out, that was not quite fo far off; but I chofe rather to profecute my difcoveries than go back, having reafon to hope that I fhould find a better harbour than any I had yet feen.

About an hour before fun-fet, the canoes put off from the fhip with the few paddles they had referved, which were fearcely fufficient to fet them on fhore; but by fome means or other three of their people were left behind: as foon as we difcovered it, we hailed them; but not one of them would return to take them on board: this greatly furprifed us; but we were furprifed ftill more to obferve that the deferted Indians did not feem at all uneafy at their fituation, but entertained us with dancing and finging after their manner, eat their fuppers, and went quietly to bed.

A light

A light breeze fpringing up foon after it was dark, we fteered along the fhore under an eafy fail till midnight, and then brought to, foon after which it fell calm; we were now fome leagues diftant from the place where the canoes had left us, and at day-break, when the Indians perceived it, they were feized with confternation and terror, and lamented their fituation in loud complaints, with geftures of defpair and many tears. Tupia, with great difficulty, pacified them; and about feven o'clock in the morning, a light brecze Thurfayiz. fpringing up, we continued to fland fouth weft along the fhore. Fortunately for our poor Indians, two canoes came off about this time, and made towards the fhip: they ftopped, however, at a little diftance, and feemed unwilling to truft themfelves nearer. Our Indians were greatly agitated in this ftate of uncertainty, and urged their fellows to come alongfide of the fhip, both by their voice and geflures, with the utmoft eagernefs and impatience. Tupia interpreted what they faid, and we were much furprifed to find, that, among other arguments, they affured the people in the canoes, we did not eat men. We now began ferioufly to believe that this horrid cuftom prevailed among them; for what the boys had faid, we confidered as a mere hyperbolical expreffion of their fear. One of the canoes, at length, ventured to come under the fhip's fide; and an old man came on board, who feemed to be a Chief from the finery of his garment, and the fuperiority of his weapon, which was a Patoo-Patoo, made of bone, that, as he faid, had belonget to a whale. He ftaid on board but a fhort time, and when he went away, he took with him our guefts, very much to the fatisfaction both of them and us.

At the time when we failed, we were abreaft of a point. from which the land trends S.S.W. and which, on account

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

${ }^{1766}$. of its figure, I called Cape Table. This point lies fevere leagues to the fouthward of Poverty Bay, in latitude $39^{\circ} 7^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $181^{\circ} 36^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.: it is of a confiderable height, makes in a fharp angle, and appears to be quite flat at the top.

In flecring along the flore to the fouthward of the Cape, at the diftance of two or three miles, our foundings were from twenty to thirty fathom, having a chain of rocks between us and the fhore, which appeared at different heights. above the water.

At noon, Cape Table bore N. 20 E. diftant about four leagues, and a fmall ifland, which was the fouthermoft land in fight, bore S. 70 W . at the diftance of about three miles.

JRand of Portland. This illand, which the natives call Teahowray, I named the Island of Portland, from its very great refemblance to Portland in the Englifh Channel : it lies about a mile from a point on the main; but there appears to be a ridge of rocks, extending nearly, if not quite, from one to the other. N. 57 E. two miles from the fouth point of Portland, lies a funken rock, upon which the fea breaks with great violence. We paffed between this rock and the land, having from feventeen to twenty fathom.

In failing along the fhore, we faw the natives affembled in great numbers as well upon Portland Inland as the main: we could alfo diftinguifh feveral fpots of ground that were cultivated; fome feemed to be frefh turned up, and lay in furrows like ploughed land, and fome had plants upon them in different ftages of their growth. We faw alfo in two places, high rails upon the ridges of hills, like what we had feen upon the peninfula at the north eaft head of Poverty bay: as they were ranged in lines only, and not fo as to en-
clofe an area, we could not guefs at their ufe, and therefore fuppofed they might be the work of fuperftition.
1769. october.

Thurfday 12。

About noon another canoe appeared, in which were four men; the came within about a quarter of a mile of us, where the people on board feemed to perform divers ceremonies: one of them, who was in the bow, fometimes feemed to ank and to offer peace, and fometimes to threaten war, by brandifhing a weapon that he held in his hand: fometimes alfo he danced, and fometimes he fung. Tupia talked much to him, but could not perfuade him to come to the fhip.

Between one and two o'clock we difcovered land to the weftward of Portland, extending to the fouthward as far as we could fce; and as the fhip was hauling round the fouth end of the ifland, fhe fuddenly fell into fhoal water and broken ground: we had indeed always feven fathom or more, but the foundings were never twice the fame, jumping at once from feven fathom to eleven; in a thort time; however, we got clear of all danger, and had again deep water under us.

At this time the ifland lay within a mile of us, making in white cliffs, and a long fpit of low land running from it towards the main. On the fides of thefe cliffs fat vaft numbers of people, looking at us with a fixed attention, and it is probable that they perceived fome appearance of hurry and confufion on board, and fome irregularity in the working of the fhip, while we were getting clear of the fhallow water and broken ground, from which they might infer that we were alarmed or in diftrefs; we thought that they wifhed to take advantage of our fituation, for five canoes were put off with the utmof expedition, full of men, and well armed: they came fo near, and fhewed fo hoftile a difpofition by fhouting, brandifhing their lances, and ufing threatening geftures,
1769. October. Thurday 12.
geftures, that we were in fome pain for our fmall boat, which was ftill employed in founding: a mufket was therefore fired over them, but finding it did them no harm, they feemed rather to be provoked than intimidated, and I therefore fired a four pounder, charged with grape-fhot, wide of them: this had a better effect; upon the report of the piece they all rofe up and fhouted, but inftead of continuing the chace, drew altogether, and after a fhort confultation, went quietly away.

Having got round Portland, we hauled in for the land N. W. having a gentle brecze at N. E. which about five o'clock died away, and obliged us to anchor; we had one and twenty fathom, with a fine fandy bottom: the fouth point of Portland bore S.E. $\frac{1}{3}$ S. diftant about two leagues, and a low point on the main bore $\mathrm{N} . \frac{1}{2} \mathrm{E}$. : in the fame direction with this low point, there runs a deep bay, behind the land of which Cape Table is the extremity, fo as to make this land a peninfula, leaving only a low narrow neck between that and the main. Of this peninfula, which the natives call Terakaco, Cape Table is the north point, and Portland the fouth.

While we lay at anchor, two more canoes came off to us, one armed, and the other a fmall fifhing-boat, with only four men in her; they came fo near that they entered into converfation with Tupia; they anfwered all the queftions that he afked them with great civility, but could not be perfuaded to come on board; they came near enough, however, to receive feveral prefents that were thrown to them from the fhip, with which they feemed much pleafed, and went away. During the night many fires were kept upon fhore, probably to fhew us that the inlabitants were too much upon their guard to be furprized.

About five o'clock in the morning of the 13 th, a breeze fpringing up northerly, we weighed, and fteered in for the land. The fhore here forms a large bay, of which Portland
1769. October. Friday 13 . is the north eaft point, and the bay that runs behind Cape Table an arm. This arm I had a great inclination to examine, becaufe there appeared to be fafe anchorage in it, but not being fure of that, and the wind being right an end, I was unwilling to fpare the time. Four and twenty fathom was the greateft depth within Portland, but the ground was every where clear. The land near the fhore is of a moderate height, with white cliffs and fandy beaches; within, it rifes into mountains, and upon the whole the furface is hilly, for the moft part covered with wood, and to appearance pleafant and fertile. In the morning nine canoes came after the fhip, but whether with peaceable or hoftile intentions we could not tell, for we foon left them behind us.

In the evening we flood in for a place that had the appearance of an opening, but found no harbour; we therefore flood out again, and were foon followed by a large canoe, with eighteen or twenty men, all armed, who, though they could not reach us, fhouted defiance, and brandifhed their weapons, with many geftures of menace and infult.

In the morning we had a view of the mountains inland, upon which the fnow was ftill lying: the country near the fhore was low and unfit for culture, but in one place we perceived a patch of fomewhat yellow, which had greatly the appearance of a corn field, yet was probably nothing more than fome dead flaggs, which are not uncommon in fwampy places: at fome diftance we faw groves of trees, which appeared high and tapering, and being not above two leagues from the fouth weft cod of the great bay, in which we had been coafting for the two laft days, I hoifted out the pinnace

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769 . and long-boat to fearch for frefh water; but juft as they
OCeber. October. were about to put off, we faw feveral boats full of people coming from the fhore, and therefore I did not think it fafe for them to leave the fhip. About ten o'clock, five of thefe boats having drawn together, as if to hold a confultation, made towards the fhip, having on board between eighty and ninety men, and four more followed at fome diftance, as if to fultain the attack: when the firft five came within about a hundred yards of the fhip, they began to fing their war fong, and brandifhing their pikes, prepared for an engage ment. We had now no time to lofe, for if we could not prevent the attack, we fhould come under the unhappy neceffity of ufing our fire-arms againft them, which we were very defirous to avoid. Tupia was therefore ordered to acquaint them that we had weapons which, like thunder, would deftroy them in a moment; that we would immediately convince them of their power by directing their effect fo that they fhould not be hurt; but that if they perfifted in any hoftile attempt, we fhould be obliged to ufe them for our defence: a four pounder, loaded with grape-fhot, was then difcharged wide of them, which produced the defired effect; the report, the flafh, and above all, the fhot, which fpread very far in the water, fo intimidated them, that they began to paddle away with all their might: Tupia, however, calling after them, and affuring them that if they would come unarmed, they fhould be kindly received; the people in one of the boats put their arms on board of another, and came under the fhip's fern; we made them feveral prefents, and fhould certainly have prevailed upon them to come on board, if the other canocs had not come up, and again threatened us, by fhoating and brandifling their weapons: at this the people who had come to the thip unarmed, expreffed great difpleafure, and foon after they all went away.

In the afternoon we ftood over to the fouth point of the bay, but not reaching it before it was dark, we food off and on all night. At eight the next morning, being a-breaft of the point, feveral fifhing boats came off to us, and fold us fome ftinking fifh: it was the beft they had, and we were willing to trade with them upon any terms: thefe pcople behaved very well, and we fhould have parted good friends if it had not been for a large canoe, with two and twenty armed men on board, which came boldly up along fide of the fhip. We foon faw that this boat had nothing for traffick, yet we gave them two or three pieces of cloth, an article which they feemed very fond of. I obferved that one man had a black fkin thrown over him, fomewhat refembling that of a bear, and being defirous to know what animal was its firf owner, I offered him for it a piece of red baize, and he feemed greatly pleafed with the bargain, immediately pulling off the 1 kin, and holding it up in the boat; he would not, however, part with it till he had the cloth in his poffeffion, and as there could be no transfer of property, if with equal caution I had infifted upon the fame condition, I ordered the cloth to be handed down to him, upon which, with amazing coolnefs, inftead of fending up the fkin, he began to pack up both that and the baize, which he had received as the purchafe of it, in a bafket, without paying the leaft regard to my demand or remonftrances, and foon after, with the fifhing boats, put off from the fhip; when they were at fome diftance, they drew together, and after a fhort confultation returned; the fifhermen offered more fifh, which, though good for nothing, was purchafed, and trade was again renewed. Among others who were placed over the fhip's fide to hand up what we bought, was little Taycto, Tupia's boy; and one of the Indians, watching his opportunity, fuddenly feized him, and dragged him

Vol. II.
R r
2769. Oatober. Sunday is.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. down into the canoe; two of them held him down in the OÉtcher. $\xlongequal{\text { Cther. }}$ fore part of it, and the others, with great activity, paddled her oil, the reft of the canocs following as faft as they could: upon this the marines, who were under arms upon deck, were ordered to fire. The flot was directed to that part of the canoe which was fartheft from the boy, and rather wide of her, being willing rather to mifs the rowers than to hurt him: it happened, however, that one man dropped, upon which the others quitted their hold of the boy, who inftantly: leaped into the water, and fwam towards the fhip; the large canoc immediately pulled round and followed him, but fome mufquets, and a great gun being fired at her, fhe defilled from the purfuit. The hip being brought to, a boat was lowered, and the poor boy taken up unhurt, though fo terrified that for a time he feemed to be deprived of his fenfes. Some of the gentlemen who traced the canoes tofhore with their glaffes, faid, that they faw three men carried up the beach, who appeared to be either dead or wholly difableds by their wounds.

To the cape off which this unhappy tranfaction happened, I gave the name of Cape Kidnappers. It lies in latitude $39^{\circ}$ $43^{\prime}$, and longitude $182^{\circ} 24^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and is rendered remarkable by two white rocks like hay flacks, and the high white cliffs on each fide. It lies S. W. by WV. difant thirteen leagues from the ifle of Portland; and between them is the bay of which it is the fouth point, and which, in honour of Sir Edward Hawke, then Firft Lord of the Admiralty, I called Hawne's Hawke's Bay. Bay. We found in it from twenty-four to feven fathom, and good anchorage. From Cape Kidnappers the land trencis S. S. W. and in this direction we made our run along the fhore, keeping at about a league diflance, with a fleady breeze and clear weather.

## ROUND THE WORLD.

As foon as Tayeto recovered from his fright, he brought a fifh to Tupia, and told him, that he intended it as an offering to his Eatua, or god, in gratitude for his efcape; Tupia com-
1769. October. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Sunday } \mathrm{i} \text { : }}$ mended his piety, and ordered him to throw the fifh into the fea, which was accordingly done.

About two o'clock in the afternoon, we paffed a fmall but high white ifland, lying clofe to the fhore, upon which we faw many houfes, boats, and people. The people we concluded to be fifhers, becaufe the ifland was totally barren; we faw feveral people alfo on fhore, in a fmall bay upon the main, within the ifland. At cleven, we brought to till day-light, and then made fail to the fouthward, along the fhore. About feven o'clock we paft a high point of land, which lies S. S. W. twelve leagues from Cape Kidnappers: from this point the land trends three-fourths of a point more to the weftward; at ten, we faw more land open to the fouthward, and at noon, the fouthermoft land that was in fight, bore S. 39 W . diftant eight or ten leagues, and a high bluff head, with yellowifh cliffs, bore W. diftant about two miles: the depth of water was thirty-two fathom.

In the afternoon we had a frefh breeze at weft, and during the night variable light airs and calms: in the morning a Tuefday 17. gentle breeze fprung up between the N. W. and N.E. and having till now flood to the fouthward, without feeing any probability of mecting with a harbour, and the country manifefly altering for the worfe, I thought that flanding farther in that direction would be attended with no advantage, but on the contrary would be a lofs of time that might be employed with a better profpect of fuccefs in cxamining the coalt to the northward; about one, therefore, in the afternoon, I tacked, and flood north, with a frech breeze at weit. The high bluff head, with ycllowifh cliffs, which we were
1769. October. Tuerday 17.
a-breaft of at noon, I called Cape Turnagain, becaufe here we turned back. It lies in latitude $40^{\circ} 34^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $182^{\circ}$ $55^{\prime}$ W. diftant eighteen leagues S. S. W. and S. S. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. from Cape Kidnappers. The land between them is of a very unequal lieight; in fome places it is lofty next the fea with white cliffs, in others low, with fandy beaches: the face of the country is not fo well clothed with wood as it is about Hawke's bay, but looks more like our high downs in England: it is, however, to all appearance, well inhabited, for as we ftood along the flore, we faw feveral villages, not only in the vallies, but on the tops and fides of the hills, and fmoke in many other places. The ridge of mountains which has been mentioned before, extends to the fouthward farther than we could fee, and was then every where chequered with fnow. At night we faw two fires inland, fo very large, that we concluded they muft have been made to clear the land for tillage; but however that be, they are a demonflration that the part of the country where they appeared is inhabited.
Wednef. 18. On the 18 th, at four o'clock in the morning, Cape Kidnappers bore N. 32 W. diftant two leagues: in this fituation we had fixty-two fathom, and when the Cape bore W. by N. diftant three or four leagues, we had forty-five fathom: in the mid-way between the ifle of Portland and the Cape we had fixty-five fathom. In the evening, being a-breaft of the peninfula within Portland ifland, called Terakako, a canoe came off from that fhore, and with much difficulty overtook the fhip; there were on board five people, two of whom appeared to be Chiefs, and the other three fervants: the Chiefs, with very little invitation came on board, and ordered the reft to remain in their canoe. We treated them with great kindnefs, and they were not backward in expreffing
their fatisfaction; they went down into the cabbin, and after a fhort time told us that they had determined not to go on fhore till the next morning. As the fleeping on board was an honour which we neither expected nor defired, I remonftrated ftrongly againft it, and told them, that on their account it would not be proper, as the fhip would probably be at a great diftance from where fhe was then, the next morning: they perfifted, however, in their refolution, and as I found it impoffible to get rid of them without turning them by force out of the fhip, I complied : as a proper precaution, however, I propofed to take their fervants alfo on board, and hoift their canoe into the fhip; they made no objection, and this was accordingly done. The countenance of one of thefe Chiefs was the moft open and ingenuous of all I have ever feen, and I very foon gave up every fufpicion of his having any finifter defign: they both examined every thing they faw with great curiofity and attention, and received very thankfully fuch little prefents as we made them; neither of them, however, could be perfuaded either to eat or drink, but their fervants devoured every thing they could get with great voracity. We found that thefe men had heard of our kindnefs and liberality to the natives who had been on board before, yet we thought the confidence they placed in us, an extraordinary inftance of their fortitude. At night I brought to till day-light, and then made fail; at feven in Thurfay $\mathrm{g}_{\mathrm{g}}$. the morning, I brought to again under Cape Table, and fent away our guefts with their canoe, who expreffed fome furprife at feeing themfelves fo far from home, but landed a-breaft of the fhip. At this time I faw other canoes putting off from the fhore, but I food away to the northward without waiting for their coming up.

About three, I paffed a remarkable head land, which I called Gable-End-Foreland, from the very great likenefs

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. Of the white cliff at the point, to the gable-end of a houfe:

## October.

Thurday 19 . it is not more remarkable for its figure, than for a rock which rifes like a fpire at a little diftance. It lies from Cape Table N. 24 E. diftant about twelve leagues. The fhore between them forms a bay, within which lies Poverty bay, at the diftance of four leagues from the head land, and eight from the Cape. At this place three canoes came off to us, and one man came on board; we gave him fome trifles, and he foon returned to his boat, which, with all the reft, dropped a-ftern.
Friday 20. In the morning I made fail in fhore, in order to look into two bays, which appeared about two leagucs to the northward of the Foreland; the fouthermoft I could not fetch, but I anchored in the other about eleven o'clock.

Into this bay we were invited by the people on board many canoes, who pointed to a place where they faid there was plenty of frefh water: I did not find fo good a fhelter from the fea as I expected, but the natives who came about us, appearing to be of a friendly difpofition, I was determined to try whether I could not get fome knowlege of the country here before I proceeded farther to the northward.

In one of the canoes that came about us as foon as we anchored, we faw two men, who by their habits appeared to be Chiefs: one of them was dreffed in a jacket, which was ornamented, after their manner, with dog's fkin ; the jacket of the other was almoft covered with fmall tufts of red feathers. Thefe men I invited on board, and they entered the fhip with very little hefitation: I gave each of them about four yards of linen, and a fpike nail; with the linen they were much pleafed, but feemed to fet no value upon the nail. We perceived that they knew what had happened in Poverty bay, and we had therefore no reafon to doubt but that they would behave
behave peaceably; however, for further fecurity, Tupi was ordered to tell them for what purpofe we came thither, and to affure them that we would offer them no injury, if they offered none to us. In the mean time thole who remaine in the canoes traded with our people very fairly for what they happened to have with them: the Chiefs, who were old men, flaid with us till we had dined, and about two o'clock I put off with the boats, manned and armed, in order to go on shore in fearch of water, and the two Chiefs went into the boat with me. The afternoon was tempeftuous, with much rain, and the furf every where ran fo high, that although we rowed almost round the bay, we found no place where we could land: I determined therefore to return to the flip, which being intimated to the Chiefs, they called to the people on frore, and ordered a canoe to be feat off for themfelves; this was accordingly done, and they left us, promifing to come on board again in the morning, and bring us forme fill and fret potatoes.

In the evening, the weather having become fair and moderate, the boats were again ordered out, and I landed, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander. We were received with great expreflions of friendfhip by the natives, who behavel with a fcrupulous attention not to give offence. In particular, they took care not to appear in great bodies : one family, or the inhabitants of two or three houfes only, were generally placed together, to the number of fifteen or twenty, confifting of men, women, and children. There little companies fat upon the ground, not advancing towards us, but inviting us to them, by a kind of beckon, moving one hand towards the breaft. We made them feveral little prefents; and in our walk round the bay found two fall ftreams of fresh water. This convenience; and the friendly behaviour of the people; determined me to flay at leaf $a^{2}$

$$
\underbrace{}_{\text {Friday } \begin{array}{l}
1759 . \\
\text { October. }
\end{array}}
$$

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. day, that I might fill fome of my empty cafks, and give Mr.

## October.

Banks an opportunity of examining the natural produce of the country.
Saturday 21. In the morning of the 2ift, I fent Lieutenant Gore on fhore, to fuperintend the watering, with a ftrong party of men; and they were foon followed by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, with Tupia, Tayeto, and four others.
The natives fat by our people, and feemed pleafed to obferve them; but did not intermix with them : they traded however, chiefly for cloth, and after a fhort time applied to their ordinary occupations, as if no ftranger had been among them. In the forenoon, feveral of their boats went out a fifhing, and at dinner time every one repaired to his refpective dwelling; from which, after a certain time, he returned. Thefe fair appearances encouraged Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander to range the bay with very little precaution, where they found many plants, and fhot fome birds of exquifite beauty. In their walk, they vifited feveral houfes of the natives, and faw fomething of their manner of life; for they fhowed, without any referve, every thing which the Gentlemen defired to fec. They were fometimes found at their meals, which the approach of the flrangers never interrupted. Their food at this feafon confifted of fifh, with which, inftead of bread, they eat the root of a kind of fern, very like that which grows upon our commons in England. Thefe roots they fcorch over the fire, and then beat with a flick, till the bark and dry outfide fall off; what remains is a foft fubflance, fomewhat clammy and fwect, not unpleafing to the tafte, but mixed with three or four times its quantity of frings and fibres, which are very difagreeable; thefe were fwallowed by fome, but fpit out by the far greater number, who had bafkets under them to receive the rejected
part of what had been chewed, which had an appearance rery like that of tobacco in the fame flate. In other feafons they have certainly plenty of excellent vegetables; but no tame animals were feen among them except dogs, which were very fmall and ugly. Mr. Banks faw fome of their plantations, where the ground was as well broken down and tilled as even in the gardens of the moft curious people among us: in thefe fpots were fweet potatoes, coccos or eddas, which are well known and much efteemed both in the Eaft and Weft Indies, and fome gourds : the fweet potatoes were planted in fimall hills, fome ranged in rows, and others in quincunx, all laid by a line with the greatett regularity: the coccos were planted upon flat land, but none of them yet appeared above ground; and the gourds were fet in fmall hollows, or difhes, much as in England. Thefe plantations were of different extent, from one or two acres to ten: taken together, there appeared to be from 150 to 200 acres in cultivation in the whole bay, though we never faw an hundred people. Each diftrict was fenced in, generally with reeds, which were placed fo clofe together that there was fearcely room for a moufe to creep between.

The women were plain, and made themfelves more fo by painting their faces with red ocre and oil, which being generally frefh and wet upon their cheeks and foreheads, was eafily transferred to the nofes of thofe who thought fit to falute them; and that they were not wholly averfe to fuch familiarity, the nofes of feveral of our people flrongly teftified: they were, however, as great coquets as any of the moft fahhionable ladies in Europe, and the young ones as fkittifh as an unbroken filly: each of them wore a petticoat, under which there was a girdle, made of the blades of grafs highly perfumed, and to the girdle was faftened a fmall bunch of the leaves of fome fragrant plant, which ferved

[^8]1769. October. Saturday 21 .
1769. their modefty as its innermoft veil. The faces of the merr October. $\xrightarrow[\text { Saturday }=1]{\text {. }}$ were not fo generally painted, yet we faw one whofe whole body, and even his garments, were rubbed over with dry ocre, of which he kept a piece conftantly in his hand, and was every minute renewing the decoration in one part or another, where he fuppofed it was become deficient. In perfonal delicacy they were not equal to our friends at Otaheite, for the coldnefs of the climate did not invite them fo often to bathe; but we faw among them one inflance of cleanlinefs in which they exceeded them, and of which perhaps there is no example in any other Indian nation. Every: houfe, or every little clufter of three or four houfes, was furnifhed with a privy, fo that the ground was every where clean. The offals of their food, and other litter, were alfo piled up in regular dunghills, which probably they made ufe of at a proper time for manure.

In this decent article of civil œconomy they were beforehand with one of the moft confiderable nations of Europe, for I ann credibly informed, that, till the year 1760, there was no fuch thing as a privy in Madrid, the metropolis of Spain, though it is plentifully fupplied with water. Before that time it was the univerfal practice to throw the ordure out of the windows, during the night, into the freet, where numbers of men were employed to remove it, with fhovels, from the upper parts of the city to the lower, where it lay till it was dry, and was then carried away in carts, and depofited without the gates. His prefent Catholic Majefty, having determined to free his capital from fo grofs a nuifance, ordered, by proclamation, that the proprietor of every houfe fhould build a privy, and that finks, drains, and common-fewers fhould be made at the public expence. The Spaniards, though long accuftomed to an arbitrary government, refented this proclamation with great firit, as an infringe-
ment of the common rights of mankind, and made a vigorous flruggle againft its being carried into exccution. Every clafs devifed fome objection againft it, but the phyficians bid the faireft to intereft the king in the prefervation of the ancient privileges of his people ; for they remonftrated that if the filth was not, as ufual, thrown into the flreets, a fatal ficknefs would probably enfue, becaufe the putrefeent particles of the air, which fuch filth attracted, would then be imbibed by the human body. But this expedient, with every other that could be thought of, proved unfuccefsful, and the popular difcontent then ran fo high that it was very near producing an infurrection; his majefly, however, at length prevailed, and Madrid is now as clear as moft of the confiderable cities in Europe. But many of the citizens, probably upon the principles advanced by their phyficians, that heaps of filth prevent deleterious particles of air from fixing upon neighbouring fubftances, have, to keep their food wholefome, conftructed their privies by the kitchen firc.

In the evening, all our boats being employed in carrying the water on board, and Mr. Banks and his company finding it probable that they fhould be left on fhore after it was dark, by which much time would be loft, which they were impatient to employ in putting the plants they had gathered in order, they applied to the Indians for a paffage in one of their canoes: they immediately confented, and a canoe was launched for their ufe. They went all on board, being eight in number, but not being ufed to a veffel that required fo even a balance, they unfortunately overfet lier in the furf: no life however was loft, but it was thought advifable that half of them fhould wait for another turn. Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Tupia, and Tayeto embarked again, and without any farther accident arrived fafely at the dhip , well pleafed with the good-nature of their Indian friends, who cheer-
1769. fully undertook to carry them a fecond time, after having. experienced how unfit a freight they were for fuch a veffel.

While thefe gentlemen were on fhore, feveral of the natives went off to the fhip, and trafficked, by exchanging their cloth for that of Otaheite: of this barter they were for fometime very fond, preferring the Indian cloth to that of Europe; but before night it decreafed in its value five hundred per cent. Many of thefe Indians I took on board, and fhewed them the fhip and her apparatus, at which they exprefied equal fatisfaction and aftonifhment.

As I found it exceedingly difficult to get water on board on account of the furf, I determined to ftay no longer at this

## Sunday 22.

 place; on the next morning therefore, about five o'clock, I weighed anchor and put to fea.This bay, which is called by the natives Tegadoo, lies in the latitude of $3^{8^{\circ}} 10^{\prime}$ S., but as it has nothing to recommend it, a defeription of it is unneceffary.

From this bay I intended to ftand on to the northward, but the wind being right againft me, I could make no way. While I was beating about to windward, fome of the natives came on board, and told me, that in a bay which lay a little to the fouthward, being the fame that I could not fetch the day I put into Tegadoo, there was excellent water, where the boats might land without a furf. I thought it better therefore to put into this bay, where I might complete my water, and form farther connexions with the Indians, than to keep the fea. With this view I bore up for it, and fent in two boats, manned and armed, to examine the wateringplace, who confirming the report of the Indians at their return, I came to an anchor about one o'clock, in eleven fathom water, with a fine fandy bottom, the north point of the bay N. by E. and the fouth point S. E. The watering-place, which
which was in a fmall cove a little within the fouth point of the bay, bore S. by E. diftant about a mile. Many canoes came immediately off from the fhore, and all traded very honeftly for Otaheite cloth and glafs bottles, of which they were immoderately fond.

In the afternoon of the 23d, as foon as the fhip was moored,
1769.

October.
Sunday 22. I went on fhore to examine the watering-place, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander: the boat landed in the cove, without the leaft furf; the water was excellent, and conveniently fituated; there was plenty of wood clofe to highwater mark, and the difpofition of the people was in every refpect fuch as we could wifh.

Having, with Mr. Green, taken feveral obfervations of the fun and moon, the mean refult of them gave $180^{\circ} 47^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. longitude; but, as all the obfervations made before exceeded thefe, I have laid down the coaft from the mean of the whole. At noon, I took the fun's meridian altitude with an afronomical quadrant, which was fet up at the wateringplace, and found the latitude to be $38^{2} 22^{\prime} 24^{\prime \prime}$.

On the 24 th, early in the morning, I fent Lieutenant Gore Tueflay $2_{4}$, on fhore, to fuperintend the cutting of wood and filling of water, with a fufficient number of men for both purpofes, and all the marines as a guard. After breakfaft, I went on fhore myfelf, and continucd there the whole day.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander alfo went on flore to gather plants, and in their walks faw feveral things worthy of notice. They met with many houfes in the vallies that feemed to be wholly deferted, the people living on the ridges of the hills in a kind of fleds very flightly built. As they were advancing in one of thefe vallies, the hills on each fide of which were very flcep, they were fuddenly fruck with the fight of a very extraordinary natural curiofity. It was a rock, perforated
perforated through its whole fubftance, fo as to form a rude but flupendous arch or cavern, opening direetly to the fea; this aperture was feventy-five feet long, twenty-feven broad, and five and forty high, commanding a view of the bay and the hills on the other fide, which were feen through it, and, opening at once upon the view, produced an effect far fuperior to any of the contrivances of art.

As they were returning to the watering-place in the evening, they met an old man, who detained them fome time by fhowing them the military exercifes of the country with the lance and Patoo-Patoo, which are all the weapons in ufe. The lance is from ten to fourteen feet long, made of a very. hard wood, and fharp at both ends: the Patoo-Patoo has been defcribed already, it is about a foot long, made of Talc or bone, with tharp edges, and ufed as a battle-axe. A poft or ftake was fet up as his enemy, to which he advanced with a moft furious afpect, brandifhing his lance, which he grafped with great firmnefs; when it was fuppofed to have been pierced by his lance, he ran at it with his Patoo-Patoo, and falling upon the upper end of it, which was to reprefent his adverfary's head, he laid on with great vehemence, ftriking many blows, any one of which would probably have fplit the fcull of an ox. From our champion's falling upon his mock enemy with the Patoo-Patoo, after he was fuppofed to have been pierced with the lance, our Gentlemen inferred, that in the battles of this country there is no quarter.

This afternoon, we fet up the armourer's forge, to repair the braces of the tiller which had been broken, and went on getting our wood and water, without fuffering the leaft moleftation from the natives; who came down with different forts of fifh, which we purchafed with cloth, beads, and glafs boutles, as ufual.


No ${ }^{1 \%}$.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. perforated through its whole fubftance, fo as to form a rude but flupendous arch or cavern, opening directly to the fea; this aperture was feventy-five feet long, twenty-feven broad, and five and forty high, commanding a view of the bay and the hills on the other fide, which were feen through ir, and, opening at once upon the view, produced an effect far fupcrior to any of the contrivances of art.

As they were returning to the watering-place in the evening, they met an old man, who detained them fome time by fhowing them the military exercifes of the country with the lance and Patoo-Patoo, which are all the weapons in ufe. The lance is from ten to fourteen feet long, made of a very. hard wood, and fharp at both ends: the Patoo-Patoo has been defcribed already, it is about a foot long, made of Talc or bone, with fharp edges, and ufed as a battle-axe. A poft or ftake was fet up as his enemy, to which he advanced with a moft furious afpect, brandifhing his lance, which he grafped with great firmnefs; when it was fuppofed to have been pierced by his lance, he ran at it with his Patoo-Patoo, and falling upon the upper end of it, which was to reprefent his adverfary's head, he laid on with great vehemence, ftriking many blows, any one of which would probably have fplit the fcull of an ox. From our champion's falling upon his mock enemy with the Patoo-Patoo, after he was fuppofed to have been piereed with the lance, our Gentlemen inferred, that in the batules of this country there is no quarter.

This afternoon, we fet up the armourer's forge, to repair the braces of the tiller which had been broken, and went on getting our wood and water, without fuffering the leaft moleftation from the natives; who came down with different forts of fiff, which we purchafed with cloth, beads, and glafs boutles, as ufual.


On the 25 th, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went again on fhore; and while they were fearching for plants, Tupia faid with the waterers : among other Indians who came down to $\underbrace{\substack{1769 . \\ \text { Otaber. }}}_{\text {Wednef. } 25 .}$ them, was a prieft, with whom Tupia entered into a very learned converfation. In their notions of religion they fcemed to agree very well, which is not often the cafe between learned divines on our fide of the ocean: Tupia, howcver, feemed to have the moft knowlege, and he was liftened to with great deference and attention by the other. In the courfe of this converfation, after the important points of divinity had been fettled, Tupia enquired if it was their practice to cat men, to which they anfwered in the affirmative; but faid that they eat only their enemies who were flain in battle.

On the 26 th , it rained all day, fo that none of us could go Thurfay 25. afhore; and very few of the Indians came either to the wa-tering-place or the fhip.

On the 27 th , I went with Dr. Solander to examine the bot- Friday 27. tom of the bay; but though we went afhore at two places, we met with little worth notice. The people behaved very civilly, fhewing us every thing that we expreffed a defire to fee. Among other trifling curiofities which Dr. Solander purchafed of them, was a boy's top, fhaped exactly like thofe which children play with in England; and they made figns, that to make it fpin it was to be whipped. Mr. Banks in the mean time went afhore at the watering-place, and climbed a hill which ftood at a little diftance to fee a fence of poles, which we had obferved from the fhip, and which had been much the fubject of fpeculation. The hill was extremely fteep, and rendered almont inacceflible by wood; yet he reached the place, near which he found many houfes that for fome reafon had been deferted by their inhabitants.
1769. The poles appeared to be about fixteen feet high; they were October. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Friday } 27 .}$ placed in two rows, with a fpace of about fix feet between them, and the poles in each row were about ten feet diftant from each other. The lane between them was covered by fticks, that were fet up floping towards each other from the top of the poles on each fide, like the roof of a houfe. This rail-work, with a ditch that was parallel to it, was carried about a hundred yards down the hill in a kind of curve: but for what purpofe we could not guefs.

The Indians, at the watering-place, at our requeft, entertained us with their war-fong, in which the women joined, with the mof horrid diftortions of countenance, rolling theis eyes, thrufting out their tongues, and often heaving loud and deep fighs; though all was done in very grood time.
Saturday 28. On the 28 th, we went afhore upon an ifland that lies to the left hand of the entrance of the bay, where we faw the largeft canoe that we had yet met with: fhe was fixty-eight feet and a half long, five broad, and three feet fix high; The had a fharp bottom, confifting of three trunks of trees hollowed, of which that in the middle was the longeft: the fide planks were fixty-two feet long in one piece, and were not defpicably carved in bas relief; the head alfo was adorned with carving ftill more richly. Upon this ifland there was a larger houfe than any we had yet feen; but it feemed unfinifhed and was full of chips. The wood work was fquared fo even and fmooth, that we made no doubt of their having among them very fharp tools. The fides of the pofts were carved in a mafterly ftile, though after their whimfical tafte, which feems to prefer fpiral lines and diftorted faces: as thefe carved pofts appeared to have been brought from fome other place, fuch work is probably of great value among them.

At four o'clock in the morning of the 2gth, having got on board our wood and water, and a large fupply of excellent celery, with which the country abounds, and which proved
1769. Oatober.
 a powerful antifcorbutic, I unmoored and put to fea.

This bay is called by the natives Tolaga ; it is moderately large, and has from feven to thirteen fathom, with a clean fandy bottom and good anchorage ; and is fheltered from all winds except the north eaft. It lies in latitude $38^{\circ} 22^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and four leagues and an half to the north of Gable-end Foreland. On the fouth point lies a fmall but high ifland, fo near the main as not to be diftinguifhed from it. Clofe to the north end of the ifland, at the entrance into the bay, are two high rocks; one is round like a corn-ftack, but the other is long, and perforated in feveral places fo that the openings appear like the arches of a bridge. Within thefe rocks is the cove where we cut wood, and filled our water-cafks. Off the north point of the bay is a pretty high rocky ifland; and about a mile without it, are fome rocks and breakers. The variation of the compafs here is $14^{\circ} 31^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$. and the tide flows at the full and change of the moon, about fix o'clock, and rifes and falls perpendicularly from five to fix feet: whether the flood comes from the fouthward or the northward I have not been able to determine.

We got nothing here by traffic but a few fifh, and fome fweet potatoes, except a few trifles, which we confidered merely as curiofities. We faw no four-footed animals, nor the appearance of any, either tame or wild, except dogs and rats, and thefe were very farce: the people cat the dogs, like our friends at Ctaheite; and adorn their garments with the fkins, as we do ours with fur and ermine. I climbed many of the hills, hoping to get a view of the country, but I could fee nothing from the top except higher Vol. II.

Tt
hills,
1769. hills, in a boundlefs fucceflion. The ridges of thefe hills Octobe:. produce little befides fern; but the fides are moft luxuriantly clothed with wood, and verdure of various kinds, with little plantations intermixed. In the woods, we found trees of above twenty different forts, and carried fpecimens of each on board; but there was no body among us to whom they were not altogether unknown. The tree which we cut for firing was fomewhat like our maple, and yielded a whitifh gum. We found another fort of it of a deep yellow, which we thought might be ufeful in dying. We found alfo one cabbage tree, which we cut down for the cabbages. The country abounds with plants, and the woods with birds, in an endlefs variety, exquifitely beautiful, and of which none of us had the leaft knowlege. The foil both of the hills and valleys is light and fandy, and very fit for the production of all kinds of roots; though we faw none except fwect potatoes and yams.


## C H A P. III.

The Range from Tolaga to Mercury Bay, with an Account of many Incidents that bappened both on board and afbore: A Defcription of feveral Views exbibited by the Country, and of the Heppabs, or fortificd Villages of the Inbabitants.

ON Monday the 30 th, about half an hour after one o'clock, having made fail again to the northward for about ten hours, with a light breeze, I hauled round a fmall ifland which lay eaft one mile from the north eaft point of the land: from this place I found the land trend away N.W. by W. and W. N. W. as far as I could fee, this point being the eaftermolt land on the whole coaft. I gave it the name of EAsT Cape, and I called the ifland that lies off it East Island; it is of a fmall circuit, high and round, and appears white and barren: the Cape is high, with white cliffs, and lies in latitude $37^{\circ} 42^{\prime} 30^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $181^{\circ} \mathrm{W}$. The land from Tolaga Bay to Eaft Cape is of a moderate, but unequal height, forming feveral fmall bays, in which are fandy beaches: of the inland country we could not fee much, the weather being cloudy and hazey. The foundings were from twenty to thirty fathom at the diftance of about a league from the hore. After we had rounded the Cape, we faw in our run along the fhore a great number of villages, and much cultivated land; the country in general appeared more fertile than before, and was low near the fea, but hilly within. At fix in the evening, being four leagues to the weftward of Eaft Cape, we paffed a bay which was firft dif-
1769.

October. Monday 30 .


## C H A P. III.

> The Range from Tolaga to Mercury Bay, with an Account of many Incidents that bappened both on board and afhore: A Defcription of Several Views exbibited by the Country, and of the Heppabs, or fortified Villages of the Inbabitants.

ON Monday the 3oth, about half an hour after one o'clock, having made fail again to the northward for about ten hours, with a light breeze, I hauled round a fmall ifland
1769. October. Monday 30. which lay eaft one mile from the north caft point of the land: from this place I found the land trend away N.W. by W. and W. N. W. as far as I could fee, this point being the eaftermoft land on the whole coaft. I gave it the name of East Cape, and I called the illand that lies off it East Island; it is of a fmall circuit, high and round, and appears white and barren: the Cape is high, with white cliffs, and lies in latitude $37^{\circ} 42^{\prime} 30^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $181^{\circ} \mathrm{W}$. The land from Tolaga Bay to Eaft Cape is of a moderate, but unequal height, forming feveral fmall bays, in which are fandy beaches: of the inland country we could not fee much, the weather being cloudy and hazey. The foundings were from twenty to thirty fathom at the diftance of about a league from the fhore. After we had rounded the Cape, we faw in our run along the fhore a great number of villages, and much cultivated land; the country in general appeared more fertile than before, and was low near the fea, but hilly within. At fix in the evening, being four leagues to the weftward of Eaft Cape, we paffed a bay which was firft dif-

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769 October. $\xrightarrow[M]{ }$ covered by Lieutenant Hicks, and which therefore I called Hıcкs's Bay. At eight in the evening, being eight leagues to the weftward of the Cape, and three or four miles from the fhore, I fhortened fail and brought to for the night, having at this time a frefh gale at S.S.E. and fqually; but it foon became moderate, and at two in the morning, we made fail again to the S. W. as the land now trended; and at eight o'clock in the morning, faw land, which made like an ifland, bearing weft, the fouth weftermoft part of the main bearing fouth weft; and about nine no lefs than five canoes came off, in which were more than forty men, all armed with their country pikes and battle-axes, fhouting, and threatening an attack: this gave us great uneafinefs, and was indeed what we did not expect; for we hoped, that the report both of our power and clemency had fpread to a greater extent. When one of thefe canoes had almoft reached the hip, another, of an immenfe fize, the largeft we had yet feen, crowded with people who were alfo armed, put off from the fhore, and came up at a great rate; as it approached it received fignals from the canoe that was neareft to the fhip, and we could fee that it had fixteen paddles on a fide, befide people that fat, and others that flood in a row from ftem to ftern, being in all about fixty men : as they made direetly to the fhip, we were defirous of preventing an attack, by fhowing what we could do; and therefore fired a gun, loaded with grape-fhot, ahead of them: this made them ftop, but not retreat; a round fhot was then fired over them, and upon feeing it fall, they feized their paddles and made towards the fhore with fuch precipitation that they feemed fcarcely to allow themfelves time to breathe. In the evening, three or four more canoes came off unarmed; but they would not venture within a mufquet hot of the veffel. The cape, off which we had been threatened with hoftilities, I called,
called, from the hafty retreat of the enemy, Cape Runaway. It lies in latitude $37^{\circ} 32^{\prime}$; longitude $181^{\circ} 48^{\prime}$. In this day's run, we found that the land, which made like an ifland in the morning, bearing weft, was fo; and we gave it the name of White Island.

At day-break, on the firft of November, we counted no lefs than five and forty canoes that were coming from the fhore towards the fhip: feven of them came up with us, and after fome converfation with Tupia, fold us fome lobiters and mufcles, and two conger eels. Thefe people traded pretty fairly: but when they were gone, fome others came off from another place, who began alfo to trade fairly; but after fome time they took what was handed down to them, without making any return; one of them who had done fo, upon being threatened, began to laugh, and with many marks of derifion fet us at defiance, at the fame time putting off the canoe from the fhip: a mufquet was then fired over his head, which brought him back in a more ferious mood, and trade went on with great regularity. At length, when the cabbin and gun-room had got as much as they wanted, the men. were allowed to come to the gang-way, and trade for themfelves. Unhappily the fame care was not taken to prevent frauds as had been taken before, fo that the Indians, finding that they could cheat with impunity, grew infolent again, and proceeded to take greater libertics. One of the canoes, having fold every thing on board, pulled forward, and the people that were in her feeing fome linen hang over the fhip's fide to dry, one of them, without any ccremony, unticd it, and put it up in his bundle: he was immediately called to, and required to return it ; inftead of which, he let his canoe drop a ftern, and laughed at us: a mufquet was fired over his head, which did not put a fop to his mirth; another was then fired at him with fmall fhot, which ftruck

## LIEUTENANT GOOK's VOYAGE

1769. him upon the back; he fhrunk a little when the fhot hit him, but did not regard it more than one of our men would have done the ftroke of a rattan: he continued with great compofure to pack up the linen that he had ftolen. All the canoes now dropped aftern about a hundred yards, and all fet up their fong of defiance, which they continued till the fhip was diftant from them about four hundred yards. As they feemed to have no defign to attack us, I was not willing to do them any hurt; yet I thought their going off in a bravado might have a bad effect when it fhould be reported afhore. To fhow them therefore that they were ftill in our power, though very much beyond the reach of any miffile weapon with which they were acquainted, I gave the fhip a yaw, and fired a four pounder fo as to pafs near them. The flot happened to flrike the water, and rife feveral times at a great diflance beyond the canoes: this flruck them with terror, and they paddled away without once looking behind them.

About two in the afternoon, we faw a pretty high ifland bearing weft from us; and at five, faw more iflands and rocks to the weftward of that. We hauled our wind in order to go without them, but could not weather them before it was dark. I therefore bore up, and ran between them and the main. At feven, I was clofe under the firft, from which a large double canoe, or rather two canoes lafhed together at the diftance of about a foot, and covered with boards fo as make a deck, put off, and made fail for the fhip: this was the firt veffel of the kind that we had feen fince we left the South Sea iflands. When the came near, the people on board entered very freely into converfation with Tupia, and we thought fhowed a friendly difpofition ; but when it was juft dark, they ran their canoe clofe to the flip's fide, and threw in a volley of fones, after which they paddled afhore.

We learnt from Tupia, that the people in the canoe called the ifland which we were under Mowtohora; it is but of a fimall circuit, though high, and lies fix miles from the main; on the fouth fide is anchorage in fourteen fathom water. Upon the main land S.W. by W. of this ifland, and apparently at no great diflance from the fea, is a high round mountain, which I called Mount Edgecomee: it fands in the middle of a large plain, and is therefore the more confpicuous; latitude $37^{\circ} 59^{\prime}$, longitude $193^{\circ} 7^{\prime}$.
In flanding weftward, we fuddenly fhoaled our water from feventeen to ten fathom; and knowing that we were not far from the fmall iflands and rocks which we had feen before dark, and which I intended to have paffed before I brought to for the night, I thought it more prudent to tack, and fpend the night under Mowtohora, where I knew there was no danger. It was indeed happy for us that we did fo; for in the morning, after we had made fail to the weftward, we Thurcday $z=$ difcovered, ahead of us, feveral rocks, fome of which were level with the furface of the water, and fome below it: they lay N.N.E. from Mount Edgecombe, one league and a half diftant from the ifland Mowtohora, and about nine miles from the main. We paffed between thefe rocks and the main, having from ten to feven fathom water.

This morning, many canoes and much people were feen along the fhore; feveral of the canoes followed us, but none of them could reach us, except one with a fail, which proved. to be the fame that had pelted us the night before. The people on board again entered into converfation with Tupia; but we expected another vollcy of their ammunition, which was not indeed dangerous to any thing but the cabbin windows. They continued abreaft of the flip about an hour, and behaved very peaceably; but at laft the falute which we
1769. expected was given; we returned it by firing a mufquet over

November. Thurfdayz. them, and they immediately dropped a-ftern and left us, perhaps rather fatisfied with having given a teft of their courage by twice infulting a veffel fo much fupcrior to their own, than intimidated by the fhot.

At half an hour after ten, we paffed between a low flat ifland and the main : the diftance from one to the other was about four miles, and the depth of water from ten to twelve fathom. The main land between this flat ifland and Mowtohora is of a moderate height, but level, pretty clear of wood, and full of plantations and villages. The villages, which were larger than any we had yet feen, were built upon eminences near the fea, and fortified on the land fide by a bank and ditch, with a high paling within it, which was carried all round: befide a bank, ditch, and pallifadoes, fome of them appeared to have out-works. Tupia had a notion that the fmall inclofures of pallifadoes, and a ditch that we had feen before, were Morais or places of worfhip; but we were of opinion that they were forts, and concluded that thefe people had neighbouring enemies, and were always expofed to hoftile attacks.

At two o'clock we paffed a' fmall high ifland, lying four miles from a high round head upon the main. From this head the land trends N. W. as far as can be feen, and has a rugged and hilly appearance. As the weather was hazy, and the wind blew frefh on the fhore, we hauled off for the weathermoft ifland in fight, which bore from us N. N. E. diftant about fix or feven leagues.

Under this ifland, which I have called the Mayor, we fpent the night. At feven in the morning it bore S. 47 E . diftant fix leagues, and a clufter of fmall iflands and rocks bore $\mathrm{N} . \frac{1}{2} \mathrm{E}$. diftant one league, to which I gave the name of
the Court of Aldermen. They lie in the compafs of about half a league every way, and five leagues from the main, between which and them lie other iflands, moft of them barren rocks, of which there is great varicty: fome of them are as fmall in compafs as the Monument of London, but rife to a much greater height, and fome of them are inhabited. They lie in latitude $3^{6} 57^{\circ}$, and at noon bore S. 60 E. diftant three or four leagues; and a rock like a caftle, lying not far from the main, bore N. 40 W . at the diftance of one league. The country that we paffed the night before, appeared to be well inhabited, many towns were in fight, and fome hundreds of large canoes lay under them upon the beach; but this day, after having failed about fifteen leagues, it appeared to be barren and defolate. As far as we had yet coafted this country from Cape Turnagain, the people acknowledged one Chief, whom they called Teratu, and to whofe refidence they pointed, in a direction that we thought to be very far inland, but afterwards found to be orherwife.

About one o'clock three canoes came off to us from the main, with one and twenty men on board. The conftruction of thefe veffels appeared to be more fimple than that of any we had feen, they being nothing more than trunks of a fingle tree hollowed by fire, without any convenience or ornament. The people on board were almoft naked, and appeared to be of a browner complexion; yet naked and defpicable as they were, they fung their fong of defiance, and feemed to denounce againf us incvitable deftruction: they remained, however, fome time out of ftones ihrow, and then venturing nearer, with lefs appearance of lioflility, one of our men went to the fhip fide, and was about to hand them a rope; this courtefy, however, they thought fit to return by throwing a lance at him, which having miffed him.

Voi. II.
U u
they
1769.

Friday 3.
1769. they immediately threw another into the fip: upon this a November. Eriday 3. mufquet was fired over them, which at once fent them away.

About two, we faw a large opening, or inlet, for which we bore up; we had now forty-one fathom water, which gradually decreafed to nine, at which time we were one mile and an half diftant from a high towered rock which lay near the fouth point of the inlet: this rock, and the northermoft of the Court of Aldermen being in one, bearing S. 6I E.

About feven in the evening we anchored in feven fathom, a little within the fouth entrance of the bay: to this place we were accompanied by feveral canoes and people like thofe we had feen laft, and for fome time they behaved very civilly. While they were hovering about us, a bird was fhot from the fhip, as it was fwimming upon the water: at this they fhewed lefs furprize than we expected, and taking up the bird, they tied it to a finhing line that was towing aftern; as an acknowledgment for this favour we gave them a piece of cloth: but notwithftanding this effect of our firearms, and this interchange of civilities, as foon as it grew dark they fung their war fong, and attempted to tow away the buoy of the anchor. Two or three muktets were then fired over them, but this feemed rather to make them angry than afraid, and they went away, threatening that to-morrow they would return with more force, and be the death of us all; at the fame time fending off a boat, which they told us was going to another part of the bay for affiftance.

There was fome appearance of generofity, as well as courage, in acquainting us with the time when they intended to make their attack, but they forfeited all credit which this procured them, by coming fecretly upon us in the night, when
when they certainly hoped to find us afleep: upon approaching the fhip they found themfelves miftaken, and therefore retired without freaking a word, fuppofing that they were too early; after fome time they came a fecond time, and being again difappointed, they retired as filently as before.

In the morning, at day-break, they prepared to effect by Saturday ${ }_{4}$. force what they had in vain attempted by ftealth and artifice: no lefs than twelve canoes came againft us, with about a hundred and fifty men, all armed with pikes, lances, and flones. As they could do nothing till they came very near the fhip, Tupia was ordered to expoftulate with them, and if poffible divert them from their purpofe: during the converfation they appeared to be fometimes friendly and fometimes otherwife; at length, however, they began to trade, and we offered to purchafe their weapons, which fome of them confented to fell: they fold two very fairly, but having received what had been agreed upon for the purchafe of a third, they refufed to fend it up, but offered it for a fecond price; a fecond was fent down, but the weapon was ftill detained, and a demand made of a third; this being refufed with fome expreffions of difpleafure and refentment, the offender, with many ludicrous tokens of contempt and defiance, paddled his canoe off a few yards from the fhip. As I intended to continue in this place five or fix days, in order to make an obfervation of the tranfit of Mercury, it was abfolutely neceffary, in order to prevent future mifchicf, to fhew thefe people that we were not to be treated ill with impunity; fome fmall fhot were therefore fired at the thief, and a muknet ball through the bottom of his boat: upon this it was paddled to about a hundred yards diftance, and to our grear furprize the people in the other canoes took not the leaft notice of their wounded companion, though he bled very much, but returned to the fhip, and continucd to trade with the

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. moft perfect indifference and unconcern. They fold us November. Sgturday 4 . many more of their weapons without making any other attempt to defraud us, for a confiderable time; at laft, how ever, one of them thought fit to paddle away with two different pieces of cloth which had been given for the fame weapon: when he had got about an hundred yards diftance, and thought himfelf fecure of his prize, a mufket was fired after him, which fortunately ftruck the boat juft at the water's edge, and made two holes in her fide; this only incited them to ply their paddles with greater activity, and the reft of the canoes alfo made off with the utmoft expedition. As the laft proof of our fuperiority therefore, we fired a round Shot over them, and not a boat flopped till they got on fhore ${ }_{\text {o }}$

About ten o'clock, I went with two boats to found the bay, and look out for a more convenient anchoring-places. the Mafter being in one boat and myfelf in the other. We pulled firft over to the north fhore, from which fome canoes. came out to meet us; as we advanced, however, they retired, inviting us to follow them: but, feeing them all armed, $\ddagger$ did not think it proper to comply, but went towards. the head of the bay, where I obferved a village upon a very high point, fortified in the manner that has been already defcribed, and having fixed upon an anchoring-place not far from where the fhip lay, I returned on board.

At three o'clock in the afternoon, I weighed, run in nearer to the fhore, and anchored in four fathom and an half water, with a foft fandy bottom, the fouth point of the bay bearing E. diftant one mile, and a river which the boats can enter at low water S. S. E. diftant a mile and an half.

In the morning, the natives came off again to the fhip, anch we had the fatisfaction to obferve that their behaviour was very different from what it had been yefterday: among

## ROUND THE WORLD.

them was an old man, whom we had before remarked for his prudence and honefty: his name was Tolava, and he feemed to be a perfon of a fuperior rank; in the tranfactions of yefterday morning he had behaved with great propricty and good fenfe, lying in a fmall canoe, always near the fhip, and treating thofe on board as if he neither intended a fraud nor fufpected an injury: with fome perfuafion this man and another came on board, and ventured into the cabin, where I prefented each of them with a piece of Englifh cloth and fome fpike nails. They told us that the Indians were now very much afraid of us, and on our part we promifed friendthip if they would behave peaceably, defiring only to purchafe what they had to fell upon their own terms.

After the natives had left us, I went with the pinnace and long-boat into the river with a defign to haul the feine, and fent the Mafter in the yawl to found the bay and dredge for fifh. The Indians who were on one fide of the river, expreffed their friendfhip by all the figns they could devife, beckoning us to land among them; but we chofe to go afhore on the other fide, as the fituation was more convenient for hauling the feine and fhooting birds, of which we faw great numbers of various kinds: the Indians with much perfuafion, about noon, ventured over to us. With the feine we had very little fuccefs, catching only a few mullets, neither did we get any thing by the trawl or the dredge, except a few fhells; but we fhot feveral birds, moft of them refembling fea-pies, except that they had black plumage, and red bills and feet. While we were abfent with our guns, the people who ftaid by the boats faw two of the Indians quarrel. and fight: they began the battle with their lances, but fome old men interpofed and took them away, leaving them to decide the difference, like Englifhmen, with their fifts: they boxed with great vigour and obftinacy for fome time, but by degrees
1769. degrees all retired behind a little hill, fo that our people could not fee the event of the combat.

In the morning the long-boat was fent again to traul in the bay, and an officer, with the marines, and a party of men, to cut wood and haul the feine. The Indians on fhore appeared very peaceable and fubmiffive, and we had reafon to belicve that their habitations were at a confiderable diftance, for we faw no houfes, and found that they flept under the bufhes: the bay is probably a place to which they frequently refort in parties to gather fhellofin, of which it affords incredible plenty, for wherever we went, whether upon the hills or in the vallies, the woods or the plains, we faw vaft heaps of fhells, often many waggon loads together, fome appearing to be very old, and others recent. We faw no cultivation in this place, which had a defolate and barren appearance; the tops of the hills were green, but nothing grew there except a large kind of fern, the roots of which the natives had got together in large quantities, in order to carry away with them. In the evening Mr. Banks walked up the river, which at the mouth looked fine and broad, but at the diftance of about two miles was not deep enough to cover the foot; and the country inland was ftill more barren than at the fea-fide. The feine and dredge were not more fuccefsful to-day than yefterday, but the lndians in fome meafure compenfated for the difappointment by bringing us feveral bafkets of fifh, fome dry, and fome frefh dreffed; it was not indeed of the beft, but I ordered it all to be bought for the encouragement of trade.
Tuefday 7. On the 7 th, the weather was fo bad that none of us left the fhip, nor did any of the Indians come on board.

Wednef. 8. On the 8th, I fent a party of men on fhore to wood and water; and in the mean time many canoes came off, in one
of which was our friend Toiava; foon after he was alongfide of the fhip, he faw two canoes coming from the oppofite fide of the bay, upon which he hafted back again to the fhore with all his canoes, telling us that he was afraid of the people who were coming: this was a farther proof that the people of this country were perpetually committing hofilities againft each other. In a fhort time, however, he returned, having difcovered that the people who had alarmed him were not the fame that he had fuppofed. The natives that came to the fhip this morning fold us, for a few pieces of cloth, as much filh of the mackrel kind as ferved the whole fhip's company, and they were as good as ever were eaten. At noon, this day, I obferved the fun's meridional zenith diftance by an aftronomical quadrant, which gave the latitude $36^{\circ} 47^{\prime} 43^{\prime \prime}$ within the fouth entrance of the bay.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went on fhore and collected a great variety of plants, altogether unknown, and not returning till the evening, had anopportunity of obferving in what manner the Indians difpofed themfelves to pafs the night. They had no fhelter but a few fhrubs: the women and the children were ranged innermoft, or fartheft from the fea; the men lay in a kind of half circle round them, and their arms were fet up againft the trees clofe by them, in a manner which fhowed that they were afraid of an attack by fome enemy not far diftant. It was alfo difcovered that they acknowledged neither Teratu, nor any other perfon as their king: as in this particular they differed from all the people that we had feen upon other parts of the coaft, we thought it poffible that they might be a fet of outlaws, in a flate of rebellion againt Teratu, and in that cafe they might have no fettled habitations, or cultivated land in any part of the country.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

170́g. November. Thurday 9.

On the 9th, at day-break, a great number of canoes came on board, loaded with mackrel of two forts, one exactly the fame with thofe caught in England, and the other fomewhat different: we imagined the people had taken a large fhoal, and brought us an overplus which they could not confume; for they fold them at a very low rate. They were, however, very welcome to us ; at eight o'clock, the fhip had more fing on board than all her people could eat in three days; and before night, the quantity was fo much increafed, that every man who could get falt, cured as many as would laft him a month.

After an early breakfaft, I went afhore, with Mr. Green and proper inftuments, to obferve the tranfit of Mercury, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander being of the party; the weather had for fome time been very thick, with much rain, but this day was fo favourable that not a cloud intervened during the whole tranfit. The obfervation of the ingrefs was made by Mr. Green alone, while I was employed in taking the fun's altitude to afcertain the time. It came on at $7^{h} 20^{\prime} 5^{\prime \prime \prime}$ apparent time : according to Mr. Green's obfervation, the internal contact was at $12^{\mathrm{h}} 8^{\prime} 5^{8^{\prime \prime}}$, the external at $12^{\mathrm{h}} 9^{\prime} 55^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{P} . \mathrm{M}$. And according to mine, the internal contact was at $12^{h} 8^{\prime} 54^{\prime \prime}$, and the external $12^{n} 9^{\prime} 48^{\prime \prime}$; the latitude of the place of obfervation was $30^{\circ} 48^{\prime} 5 \frac{z^{\prime \prime}}{2}$. The latitude obferved at noon was $36^{\circ} 48^{\prime} 28^{\prime \prime}$. The mean of this and yefterday's obfervation gives $36^{\circ} 48^{\circ} 5 \frac{2^{\prime \prime}}{2}$ S. the latitude of the place of obfervation; the variation of the compafs was $11^{\circ} 9^{\prime} E$.

About noon, we were alarmed by the firing of a great gun from the fhip; Mr. Gore, my Second Lieutenant, was at this time commanding officer on board, and the account that he gave was this. While fome fimall canocs were trading with the people, two very large ones came up, full of men, one
of them having on board forty-feven, all armed with pikes, darts, and fones, and apparently with a hoflile intention: they appeared to be flrangers, and to be rather confcious of
1769. $\underbrace{\text { November. }}_{\text {Thurday } 9 .}$ fuperiority over us by their numbers, than afraid of any weapons which could give us the fuperiority over them: no attack however was made; probably becaufe they learnt from the people in the other canoes, with whom they immediately entered into conference, what kind of an enemy they had to deal with: after a little time, they began to trade, fome of them offering their arms, and one of them a fquare piece of cloth, which makes a part of their drefs, called a Haabow; feveral of the weapons were purchafed, and Mr. Gore having agreed for a Haahow, fent down the price, which was a piece of Britifh cloth, and expected his purchafe: but the Indian, as foon as he had got Mr. Gore's cloth in his poffeffion, refufed to part with his own, and put off the canoc: upon being threatened for this fraud, he and his companions began to fing their war fong in defiance, and fhook their paddles : ftill however they began no attack, only defying Mr. Gore to take any remedy in his power, which fo provoked him that he levelled a mufquet loaded with ball at the offender, while he was holding the clothin his hand, and fhot him dead. It would have been happy, if the effect of a few fmall fhot had been tried upon this occafion, which upon fome others had been fuccefsful.
When the Indian dropped, all the canoes put of to fome diftance ; but as they did not go away, it was thought they might fill meditate an attack. To fecure therefore a fafe paffage for the boat, which it was neceffary to fend on fhore, a round fhot was fired over their heads, which effectually anfwered the purpofe, and put them all to flight. When an account of what had happened was brought afhore, our In-

[^9]dians were alarmed, and drawing all together, retreated in a body. After a fhort time, however, they returned, having heard a more particular account of the affair; and intimated that they thought the man who had been killed deferved his fate.

A little before funfet the Indians retired to eat their fupper, and we went with them to be fpectators of the repaft; it confifted of fifh of different kinds, among which were lobfters, and fome birds, of a fpecies unknown to us: thefewere either roafted or baked; to roaft them, they faftened them upon a fmall flick, which was fuck up in the ground, inclining towards their fire ; and to bake then, they put them into a hole in the ground with hot fones, in the fame manner as the people of Otahcite.

Among the natives that were affembled upon this occafion, we faw a woman, who, after their manner, was mourning for the death of her relation : fhe fat upon the ground near the reft, who, one only excepted, feemed not at all to regard her : the tears conflantly trickled down her cheeks, and fhe repeated in a low, but very mournful voice, words, which even Tupia did not at all underfand: at the end of every fentence fhe cut her arms, her face, or her breaft with a fhell that fhe held in her hand, fo that the was almoft covered with blood, and was indeed one of the moft affecting fpectacles that can be conceived. The cuts, however, did not appear to be fo deep as are fometimes made upon fimilar occafions, if we may judge by the fcars which we faw upon the arms, thighs, breafts, and cheeks of many of them, which we were told were the remains of wounds which they had infliced upon themfelves as teftimonies of their affection and forrow.

The next day, I went with two boats, accompanied by Mr. Banks and the other Gentlemen, to examine a large river
that empties itfelf into the licad of the bay. We rowed about four or five miles up, and could have gone much farther if the weather had been favourable. It was here wider than at the mouth, and divided into many ftreams by fmall flat illands, which are covered with mangroves, and overflowed at high water. From thefe trees exudes a vifcous fubftance which very much refembles refin: we found it firft in fmall lumps upon the fea beach, and now faw it Alicking to the trees, by which we knew whence it came. We landed on the eaft fide of the river, where we faw a tree upon which feveral fhags had built their nefts, and here therefore we determined to dine ; twenty of the fhags were foon killed, and being broiled upon the fpot, afforded us an excellent meal. We then went upon the hills from whence I thought I faw the head of the river. The fhore on each fide, as well as the iflands in the middle, were covered with mangroves; and the fand-banks abounded in cockles and clams: in many places there were rock oyfters, and every where plenty of wild fowl, principally fhags, ducks, curlicus, and the feapie, that has been defcribed before. We alfo faw fifh in the river, but of what kind we could not difcover: the country on the eaft fide of this river is for the moft part barren, and deftitute of wood; but on the weft it has a better afpect, and in fome places is adorned with trees, but has in no part the appearance of cultivation. In the entrance of the river, and for two or three miles up, there is good anchoring in four and five fathom water, and places very convenient for laying a veffel on thore, where the tide rifes and falls feven feet at the full and change of the moon. We could not determine, whether any confiderable ftream of frefh water came into this river out of the country; but we faw a number of fmall rivulets iffue from the adjacent hills. Near the mouth of this river, on the eaft fide, we found a little Indian village,
1769. confifting of fmall temporary fheds, where we landed, and

November. Friday 10. were received by the people with the utmoft kindnefs and hofpitality: they treated us with a flat fhell-fifh of a moft delicious tafte, fomewhat like a cockle, which we eat hot from the coals. Near this place is a high point or peninfula, projecting into the river, and upon it are the remains of a fort, which they call Eppab or Heppah. The beft engineer in Europe could not have chofen a fituation better adapted to enable a fmall number to defend themfelves againft a greater. The fteepnefs of the cliffs renders it wholly inacceflible from the water which inclofes it on three fides; and, to the land, it is fortified by a ditch, and a bank raifed on the infide: from the top of the bank to the bottom of the ditch, is two and twenty feet; the ditch on the outfide is fourteen feet deep, and its breadth is in proportion. The whole feemed to have been executed with great judgment; and there had been a row of pickets or pallifadoes, both on the top of the bank and along the brink of the ditch on the outfide; thofe on the outfide had been driven very deep into the ground, and were inclined towards the ditch, fo as to project over it; but of thefe the thickeft pofts only were left, and upon them there were evident marks of fire, fo that the place had probably been taken and deftroyed by an enemy. If any occafion fhould make it neceffary for a fhip to winter here, or flay any time, tents might be built in this place, which is fufficiently fpacious, with great convenience, and might eafily be made impregnable to the whole country.

Satarday ir,
On the eleventh, there was fo much wind and rain that no canoe came off; but the long-boat was fent to fetch oyfters from one of the beds which had been difcovered the day before: the boat foon returned, deeply laden, and the oyflers, which were as good as ever came from Colchefter, and about the fame fize, were laid down under the booms, and the

fhip's company did nothing but eat them from the time they came on board till night, when, as may reafonably be fuppofed, great part of them were expended; this, however, gave us no concern, as we knew that not the boat only, but the fhip, might have been loaded, almoft in one tide, as the beds are dry at half ebbs

In the morning of Sunday the 12 th, two canoes came off Sunday $1 \approx$. full of people whom we had never feen before, but who appeared to have heard of us by the caution which they ufed in approaching us. As we invited them to come alongfide with all the tokens of friendfhip that we could fhew, they ventured up, and two of them came on board; the reit traded very fairly for what they had: a fmall canoe alfo eame from the other fide of the bay, and fold us fome very large filh, which they gave us to underfand they would have brought yefterday, having caught them the day before, but that the wind was fo high they could not venture to fea.

After breakfaft, I went with the pinnace and yawl, accompanied by Mr. Banksard Dr. Solander, over to the north fide of the bay, to take a view of the country, and two fortified villages which we had difcovered at a diftance. We landed. near the fmallef of them, the fituation of which was the moft beautifully romantic that can be imagined; it was built upon a fmall rock, detached from the main, and furrounded at high water. The whole body of this rock was perforated by an hollow or arch, which poffeffed much the largeft part of it; the top of the arch was above fixty feet perpendicular above the fea, which at high water flowed through the bottom of it: the whole fummit of the rock above the arch was. fenced round after their manner; but the area was not large enough to contain more than five or fix houfes: it was accef-


## ROUND THE WORLD.

fhip's company did nothing but eat them from the time they came on board till night, when, as may reafonably bc fuppofed, great part of them were expended; this, however, gave us no concern, as we knew that not the boat only, but the fhip, might have been loaded, almoft in one tide, as the beds are dry at half ebbs

In the morning of Sunday the $\mathbf{1} 2$ th, two canoes came off full of people whom we had never feen before, but who appeared to have heard of us by the caution which they ufed in approaching us. As we invited them to come alongfide with all the tokens of friendfhip that we could fhew, they ventured up, and two of them came on board; the reft raded very fairly for what they had: a fmall canoc alfo came from the other fide of the bay, and fold us fome very large fifh, which they gave us to underfland they would have brought yefterday, having caught them the day before, but that the wind was fo high they could not venture to fea.

After breakfaft, I went with the pinnace and yawl, accompanied by Mr. Banksard Dr. Solander, over to the north fide of the bay, to take a view of the country, and two fortificd villages which we had difcovered at a diftance. We landed: near the fmallef of them, the fituation of which was the moft beautifully romantic that can be imagined; it was buile upon a fmall rock, detached from the main, and furrounded at high water. The whole body of this rock was perforated by an hollow or arch, which poffeffed much the largeft part of it; the top of the arch was above fixty feet perpendicular above the fea, which at high water flowed through the bottom of it: the whole fummit of the rock above the arch was. fenced round after their manner; but the area was not large enough to contain more than five or fix houfes: it was accef-

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. $\underbrace{\text { November. }}$ Sunday 12.
fible only by one very narrow and fteep path, by which the inhabitants, at our approach, came down, and invited us into the place; but we refufed, intending to vifit a much more confiderable fort of the fame kind at about a mile's diftance. We made fome prefents however to the women, and in the mean time we faw the inhabitants of the town which we were going to, coming towards us in a body, men, women, and children, to the number of about one hundred: when they came near enough to be heard, they waved their hands and called out Horomai; after which they fat down among the bufhes near the beach : thefe ceremonies we were told were certain figns of their friendly difpofition. We advanced to the place where they were fitting, and when we came up, made them a few prefents, and afked leave to vifit their Heppah; they confented with joy in their countenances, and immediately led the way. It is called Wharretouwa, and is fituated upon a high promontory or point, which projects into the fea, on the north fide, and near the head of the bay: two fides of it are wafhed by the fea, and thefe are altogether inacceffible; two other fides are to the land: up one of them, which is very fleep, lies the avenue from the beach; the other is flat and open to the country upon the hill, which is a narrow ridge : the whole is inclofed by a pallifade about ten feet high, confifting of ftrong pales bound together with withes. The weak fide next the land is alfo defended by a double ditch, the innermoft of which has a bank and an additional pallifade; the inner pallifades are upon the bank next the town, but at fuch a diftance from the top of the bank as to leave room for men to walk and ufe their arms, between them and the inner ditch : the outermoft pallifades are between the two ditches, and driven obliquely into the ground, fo that their upper ends incline over the inner ditch: the depth of this ditch, from the bottom to
the top or crown of the bank, is four and twenty feet. Clofe within the innermoft pallifade is a flage, twenty feet high, forty feet long, and fix broad; it is fupported by ftrong pofts, and is intended as a ftation for thofe who defend the place, from which they may annoy the affailants by darts and flones, heaps of which lay ready for ufe. Another flage of the fame kind commands the fteep avenue from the beach, and flands alfo within the pallifade; on this fide of the hill there are fome little outworks and huts, not intended as advanced pofts, but as the habitations of people who for want of room could not be accommodated within the works, but who were, notwithftanding, defirous of placing themfelves under their protection. The pallifades, as has been obferved already, run round the whole brow of the hill, as well towards the fea as towards the land; but the ground within having originally been a mount, they have reduced it not to one level, but to feveral, rifing in ftages one above the other, like an amphitheatre, each of which is inclofed within its feparate pallifade; they comnunicate with each other by narrow lanes, which might cafily be ftopped up, fo that if an enemy fhould force the outward pallifade, he would have others to carry before the place could be wholly reduced, fuppofing thefe places to be obftinately defended one after the other. The only entrance is by a narrow paffage, about twelve feet long, communicating with the fteep afcent from the beach: it paffes under one of the fighting flages, and though we faw nothing like a door or gateway, it may be eafily barricaded in a manner that will make the forcing it a very dangerous and difficult undertaking. Upon the whole, this muft be confidered as a place of great ftrength, in which a fmall number of refolute men may defend themfelves againft all the force which a people with no other arms than thofe that are in ufe here
1770. could bring againft it. It feemed to be well furnifhed for a Nuvember. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Sunday } 12 \text {. }}$ fiege with every thing but water; we faw great quantities of fern root, which they eat as bread, and dried fifh piled up in heaps; but we could not perceive that they had any frefh water nearer than a brook, which runs clofe under the foot of the hill: whether they have any means of getting it from this place during a fiege, or whether they have any method of floring it within the works in gourds or other veffels, we could not learn; fome refource they certainly have with refpect to this article, an indifpenfable neceffary of life, for otherwife the laying up dry provifions could anfwer no purpofe. Upon our expreffing a defire to fee their method of attack and defence, one of the young men mounted a fighting ftage, which they call Porava, and another went into the ditch: both he that was to defend the place, and he that was to affault it, fung.the war-fong, and danced with the fame frightful gefticulations that we had feen ufed in more ferious circumftances, to work themfelves up into a degree of that mechanical fury, which, among all uncivilized nations, is the neceffary prelude to a battle; for difpaffionate courage, a ftrength of mind that can furmount the fenfe of danger, without a flow of animal fpirits by which it is extinguifhed, feems to be the prerogative of thofe who have projects of more lafting importance, and a keener fenfe of honour and difgrace, than can be formed or felt by men who have few pains or pleafures befides thofe of mere animal life, and fcarcely any purpofe but to provide for the day that is paffing over them, to obtain plunder, or revenge an infult: they will march againft each other indeed in cool blood, though they find it neceffary to work themfelves into paffion before they engage ; as among us there have been many inftances of people who have deliberately made themfelves drunk, that they might execute a project which they formed when they
they were fober, but which, while they continued fo, they did not dare to undertake.
1771. November. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Sunday } \mathrm{s} 2}$

On the fide of the hill, near this inclofure, we faw about half an acre planted with gourds and fweet potatoes, which was the only cultivation in the bay: under the foot of the point upon which this fortification flands, are two rocks, one juft broken off from the main, and the other not perfectly detached from it: they are both fmall, and feem more proper for the habitations of birds than men; yet there are houfes and places of defence upon each of them. And we faw many other works of the fame kind upon fmall iflands, rocks, and ridges of hills, on different parts of the coalt, befides many fortified towns, which appeared to be much fuperior to this.

The perpetual hoftility in which thefe poor favages, who have made every village a fort, muft neceffarily live, will account for there being fo little of their land in a fate of cultivation; and, as mifchiefs very often reciprocally produce each other, it may perhaps appear, that there being fo little land in a ftate of cultivation, will account for their living in perpetual hoftility. But it is very flrange, that the fame invention and diligence which have been ufed in the conftruction of places fo admirably adapted to defence, almof without tools, fhould not, when urged by the fame neceffity, have furnifhed them with a fingle miffile weapon except the lance, which is thrown by hand: they have no contrivance like a bow to difcharge a dart, nor any thing like a fling to affift them in throwing a ftone; which is the more furprifing, as the invention of flings, and bows and arrows, is much more obvious than of the works which thefe people conflruct, and both thefe weapons are found among much ruder nations, and in almoft every other part of the world. Befides Vol. II.

## LIEUTENANTCOOK's VOYAGE

1769. November. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Sunday } 12 \text {. }}$
the long lance and Patoo-Patoo, which have been mentioned already, they have a ftaff about five feet long, fometimes pointed, like a Serjeant's halberd, fometimes only tapering to a point at one end, and having the other end broad, and fhaped fomewhat like the blade of an oar. They have alfo another weapon, about a foot fhorter than thefe, pointed at one end, and at the other fhaped like an axe. The points of their long lances are barbed, and they handle them with fuch frength and agility, that we can match them with no: weatpon but a loaded mufquet.

After taking a flight view of the country, and loading both the boats with celery, which we found in great plenty near the beach, we returned from our excurfion, and about five o'clock in the evening got on board the fhip.
Wednef. 15 . On the 15 th, I failed out of the bay, and at the fame time had feveral canoes on board, in one of which was our friend Toiava, who faid, that as foon as we were gone he muft repair to his Heppah or fort, becaufe the friends of the man who had been fhot by Mr. Gore on the cth, had threatened to revenge his death upon him, whom they had reproached as being our friend. Off the north point of the bay, I faw a great number of iflands, of various extent, which lay fcattered to the north weft, in a direction parallel with the main as far as I could fee. I fteered north eaft for the north eaftermoft of thefe iflands; but the wind coming to the north weft, I was obliged to ftand out to fea.

To the bay which we had now left I gave the name of Mercury Bay, on account of the abfervation which we had made there of the tranfit of that planet over the fun.- It lies in latitude $36^{\circ} 47^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$; and in the longitude of $184^{\circ} 4^{\prime} \mathrm{W} .:$ there are feveral iflands lying both to the fouthward and nosthward of it, and a fmall ifland or rock in the middle of
the entrance: within this ifland the depth of water no where exceeds nine fathom: the beft anchoring is in a fandy bay, which lies juft within the fouth head, in five and four fathom, bringing a high tower or rock, which lics without the head, in one with the head, or juft hut in behind it. This place is very convenient both for wooding and watering, and in the river there is an immenfe quantity of oyfters and other fhell-fifh: I have for this reafon given it the name of Oyster River. But for a thip that wants to flay here any time, the beft and fafct place is in the river at the head of the bay; which, from the number of mangrove trees about it, I have called Mangrove River. To fail into this river, the fouth fhore muft be kept all the way on board. The country on the eaft fide of the river and bay is very barren, its only produce being fern, and a few other plants that will grow in a poor foil. The land on the north weft fide is covered with wood, and the foil being much more fertile, would doubtlefs produce all the neceffaries of life with proper cultivation : it is not however fo fertile as the lands that we have feen to the fouthward; nor do the inhabitants, though numerous, make fo good an appearance : they have no plantations; their canoes are mean, and without ornament; they fleep in the open air; and fay, that Teratu, whofe fovereignty they do not acknowledge, if he was to come among them, would kill them. This favoured our opinion of their being outlaws; yet they told us, that they had Heppahs or ftrong holds, to which they retired in time of imminent danger.

- We found, thrown upon the fhore, in feveral parts of this bay, great quantities of iron-fand, which is brought down by every little rivulet of frefh water that finds its way from the country; which is a demonftration that there is ore of

1769. November. $\underbrace{\text { M }}_{\text {Wednef. } 15}$ that metal not far inland: yet neither the inhabitants of this place, or any other part of the coaft that we have feen, know the ufe of iron, or fet the leaft value upon it; all of them preferring the moft worthlefs and ufelefs trifle, not only to a nail, but to any tool of that metal.

Before we left the bay, we cut upon one of the trees near the watering-place the fhip's name, and that of the Commander, with the date of the year and month when we were there; and, after difplaying the Englifh colours, I took a formal poffeffion of it in the name of his Britannic Majefty King George the Third.

## C H. AP. IV.

The Range from Mercury Bay to the Bay of Iflands: Anv Expedition up the River Thames: Some Account of the Indians who inbabit its Banks, and the fine Timber that grows there: Several Intervieros with the Natives on different Parts of the Coaff, and a. Skirmi/h with them upon an Ifland.

IContinued plying to windward two days to get under the land, and on the 18 th, about feven in the morning; we were abreaft of a very confpicuous promontory, being then
1769.

November:
$\underbrace{}_{\text {Satu. day 18. }}$ in latitude $36^{\circ} 26^{\prime}$, and in the direction of N. 48 W . from the north head of Mercury Bay or Point Mercury, which was diftant nine leagues: upon this point ftood many people, who feemed to take little notice of us, but talked together with great earneftnefs. In about half an hour, feveral canoes put off from different places, and came towards the fhip; upon which the people on the point alfo launched a canoe, and about twenty of them came in her up with the others. When two of thefe canoes, in which there might be about fixty men, came near enough to make themfelves heard, they fung their war-fong; but feeing that we took little notice of it, they threw a few fones at us, and then rowed off towards the fhore. We hoped that we had now done with them, but in a.fhort time they returned, as if with a fixed refolution to provoke us into a battle, animating themfelves by their fong as they had done before. Tupia, without any directions
directions from us, went to the poop, and began to expoft:late: he told them, that we had weapons which would deftroy them in a moment; and that, if they ventured to at tack us, we fhould be obliged to ufe them. Upon this, they flourifhed their weapons, and cried out, in their language, "Come on fhore, and we will kill you all:" Well, faid Tupia, but why fhould you moleft us while we are at fea? as we do not wifh to fight, we fhall not accept your challenge to come on fhore; and here there is no pretence for a quarrel, the fea being no more your property than the fhip. This eloquence of Tupia, though it greatly furprifed us, having given him no hints for the arguments he ufed, had no effect upon our enemies, who very foon renewed their battery : a mufquet was then fired through one of their boats, and this was an argument of fufficient weight, for they immediately fell aftern and left us.

From the point, of which we were now abreaft, the land trends W. $\frac{1}{2}$ S. near a league, and then S. S. E. as far as we could fee; and, befides the iflands that lay without us, we could fee land round by the S.W. as far as the N.W.; but whether this was the main or iflands, we could not then determine: the fear of lofing the main, however, made me pefolve to follow its direction. With this view, I hauled round the point and fteered to the fouthward, but there being light airs all round the compafs, we made but little progrefs.

About one o'clock, a breeze fprung up at eaft, which afterwards came to N.E. and we fteered along the fhore S. by E. and S.S. E. having from twenty-five to eighteen fathom.

At about half an hour after feven in the evening, having run feven or eight leagues fince noon, 1 anchored in twentythree fathom, not chufing to run any farther in the dark, as I had now land on both fides, forming the entrance of a
fireight, bay, or river, lying. S. by E. for on that point we could fee no land.

At day-break, on the 19th, the wind being ftill favourable, sunday re. we weighed and flood with an eafy fail up the inlet, keeping neareft to the caft fide: In a fhort time, two large canoes came off to us from the fhore; the people on board faid, that they knew Toiava very well, and called Tupia by his name. I invited fome of them on board; and as they knew they had nothing to fear from us, while they behaved honefly and peaceably, they immediately complied: I made each of them fome prefents, and difmiffed them much gratified. Other canoes afterwards came up to us from a different fide of the bay; and the people on board of thefe alfo mentioned the name of Toiava, and fent a young man into the fhip, who told us he was his grandfon, and he alfo was difmiffed with. a prefent.

Afrer having run about five leagues from the place wherewe had anchored the night before, our depth of water gradually decreafed to fix fathom ; and not chufing to go into lefs, as it was tide of flood, and the wind blew right up the inlet, I came to an anchor about the middle of the channel ${ }_{9}$ which is near eleven miles over; after which I fent two boats out to found, one on one fide, and the other on the other.

The boats not having found above three feet more water than we were now in, I determined to go no farther with the fhip, but to examine the head of the bay in the boats; for, as it appeared to run a good way inland, I thought this a favourable opportunity to examine the interior part of the country, and its produce.

At day-break, therefore, I fet out in the pinnace and long-Monday 200 boat, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia;
1769. and we found the inlet end in a river, about nine miles above

November. Monday zo. the hip: into this river we entered with the firf of the flood, and within three miles found the water perfectly frefh. Before we had proceeded more than one third of that dif. tance, we found an Indian town, which was built upon a a fmall bank of dry fand, but intirely furrounded by a deep mud, which poffibly the inhabitants might confider as a defence. Thefe people, as foon as they faw us, thronged to the banks, and invited us on fhore. We accepted the invitation, and made them a vifit notwithftanding the mud. They received us with open arms, having heard of us from our good old friend Toiava; but our ftay could not be long, as we had other ebjects of curiofity in view. We proceeded up the river till near noon, when we were fourteen miles within its entrance; and then, finding the face of the country to continue nearly the fame, without any alteration in the courfe of the ftream, which we had no hope of tracing to its fource, we landed on the weft fide, to take a view of the lofty trees which every where adorned its banks. They were of a kind that we had feen before, though only at a diftance, both in Poverty Bay and Hawke's Bay. Before we had walked an hundred yards into the wood, we met with one of them which was nineteen feet eight inches in the girt, at the height of fix feet above the ground: having a quadrant with me, I meafured its height from the root to the firft branch, and found it to be eighty-nine feet: it was as ftrait as an arrow, and tapered but very little in proportion to its height; fo that I judged there were three hundred and fifty-fix feet of folid timber in it, exclufive of the branches. As we advanced, we faw many others that were ftill larger; we cut down a young one, and the wood proved heavy and folid, not fit for mafts, but fuch as would make the fineft plank in the world. Our carpenter, who was with us, faid that the timber
timber refembled that of the pitch-pine, which is lightened by tapping; and poffibly fome fuch method might be found to lighten thefe, and they would then be fuch mafts as no country in Europe can produce. As the wood was fwampy, we could not range far; but we found many fout trees of other kinds, all of them utterly unknown to us, fpecimens of which we brought away.

The river at this height is as broad as the Thames at Greenwich, and the tide of flood as ftrong; it is not indeed quite fo deep, but has water enough for veffels of more than a middle fize, and a bottom of mud, fo foft that nothing could take damage by running afhore.

About three o'clock, we reimbarked, in order to return with the firt of the ebb, and named the river the Thames, it having fome refemblance to our own river of that name. In our return, the inhabitants of the village where we had been afhore, feeing us take another channel, came off to us in their canoes, and trafficked with us in the moft friendly manner, till they had difpofed of the few triffes they had. The tide of ebb juft carried us out of the narrow part of the river, into the channel that run up from the fea, before it was dark; and we pulled hard to reach the fhip, but meeting the flood, and a ftrong breeze at N. N. W. with fhowers of rain, we were obliged to defift; and about midnight, wंe run under the land, and came to a grappling, where we took fuch reft as our fituation would admit. At break of Tuefiay z: day, we fet forward again, and it was paft feven o'clock before we reached the fhip. We were all extremely tired, but thought ourfelves happy to be on board ; for before nine it blew fo hard that the boat could not have rowed ahead, and muft therefore either have gone afhore, or taken fhelter under it.

VoL.II. Zz About

About three o'clock, having the tide of ebb, we took up our anchor, made fail, and plied down the river till eight in the evening, when we came to an anchor again : early in the Wedref. zz. morning we made fail with the firft ebb, and kept plying till the flood obliged us once more to come to an anchor. As we had now only a light breeze, I went in the pinnace, accompanied by Dr. Solander, to the weftern fhore; but I faw nothing worthy of notice.

When I left the fhip, many canoes were about it; Mr. Banks therefore chofe to ftay on board, and traffic with the natives: they bartered their clothes and arms, chiefly for paper, and behaved with great friendfhip and honefty. But while fome of them were below with Mr. Banks, a young man who was upon the deck fole a half minute glafs which was in the binacle, and was detected juft as he was carrying it off. Mr. Hicks, who was commanding officer on board, took it into his head to punifh him, by giving him twelve lafhes with a cat-o'nine-tails; and accordingly ordered him to be taken to the gang-way, and tied up to the fhrouds. When the other Indians who were on board faw him feized, they attempted to refcue him; and being refifted, called for their arms, which were handed up from the canoes, and the people of one of them attempted to come up the fhip's fide. The tumult was heard by Mr. Banks, who, with Tupia, came haftily upon the deck to fee what had happened. The Indians immediately ran to Tupia, who, finding Mr. Hicks inexorable, could only affure them, that nothing was intended againft the life of their companion ; but that it was necef. fary he thould fuffer fome punifhment for his offence, which being explained to them, they feemed to be fatisfied. The punifhment was then inflicted, and as foon as the criminal was unbound, an old man among the fpectators, who was fuppofed
fuppofed to be his father, gave him a hearty beating, and fent him down into his canoe. All the canoes then dropped a-ftern, and the people faid that they were afraid to come any more near the fhip: after much perfuafion, however, they ventured back again, but their cheerful confidence was at an end, and their ftay was hhort; they promifed indeed, at their departure, to return with fome fifh, but we faw no more of them.

On the 23 d , the wind being contrary, we kept plying down the river, and at feven in the evening, got without the N. W. point of the iflands lying on the weft fide of it. The weather being bad, night coming on, and having land on every fide of us, I thought it moft advifable to tack, and ftretch in under the point, where we anchored in nineteen fathom. At five in the morning, of the 2.qth, we weighed, and made fail to the N. W. under our courfes and double reefed top-fails, the wind being at S. W. by W. and W. S. W. a ftrong gale and fqually. As the gale would not permit us to come near the land, we had but a flight and diftant view of it from the time when we got under fail till noon, during a run of twelve leagues, but we never once loft fight of it. At this time, our latitude, by obfervation, was $36^{\circ} 15^{\prime} 20^{\prime \prime}$, we were not above two miles from a point of land on the main, and three leagues and an half from a very high inland, which bore N. E. by E.: in this fituation we had twenty-fix fathom water: the fartheft point on the main that we could fee bore N. W. but we could perceive feveral fmall iflands lying to the north of that direction. The point of land of which we were now a-breaft, and which I called Point Rodney, is the N. W. extremity of the river Thames; for under that name I comprehend the deep bay which terminates in the frefh water ftream, and the N. E. extremity is the promontory which we paffed when we entered it, and
1760. November.
$\underbrace{}_{\text {Wednef } 22}$

Thurfday :3.
1769. which I called Cape Colville, in honour of the Right HoNovember. $1 \begin{aligned} & 1 \text { riday 24. }\end{aligned}$ nourable Lord Colville.

Cape Colville lies in latitude $36^{\circ} 26^{\prime}$, longitude $194^{\circ} 27^{\prime}$; it rifes directly from the fea to a confiderable height, and is remarkable for a lofty rock, which ftands to the pitch of the point, and may be diftinguifhed at a very great diftance. From the fouth point of this Cape the river runs in a direct line S . by E . and is no where lefs than three leagues broad for the diftance of fourteen leagues above the Cape, and there it is contracted to a narrow ftream, but continues the fame courfe through a low flat country, or broad valley, which lies parallel with the fea coaft, and the end of which we could not fee. On the eaft fide of the broad part of this river the land is tolerably high and hilly; on the weft fide it is rather low, but the whole is covered with verdure and wood, and has the appearance of great fertility, though there were but a few fmall fpots which had been cultivated. At the entrance of the narrow part of the river the land is covered with mangroves and other fhrubs; but farther, there are immenfe woods of perhaps the fineft timber in the world, of which fome account has already been given: in feveral places the wood extends to the very edge of the water, and where it is at a little diftance, the intermediate fpace is marfhy, like fome parts of the banks of the Thames in England: it is probable that the river contains plenty of fifh, for we faw poles fluck up in many places to fet nets for catching them, but of what kinds I do not know. The greateft depth of water that we found in this river was fix and twenty fathom, which gradually decreafed to one fathom and an half: in the mouth of the frefh water ftrean it is from four to three fathom, but there are large flats and fand banks lying before it. A fhip of moderate draught may, notwithflanding, go a long way up this river with a flowing tidc,
tide, for it rifes perpendicularly near ten feet, and at the full and change of the moon, it is high water about nine o'clock.

$$
\underbrace{\substack{17690 . \\ \text { Norember. }}}_{\text {Friday } 24_{0}}
$$

Six leagues within Cape Colville, under the eaftern fhore, are feveral fmall iflands, which, together with the main, feem to form good harbours; and oppofite to thefe iflands, under the weftern fhore, lie other iflands, by which it is alfo probable that good harbours may be formed: but if there are no harbours about this river, there is good anchoring in every part of it where the depth of water is fufficient, for it is defended from the fea by a chain of iflands of different ex-. tent, which lie crofs the mouth of it, and which I have, for that reafon, called Barrier Islands: they ftretch N. W. and S. E. ten leagues. The fouth end of the chain lies N. E. between two and three leagues from Cape Colville; and the north end lies N. E. four leagues and an half from Point Rodney. Point Rodney lies W. N. W. nine leagues from Cape Colville, in latitude $36^{\circ} 15^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $184^{\circ} 53^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.

The natives refiding about this river do not appear to be numerous, confidering the great extent of the country. But they are a ftrong, well-made, and active people, and all of them paint their bodies with red oker and oil from head to foor, which we had not feen before. Their canoes were large and well built, and adorned with carving, in as good a tafte as any that we had feen upon the coaft.

We continued to ftand along the fhore till night, with the main land on one fide, and iflands on the other, and then anchored in a bay, with fourteen fathom and a fandy bottom. We had no fooner come to an anchor, than we tried our lines, and in a fhort time caught near one hundred fifh, which the people called Sea-bream; they weighed from fix to eight pounds a piece, and confequently would fupply the whole fhip's company with food for two days. From the fuccès

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. November. linty 24.
fuccefs of our lines here, we called the place Bream Bay: the two points that form it lic north and fouth, five leagues from each other; it is every where of a good breadth, and between three and four leagues deep: at the bottom of it there appears to be a river of frefh water. The north head of the bay, called Bream Head, is high land, and remarkable for feveral pointed rocks, which ftand in a range upon the top of it: it may alfo be known by fome fmall iflands which lie before if, called the Hen and Chickens, one of which is high, and terminates in two peaks. It lies in latitude $35^{\circ} 46^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$., and at the diftance of feventeen leagues and an half from Cape Colville, in the direction of N. 4 I W.

The land between Point Rodney and Bream Head, an extent of ten leagues, is low, and wooded in tufts, with white fand banks between the fea and the firm land. We faw no inhabitants, but many fires in the night; and where there are fires, there are always people.
At day-break, on the 25 th, we left the bay, and fteered along fhore to the northward: we found the variation of the compafs to be $12^{\circ} 42^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$. At noon, our latitude was $36^{\circ}$ $3^{6}$ S., Bream Head bore fouth, diftant ten miles; and we faw fome fmall iflands, to which I gave the name of the Poor Knights, at N.E. by N. diftant three leagues; the northermoft land in fight bore N. N. W.: we were in this place at the diftance of two miles from the fhore, and had twenty-fix fathom water.

The country appeared low, but well covered with wood: we faw fome ftraggling houfes, three or four fortified towns, and near them a large quantity of cultivated land.

In the evening, feven large canoes came off to us, with atout two hundred men: fome of them came on board, and fad that they had heard of us. To two of them, who ap-
peared to be Chiefs, I gave prefents; but when thefe were gone out of the fhip, the others became exceedingly troublefome. Some of thofe in the canoes began to trade, and, ac-
1769. November. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Saturday } 25}$ cording to their cuftom, to cheat, by refufing to deliver what had been bought, after they had received the price: among thefe was one who had received an old pair of black breeches, which, upon a few fmall thot being fired at him, he threw into the fea. All the boats foon after paddled off to fome diftance, and when they thought they were out of reach, they began to defy us, by finging their fong and brandifhing their weapons. We thought it advifable to intimidate them, as well for their fakes as our own, and therefore fired firf fome fmall arms, and then round fhot over their heads; the laft put them in a terrible fright, though they received no damage, except by over-heating themfelves in paddling away, which they did with aftonifhing expedition.

In the night we had variable light airs; but towards the Sunday 25 . morning a breeze fprung up at S . and afterwards at S.E. with which we procecded flowly to the northward, along the fhore.

Between fix and feven o'clock two canoes came off, and told us that they had heard of yefterday's adventure, notwithftanding which the pcople came on board, and traded very quietly and honeftly for whatever they had: foon after two canoes came off from a more diftant part of the fhore; thefe were of a much larger fize, and full of people: when they came near, they called off the other canoes which were along fide of the fhip, and after a fhort conference they all came up together. The ftrangers appeared to be perfons of a fuperior rank; their canoes were well earved with many ornaments, and they had with them a great varicty of wea-

## LIEUTENANT COOK'S VOYAGE

1769. pons: they liad patoo-patoos both of flone and whalebone, November. Sunday 26 . upon which they appeared to fet a great value; they had alfo ribs of whale, of which we had before feen imitations in wood, carred and adorned with tufts of dog's hair. Their complexions were browner than thofe of the people we had feen to the fouthward, and their bodies and faces were more marked with the black ftains which they call Amoco: they had a broad firal on each buttock; and the thighs of many of them were almoft intirely black, fome narrow lines only being left untouched, fo that at finft fight they appeared to wear ftriped breeches. With refpect to the Amoco, every different tribe feemed to have a different cuftom, for all the men, in fome canoes, feemed to be almof covered with it, and thofe in others had fcarcely a ftain, except on the lips, which were black in all of them without a fingle exception. Thefe gentlemen, for a long time, refufed to part with any of their weapons, whatever was offered for them; at laft, however, onc of them produced a piece of talc, wrought into the fhape of an ax, and agreed to fell it for a piece of cloth: the cloth was handed over the fhip's fide, but his honour immediately put off his canoe with the ax. We had recourfe to our ufual expedient, and fired à mufket ball over the canoe, upon which it put back to the fhip, and the piece of cloth was returned; all the boats then went afhore, without offering any further intercourfe.

At noon, the main land extended from S. by E. to N. W. by W. a remarkable point of land bearing W. diftant four or five miles; at three we paffed it, and I gave it the name of Cape Bret, in honour of Sir Piercy. The land of this Cape is confiderably higher than any part of the adjacent coait: at the point of it, is a high romed hillock, and N. E. by N. at the diftance of about a mile, is a fmall high ifland or rock, which, like icveral that have already been defcribed, was
perforated
perforated quite through, fo as to appear like the arch of a bridge. This Cape, or at leaft fome part of it, is by the natives called Motugogogo, and it lies in latitude $35^{\circ} 10^{\prime} 30^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $185^{\circ} 25^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. On the weft fide of it is a large and pretty deep bay, lying in S. W. by W. in which there appeared to be feveral fmall iflands: the point that forms the N. W. entrance, lies $W \cdot \frac{\div}{4} \mathrm{~N}$. at the diftance of three or four leagues from Cape Bret, and I diftinguifhed it by the name of Point Pococке. On the weft fide of the bay we faw feveral villages, both upon illands and the main, and feveral very large canoes came off to us, full of people, who made a better appearance than any we had feen yet: they were all flout and. well-made; their hair, which was black, was ticd up in a bunch on the crown of their heads, and ftuck with white feathers. In each of the canoes were two or three Chiefs, whofe habits were of the beft fort of cloth, and covered with dog's fkin, fo as to make an agreeable appearance: moft of thefe people were marked with the Amoco, like thofe who had been alongfide of us before: their manner of trading was alfo equally fraudulent; and the officers neglecting either to punifh or fright them, one of the midfhipmen who had been defrauded -in his bargain, had rccourfe, for revenge, to an expedient which was equally ludicrous and fevere: he got a fifhing line, and when the man who liad cheated him was clofe under the fhip's fide in his canoe, he heaved the lead with fo good an aim that the hook caught him by the backfide; he then pulled the line, and the man holding back, the hook broke in the fhank, and the beard was left fticking in the flefl.

During the courfe of this day, though we did not range more than fix or eight leagues of the coalt, we had alongfide and on board the fhip between four and five hundred of Vol. II.
the
1769. the natives, which is a proof that this part of the country is well inhabited.

At eight o'clock the next morning, we were within a mile of a group of iflands which lie clofe under the main, at the diftance of two and twenty miles from Cape Brer, in the direction of N . W. by W. $\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{~W}$. At this place, having but little wind, we lay about two hours, during which time feveral canoes came off, and fold us fome fifh, which we called Cavalles, and for that reafon I gave the fame name to the iflands. Thefe people were very infolent, frequently threatening us, even while they were felling their fifla; and when fome more canoes came up, they began to pelt us with ftones. Some fmall fhot were then fired, and hit one of them while he had a ftone in his hand, in the very action of throwing it into the Thip: they did not, however, defift, till fome others had been woundedi, and then they went away, and we flood off to fea.

The wind being directly againft us, we kept plying to windward till the 29 th, when we had rather loft than gained ground; I therefore bore up for a bay which lies to the weftward of Cape Bret; at this time it was about two leagues toleeward of us; and at about eleven o'clock we anchored under the fouth weft fide of one of the many iflands which line it on the fouth eaft, in four fathom and an half water; we fhoaled our water to this depth all at once, and if this had not happened $I$ fhould not have come to an anchor fo foon. The Mafter was immediately fent out with two boats to found, and he foon difcovered that we had got upon a bank, which runs out from the north weft end of the ifland, and that on the outfide of it there was from eight to ten fathons,

## ROUND THE WORLD.

In the mean time the natives, to the number of near four hundred, crouded upon us in their canoes, and fome of them were admitted on board: to one, who feemed to be a Chief, I gave a piece of broad cloth, and diftributed fome triffing prefents among the reft. I perceived that fome of thefe people had been about the fhip when fhe was off at fea, and that they knew the power of our fire-arms, for the very fight of a gun threw them into manifeft confufion: under this impreflion they traded very fairly; but the people in one of the canoes took the opportunity of our being at dinner to tow away our buoy: a mufket was fired over them without effect, we then endeavoured to reach them with fome fmall fhot, but they were too far off: by this time they had got the buoy into their canoe, and we were obliged to fire a mufket at them with ball: this hit one of them, and they immediately threw the buoy over board: a round fhot was then fired over them, which ftruck the water and went afhore. Two or three of the canoes immediately landed their people, who tran about the beach, as we imagined, in fearch of the ball. Tupia called to them, and affured them that while they were honelt they fhould be fafe, and with a little perfuafion many of them returned to the hip, and their behaviour was fuch as left us no reafon to fufpect that they intended to give us any farther trouble.

After the fhip was removed into deeper water, and properly fecured, I went with the pinnace and yawl, manned and armed, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, and landed upon the ifland, which was about three quarters of a mile diftant: we obferved that the canoes which were about the fhip, did not follow us upon our leaving her, which we thought a good fign; but we had no fooner landed than they crouded to different parts of the ifland and came on thore. We were in a little cove, and in a few minutes were
furrounded by two or three hundred people, fome rufhing from behind the heads of the cove, and others appearing on the tops of the hills: they were all armed, but they came on in fo confufed and ftraggling a manner that we fearcely fufpected they meant us any harm, and we were determined that hoftilities flould not begin on our parr. We marched towards them, and then drew a line upon the fand between them and us, which we gave them to underftand they were not to pafs: at firft they continued quiet, but their weapons were held ready to ftrike, and they feemed to be rather irrefolute than peaceable. While we remained in this ftate of fufpenfe, another party of Indians came up, and now growing more bold as their number increafed, they began the dance and fong, which are their preludes to a battle: ftill, however, they delayed the attack, but a party ran to each of our boats, and attempted to draw them on fhore; this feemed to be the fignal, for the people about us at the fame time began to prefs in upon our line: our fituation was now become too critical for us to remain longer inactive, I therefor difcharged my mufket, which was loaded with fmall fhot, at one of the forwardeft, and Mr. Banks and two of the men fired immediately afterwards: this made them fall back in fome confurion, but one of the Chiefs, who was at the diftance of about twenty yards, rallied them, and running forward waving his patoo-patoo, and calling loudly to his companions, led them to the charge. Dr. Solander, whofe piece was not yet difcharged, fired at this champion, who flopped fhort upon feeling the fhot, and then ran away with the reft: they did not however difperfe, but got together upon a rifing ground, and feemed only to want fome leader of refolution to renew their attack. As they were now beyond the reach of fimall fhot, we fired with ball, but as none of them took place they fill continued in a body, and in
this fituation we remained about a quarter of an hour: in the mean time the fhip, from whence a much greater number of Indians were feen than could be difcovered in our fituation, brought her broad-fide to bear, and intirely difperfed them, by firing a few fhot over their heads. In this flairmifh only two of the Indians were hurt with the fmall fhot, and not a fingle life was loft, which would not have been the cafe if I had not reftrained the men, who, either from fear or the love of mifchief, fhewed as much impatience to deftroy them as a fportfman to kill his game. When we were in quiet poffeffion of our cove, we laid down our arms and began to gather celery, which grew here in great plenty: after a little time we recollected to have feen fome of the people hide themfelves in a cave of one of the rocks, we therefore went towards the place, when an old Indian, who proved to be the Chief that I had prefented with a piece of broad cloth in the morning, came out with his wife and his brother, and in a fupplicating pofture put themfelves under our protection. We fpoke kindly to them, and the old man then told us that he had another brother, who was one of thofe that had been wounded by the fmall fhor, and enquired with much folicitude and concern if he would die. We affured him that he would not, and at the fame time put into his hand both a mufket ball and fome fmall fhot, telling him, that thofe only who were wounded with the ball would die, and that the others would recover; at the fame time affuring him, that if we were attacked again, we fhould certainly defend ourfelves with the ball, which would wound them mortally. Having now taken courage, they came and fat down by us, and as tokens of our perfect amity, we made them prefents of fuch trifles as we happened to have about us.
1769.
n overber. $\underbrace{\text { Novenber. }}_{\text {Wednef. } z_{0}}$

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1769. November. $\underbrace{}_{\text {Wedner. } 29}$.

Soon after we re-imbarked in our boats, and having rowed to another cove in the fame ifland, climbed a neighbouring hill, which commanded the country to a confiderable diftance. The profpect was very uncommon and romantic, confifting of innumerable iflands, which formed as many harbours, where the water was as fmooth as a mill-pool: we faw alfo many towns, fcattered houfes, and plantations, the country being much more populous than any we had feen. One of the towns was very near us, from which many of the Indians advanced, taking great pains to fhew us that they were unarmed, and in their geftures and countenances expreffing great meeknefs and humility. In the mean time fome of our people, who, when the Indians were to bé punifhed for a fraud, affumed the inexorable juftice of a Lycurgus, thought fit to break into one of their plantations, and dig up fome potatoes: for this offence I ordered each of them to be punifhed with twelve lafhes, after which two of them were difcharged; but the third, infifting that it was no crime in an Englifhman to plunder an Indian plantation, though it was a crime in an Indian to defraud an Englifhman of a nail, I ordered him back into his confinement, from which I would not releafe him till he had received fix lafhes more.

Sharday 30.
On the 3oth, there being a dead calm, and no probability of our getting to fea, I fent the Mafter, with two boats to found the harbour; and all the forenoon had feveral canoes about the fhip, who traded in a very fair and friendly manner. In the evening we went afhore upon the main, where the people received us very cordially; ivut we found nothing worthy of notice.
In this bay we were detained by contrary winds and calms feveral days, during which time our intercourfe with the

## ROUND THE WORLD.

natives was continued in the mof peaceable and friendly manner, they being frequently about the fhip, and we afhore, both upon the iflands and the main. In one of our vifits to the continent, an old man fhewed us the inftrument they ufe in flaining their bodies, which exactly refembled thofe that were employed for the fame purpofe at Otaheite. We faw alfo the man who was wounded in attempting to fteal our buoy: the ball had paffed through the flefhy part of his arm, and grazed his breaft; but the wound, under the care of Nature, the beft furgeon, and a fimple diet, the beft nurfe, was in a good flate, and feemed to give the patient neither pain nor apprehenfion. We faw alfo the brother of our old Chief, who had been wounded with fmall fhot in our fkirmifh: they had ftruck his thigh obliquely, and though feveral of them were flill in the flefh, the wound feemed to be attended with neither danger nor pain. We found among their plantations the morus papyrifera, of which thefe people, as well as thofe of Otaheite, make cloth; but here the plant feems to be rare, and we faw no picces of the cloth large enough for any ufe but to wear by way of ornament in their ears.

Having one day landed in a very diffant part of the bay; the people immediately fled, except one old man, who accompanied us wherever we went, and feemed much pleafed with the little prefents we made him. We came at laft to a little fort, built upon a fmall rock, which at high water was furrounded by the fea, and acceffible only by a ladder: we perceived that he eyed us with a kind of reflefs folicitude as we approached it, and upon our expreffing a defire to enter it, he told us that his wife was there: he faw that our curiofity was not diminifhed by this intelligence, and after fome hefitation, he faid, if we would promife to offer no indecency he would accompany us: our promife was readily given,

## LIEUTENANTCOOK's VOYAGE

1760. and he immediately led the way. The ladder confifted of November. $\xrightarrow{\text { Prarer }}$ Thurduay 30. fteps faftened to a pole, but we found the afcent both difficult and dangerous. When we entered we found three women, who, the moment they faw us, burft into tears of terror and furprize: fome kind words and a few prefents foon removed their apprehenfions, and put them into good humour. We examined the houfe of our old friend, and by his intereft two others, which were all that the fortification contained, and having diftributed a few more prefents, we parted with mutual fatisfaction.

December. I uelday 5 .

At four o'clock in the morning of the 5 th of December, we weighed, with a light breeze, but it being variable with frequent calms, we made little way. We kept turning out of the bay till the afternoon, and about ten o'clock we were fuddenly becalmed, fo that the fhip would neither wear nor flay, and the tide or current fetting ftrong, fhe drove towards land fo faft, that before any meafures could be taken for her fecurity fhe was within a cable's length of the breakers: we had thirteen fathom water, but the ground was fo foul that we did not dare to drop our anchor ; the pinnace therefore was immediately hoifted out to take the thip in tow, and the men, fenfible of their danger, exerting themfelves to the utmoft, and a faint breeze fpringing up off the land, we perceived with unfpeakable joy that fhe made head way, after having been fo near the fhore that Tupia, who was not fenfible of our hair's breadth efcape, was at this very time converfing with the people upon the beach, whofe voices were diftinctly heard, notwithftanding the roar of the breakers. We now thought all danger was over, but about an hour afterwards, juft as the man in the chains had cried " feventeen fathom," the fhip fruck. The fhock threw us all into the utmoft confternation; Mr. Banks, who had undreffed himfelf and was ftepping into bed, ran haftily up to
the deck, and the man in the chains called out "five fathom;" by this time, the rock on which we had ftruck being to windward, the fhip went off without having received the leaft damage, and the water very foon deepened to twenty fathom.

This rock lies half a mile W. N. W. of the northermoft or outermoft ifland on the fouth eaft fide of the bay. We had light airs from the land, with calms, till nine o'clock the Wedner. 6 . next morning, when we got out of the bay, and a breeze fpringing up at N. N. W. we flood out to fea.

This, bay, as I have before obferved, lies on the weft fide of Cape Bret, and I named it the Bay of Islands, from the great number of iflands which line its fhores, and form feveral harbours equally fafe and commodious, where there is room and depth for any number of fhipping. That in which we lay is on the fouth weft fide of the fouth weftermoft ifland, called Matuaro, on the fouth caft fide of the bay. I have made no accurate furvey of this bay, being difcouraged by the time it would coft me; I thought alfo that it was fufficient to be able to affirm that it afforded us good anchorage, and refrefhment of every kind. It was not the feafon for roots, but we had plenty of fifh, moft of which, however, we purchafed of the natives, for we could catch very little ourfelves either with net or line. When we fhewed the natives our feine, which is fuch as the King's fhips are generally furnifhed with, they laughed at it, and in triumph produced their own, which was indeed of an enormous fize, and made of a kind of grafs, which is very ftrong: it was five fathom deep, and by the room it took up, it could not be lefs than three or four hundred fathom long. Fifhing feems incleed to be the chief bufinefs of life in this part of the country; we faw about all their towns a great

$$
\text { VoL, II. } \quad 3 \mathrm{~B}
$$

number

## LIEUTENANT COOK'S VOYAGE

number of nets, laid in heaps like hay-cocks, and coverect with a thatch to keep them from the weather, and we fearcely entered a houfe where fome of the people were not employed in making them. The fifh we procured here were fharks, fting-rays, fea-bream, mullet, mackrel, and fome others.

The inhabitants in this bay are far more numerous than in any other part of the country that we had before vifited; it did not appear to us that they were united under one head, and though their towns were fortified, they feemed to live rogether in perfect amity.

It is high water in this bay at the full and change of the moon, about eight o'clock, and the tide then rifes from fix to eight feet perpendicularly. It appears, from fuch obfervations as I was able to make of the tides upon the feacoaft, that the flood comes from the fouthward; and I have reafon to think that there is a current which comes from the weftward, and fets along the fhore to the S. E. or S.S.E. as the land happens to lie.

CHAP.

## C H A P. V.

## Range from the Bay of Iflands round North Cape io 2ueen Cbarlotte's Sound ; and a Defcription of that Part of the Coaft.

ON Thurfday the 7 th of December, at noon, Cape Bret bore S.S.E. $\frac{s}{2}$ E. diftant ten miles, and our latitude, by obfervation, was $34^{\circ} 59^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. ; foon after we made feveral obfervations of the fun and moon, the refult of which made our longitude $185^{\circ} 36^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. The wind being againift us, we had made but little way. In the afternoon, we ftood in fhore, and fetched clofe under the Cavalles, from which iflands the main trends W. by N.: feveral canoes put off and followed us, but a light breeze fpringing up, I did not chufe to wait for them. I kept flanding to the W. N. W. and N. W. till the next morning ten o'clock, when I tacked and food Friday 8. in for the flore, from which we were about five leagues diftant. At noon, the weftermoft land in fight bore W. by S. and was about four leagues diftant. In the afternoon, we had a gentle breeze to the weft, which in the evening came to the foutli, and continuing fo all night, by day-light Saturday g. brought us pretty well in with the land, feven Ieagues to the weftward of the Cavalles, where we found a deep bay running in S. W. by W. and W.S. W. the bottom of which we could but juft fee, and there the land appeared to be low and level. To this bay, which I called Doubteess Bay, the chtrance is formed by two points, which lic W.N. W. and E.S.E. and are five miles diftant from each other. The

$$
3 \mathrm{~B} 2 \quad \text { wined }
$$

1769. December. Thurday 7.
wind not permitting us to look in here, we fteered for the weftermoft land in fight, which bore from us W. N. W. about three leagues, but before we got the length of it it fell calm.

While we lay becalmed, feveral canoes came off to us, but the people having heard of our guns, it was not without great difficulty that they were perfuaded to come under our flern: after having bought fome of their cloaths, as well as their fifh, we began to make enquiries concerning their country, and learnt, by the help of Tupia, that, at the diftance of three days rowing in their canoes, at a place called Moore-whennes, the land would take a fhort turn to the fouthward, and from thence extend no more to the weft. This place we coneluded to be the land difcovered by Taf man, which he called Cape Maria van Diemen, and finding thefe people fo intelligent, we inquired farther, if they knew of any country befides their own: they anfwered, that they never had vifited any other, but that their anceftors had told them, that to the N. W. by N. or N. N. W. there was a country of great extent, called Ulimaroa, to which fome people had failed in a very large canoe; that only part of them returned, and reported, that after a paffage of a month they had feen a country where the people eat hogs. Tupia then enquired whether thefe adventurers brought any hogs with them when they returned; they faid No: then, replied Tupia, your flory is certainly falfe, for it cannot be believed that men who came back from an expedition without hogs, had ever vifited a country where hogs were to be procured. It is however remarkable, notwithftanding the fhrewdnefs of Tupia's objection, that when they mentioned hogs it was not by defcription but by name, calling them Boonh, the name which is given them in the South-fea iflands; but if

## ROÚND THE WORLD.

the animal had been wholly unknown to them, and they had had no communication with people to whom it was known, they could not poffibly have been acquainted with the name.
1769. December: $\underbrace{\text { December. }}_{\text {Saturday } 9 .}$

About ten o'clock at night, a breeze fprung upat W. N. W. with which we flood off north; and at noon the next day, the Sunday :c. Cavalles bore S.E. by E. diftant eight leagues; the entrance of Doubtlefs Bay S. by W. diftant three leagues; and the north weft extremity of the land in fight, which we judged to be the main, bore N.W. by W.: our latitude by obfervation was $34^{\circ} 44^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. In the evening, we found the variation to be $12^{\circ} 41^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$. by the azimuth, and $12^{\circ} 40^{\prime}$ by the amplitude.

Eally in the morning, we food in with the land, feven Monday if, leagues to the weftward of Doubtlefs Bay, the bottom of which is not far diftant from the bottom of another large bay, which the fhore forms at this place, being feparated only by a low neck of land, which juts out into a peninfula that I have called Knuckle Point. About the middle of this bay, which we called Sandy Bay, is a high mountain, ftanding upon a diftant fhore, to which I gave the name of Mount Camel. The latitude here is $34^{\circ} 51^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and longitude $186^{\circ} 50^{\prime}$. We had twenty-four and twenty-five fathom water, with a good bottom ; but there feems to be nothing in this bay that can induce a hhip to put into it; for the land about it is utterly barren and defolate, and, except Mount Camel, the fituation is low: the foil appears to be nothing but white fand, thrown up in low irregular hills and narrow ridges, lying parallel with the fhore. But baren and defolate as this place is, it is not without inhabitants: we faw one village on the weft fide of Mount Camel, and another on the eaft fide; we faw alfo five canoes full of people, who pulled after the fhip, but could not come up with us. At
1769. December. $\underbrace{\text { Decrarer }}_{\text {Monday }}$ Monday 11.
nine o'clock, we tacked and ftood to the northward; and at noon, the Cavalles bore S.E. by E. diftant thirteen leagues; the north extremity of the land in fight, making like an ifland, bore N.W. $\div$ N. diftant nine leagues; and Mount Camel bore S.W. by S. diftance fix leagues.

The wind being contrary, we kept plying northward till Tuefday ${ }^{2} 2$. five o'clock in the evening of the 1 oth, when, having made very little way, we tacked and food to the N. E. being two leagues to the northward of Mount Camel, and about a mile and a half from the fhore, in which fituation we had two and twenty fathom water.

At ten, it began to blow and rain, which brought us under double reefed topfails; at twelve, we tacked and flood to the weftward till feven the next morning, when we tacked and ftood again to the N.E. being about a mile to windward of the place where we tacked laft night. Soon after it blew very hard at N.N.W. with heavy fqualls and much rain, which brought us under our courfes, and fplit the maintopfail; fo that we were obliged to unbend it and bend another: at ten, it became more moderate, and we fet the topfails, double reefed : at noon, having ftrong gales and heavy weather, we tacked and food to the weftward, and had no land in fight for the firft time fince we had been upon this coaft.

We had now flrong gales at W. and W.S. W.; and at half an hour paft three we tacked and flood to the northward. Soon after, a fimall ifland lying off Knuckle Point bore S. $\frac{\cdot}{2} \mathrm{~W}$. diftant half a league. In the evening, having filit the fore and mizen topfails, we brought the fhip under her courfes; and at midnight, we wore, and food to the fouthward till Thurday $\mathrm{I}_{1}$. five in the morning; when we tacked and flood to the N.W. and faw land bearing fouth, at the diftance of cight or nine
leagues; by this we difcovered that we had fallen much to the leeward fince yefterday morning. At noon, our latitude by obfervation was $34^{\circ} 6^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$.; and the fame land which we had feen before to the N. W. now bore S. W. and appeared to be the northern extremity of the country. We had a large fwell rolling in from the weftward, and therefore concluded that we were not covered by any land in that quarter. At eight in the evening, we tacked and ftood to the weftward, with as much fail as we could bear; and at noon the next day, we were in latitude $34^{\circ} 10^{\circ}$, longitude $185^{\circ} 45^{\circ} \mathrm{W}$. and by eftimation about feventeen leagues from the land, notwithftanding our utmoft endeavours to keep in with it.

On the 16 th, at fix in the morning, we faw land from the maft-head, bearing S. S.W.; and at noon it bore S. by W. diftant fourteen leagues: while we were ftanding in for the fhore we founded feveral times, but had no ground with ninety fathom. At eight, we tacked in a hundred and eight fathom, at about three or four miles from the fhore, which was the fame point of land that we had to the N. W. before we were blown off. At noon it bore S. W. diftant about three miles'; Mount Camel bore S. by E. diftant about eleven leagues, and the weftermoft land in fight bore S. 75 W .; the latitude by obfervation was $34^{\circ} 20^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. At four o'clock, we tacked and flood in fhore, in doing which, we met with a ftrong rippling, and the fhip fell faft to leeward, which we imputed to a current fetting eaft. At eight, we tacked and ftood off till eight the next morning; when we tacked and ftood in, being about ten leagues from the land: at noon, the point of land which we were near the day before, bore S.S.W. diftant five leagues. The wind ftill continued at weft; and at feven o'clock, we tacked in thirty-five fathom, when the point of land which has been mentioned before, bore N.W. by N. diftant four or five miles; fo that we had not gained
1769. one inch to windward the laft twenty-four hours, which confirmed our opinion that there was a current to the eaftward. The point of land I called North Cape, it being the northern extremity of this country. It lies in latitude $34^{\circ} 22^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $186^{\circ} 55^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and thirty-one leagues diftant from Cape Bret, in the direction of N. 63 W . It forms the north point of Sandy Bay, and is a peninfula jutting out N. E. about two miles, and terminating in a bluff head that is flat at the top. The ifflmus which joins this head to the main land is very low, and for that reafon the land of the Cape, from feveral fituations, has the appearance of an ifland. It is ftill more remarkable when it is feen from the fouthward, by the appearance of a high round ifland at the S.E. point of the Cape; but this alfo is a deception ; for what appears to be an ifland is a round hill, joined to the Cape by a low narrow neck of land. Upon the Cape we faw a Hippah or village, and a few inhabitants; and on the fouth eaft fide of it there appears to be anchorage, and good fhelter from the fouth weft and north weft winds.
Thurday 2 2. We continued to fland off and on, making N. W. till noon on the 21 ft , when North Cape bore S. 39 E. diftant thirry-eight Saturday $_{23}$. Ieagues. Our fituation varied only a few leagues till the 23 d, when, about feven o'clock in the evening, we faw land from Sunday 24 . the maft-head, bearing S. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. At cleven the next morning, we faw it again, bearing S.S.E. at the diftance of cight leagues: we now flood to the S.W.; and at four o'clock, the land bore S.E. by S. diftant four leagues, and proved to be a fmall ifland, with other iflands or rocks, ftill fmaller, lying off the fouth weft end of it, and another lying off the north caft end, which were difcovered by Tafman and called the Three Kings. The principal ifland lies in latitude $34^{\circ} 1 z^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $187^{\circ} 48^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and diftant fourteen or fifteen leagucs from North Cape, in the direction of W. 14 N. At midnight, we

## ROUND THE WORLD.

tacked and ftood to the N. E. till fix the next morning, which was Chriftmas day, when we tacked and food to the fouthward. At noon, the Three Kings bore E. 8 N. diftant five or fix leagues. The variation this morning by the azimuth was $1 I^{\circ}{ }^{2} 5^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$.

On the 26 th, we ftood to the fouthward clofe upon a wind;
${ }^{176} 9$. December. Monday 25. and at noon, were in latitude $35^{\circ} 10^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $188^{\circ} 20^{\circ} \mathrm{W}$. the Three Kings bearing N. 26 W . diftant twenty-two leagues. In this fituation we had no land in fight; and yet, by obfervation, we were in the latitude of the Bay of Illands; and by my reckoning but twenty leagues to the weftward of North Cape: from whence it appears, that the northern part of this ifland is very narrow ; for otherwife we muft have feen fome part of the weft fide of it. We flood to the fouthward till twelve at night, and then tacked and food to the northward.

At four o'clock in the morning, the wind frefhened, and at nine, blew a torm; fo that we were obliged to bring the fhip to under her mainfail. Our courfe made good between noon this day and yefterday was S.S.W. $\frac{7}{2}$ W. diftance eleven miles. The Three Kings bore N. 27 E. diftant feventy-feven miles. The gale continued all this day, and till two the next morning, when it fell, and began to veer to the fouthward and S. W. where it fixed about four, when we made fail and fteered eaft in for the land, under the fore-fail and mainfail; but the wind then rifing, and by eight o'clock being increafed to a hurricane, with a prodigious fea, we were obliged to take in the main-fail; we then wore the fhip, and brought her to with her head to the north weft. At noon the gale was fomewhat abated, but we had ftill heavy fqualls. Our courfe made good this day, was north, a little eafterly, twenty-nine miles; latitude by account $34^{\circ} 50^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. Vol. II.

Wednef. 27 . Thurfday 28 .
1769. longitude $188^{\circ} 27^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.; the Three Kings bore N. 41 E. diftant

December. Thurfday 28. Tharday 23. Friday 29. fifty-two miles. At feven o'clock in the evening, the wind being at S.W. and S.W. by W. with hard fqualls, we wore and lay on the other tack; and at fix the next morning fpread more fail. Our courfe and diftance fince yefterday was E. by N. twenty-nine miles. In the afternoon, we had hard fqualls at S. W.; and at eight in the evening, wore and food
Saturday 30 . to the N.W. till five the next morning; and then wore and ftood to the S.E. At fix, we faw the land bearing N.E. diftant about fix leagues, which we judged to be Cape Maria Van Diemen, and which correfponded with the account that had been given of it by the Indians. At midnight we wore Sunday 21 . and flood to the S.E. And on the next day at noon, Cape Maria VanDiemen bore N.E. by N. diftant about five leagues. At feven in the evening, we tacked and flood to the weftward, with a moderate breeze at S. W. by S. and S.W. Mount Camel then bore N. 83 E. and the northermoft land, or Cape Maria Van Diemen, N. by W.; we were now diftant from the neareft land about three leagues, where we had fomething more than forty fathom water; and it muft be remarked, that Mount Camel, which when feen on the other fide did not feem to be more than one mile from the fea, feemed to be but little more when feen from this fide; which is a demonftration that the land here cannot be more than two or three miles broad, or from fea to fea.
${ }^{1770}$. Januery. Monday 1.

At fix o'clock in the morning of January the $1 \mathrm{ft}, 1770$, being New-year's Day, we tacked and food to the eaflward, the Three Kings bearing N. W. by N. At noon, we tacked again, and ftood to the weftward, being in laritude $34^{\circ} 37^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$; the Three Kings bearing N. W. by N at the diftance of ten or eleven leagues; and Cape Maria Van Diemen N. 31 E. diftant about four leagues and an half: in this fituation we had fifty-four fathom water.

During this part of our navigation two particulars are very remarkable; in latitude $35^{\circ} \mathrm{S}$. and in the midtt of fummer, I met with a gale of wind, which for its flrength and continuance was fuch as I had fcarcely ever been in before, and we were three weeks in getting ten leagues to the weftward, and five weeks in getting fifty leagues, for at this time it was fo long fince we paffed Cape Bret. During the gale, we were happily at a confiderable diftance from the land, otherwife it is highly probable that we fhould never have returned to relate our adventures.
At five o'clock in the evening, having a frech breeze to the weftward, we tacked and flood to the fouthward: at this time North Cape bore E. $\frac{3}{4} \mathrm{~N}$. and juft open of a point that lies three leagues W. by N. from it.

This Cape, as I have obferved before, is the northermof extremity of this country, and the caftermoft point of a peninfula, which runs out N. W. and N. W. by N. feventeen or eighteen leagues, and of which Cape Maria Van Diemenis the weftermoft point. Cape Maria lies in latitude $34^{\circ} 30^{\circ} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $187^{\circ} 18^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.; and from this point the land trends away S.E. by S. and S.E. beyond Mount Camel, and is every where a barren fhore, confifting of banks of white fand.
On the 2 d , at noon, we were in latitude $35^{\circ} 17^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. and Cape Tueflay . Maria bore north, diftant about fixteen leagues, as near as we could guefs; for we had no land in fight, and did not dare to go nearer, as a frefh gale blew right on fhore, with a rolling fea. The wind continued at W.S. W. and S. W. with frequent fqualls; in the evening we fhortened fail, and at midnight tacked, and made a trip to the N.W. till two in the morning, when we wore and flood to the fouthward. At break of day, we made fail, and elged away, in order to make

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

land ; and at ten o'clock, we faw it, bearing N.W. It ap. peared to be high, and at noon extended from N. to E. N.E. diftant by eftimation eight or ten leagues. Cape Maria then bore N. $2^{\circ} 30^{\prime}$ W. diftant thirty-three leagues; our latitude by obfervation was $3^{6^{\circ}} 2^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. About feven o'clock in the evening, we were within fix leagues of it; but having a frefh gale upon it, with a rolling fea, we hauled our wind to the S.E. and kept on that courfe clofe upon the wind all night, founding feveral times, but having no ground with one hundred, and one hundred and ten fathom.

Thurday 4.
At eight o'clock the next morning, we were about five leagues from the land, and off a place which lies in latitude $36^{\circ} 25^{\circ}$ and had the appearance of a bay or inlet. It bore eaft; and in order to fee more of it, we kept on our courfe till cleven o'clock, when we were not more than three leagues from it, and then difcovered that it was neither inlet nor bay, but a tract of low land, bounded by higher lands on each fide, which produced the deception. At this time, we tacked and flood to the N.W.; and at noon, the land was not diftant more than three or four leagues. We were now in latitude $36^{\circ} 31^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $185^{\circ} 50^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. Cape Maria bore N. 25 W . diftant forty-four leagues and an half; fo that the coaft mult be almoft ftrait in the direction of S.S.E. $\frac{3}{4}$ E. and N.N. W. $\frac{3}{4}$ W. nearly. In about latitude $35^{\circ} 45^{\prime}$ is fome high land adjoining to the fea; to the fouthward of which the fhore is alfo high, and has the moft defolate and inhofpitable appearance that can be imagined. Nothing is to be feen but hills of fand, on which there is fcarcely a blade of verdure; and a vaft fea, impelled by the wefterly winds, breaking upon it in a dreadful furf, renders it not only forlorn, but frightful; complicating the idea of danger with defolation, and imprefling the mind at once with a fenfe of mifery
mifery and death. From this place I fteered to the northward, refolving never more to come within the fame diftance of the coaft, except the wind fhould be very favourable indeed. I food under a frefh fail all the day, hoping to get an offing by the next noon, and we made good a courfe of a hundred and two miles N. 38 W . Our latitude by obfervation was $35^{\circ} 10^{\circ} \mathrm{S}$.; and Cape Maria bore N. ro E. diftance forty-one miles. In the night, the wind fhifted from S.W. by S . to S . and blew frefh. Our courfe to the noon of the Friday 5 . 5 th was N. 75 W. diftance eight miles.

At day-break on the 6th, we faw the land which we took to be Cape Maria, bearing N, N. E. diftant eight or nine leagues: and on the 7 th, in the afternoon, the land bore sunday 7 . eaft: and fome time after, we difcovered a turtle upon the water ; but being awake, it dived inftantly, fo that we could not take it. At noon, the high land, which has juft been mentioned, extended from N. to E. at the diftance of five or fix leagues; and in two places, a flat gave it the appearance of a bay or inlet. The courfe that we made good the laft four and twenty hours was S. 33 E. fifty-three miles; Cape Maria bearing N. 25 W. diftant thirty leagues.

We failed within fight of land all this day, with gentle gales between the N. E. and N. W.; and by the next noon had failed fixty-nine miles, in the direction of S. 37 E.; our latitude by obfervation was $36^{\circ} 39^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. The land which on the $4^{\text {th }}$ we had taken for a bay, now bore N.E. by N. diftant five leagues and an half; and Cape Maria N. 29 W. fortyfeven leagues.

On the 9 th, we continued a fouth eaft courfe till cight Tueftay $g$. o'clock in the evening, having run feven leagues fince noon, with the wind at N. N.E. and N. and being within three or four leagues of the land, which appeared to be low and

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1770. fandy. I then fteered S.E. by S. in a direction parallel with the coaft, having from forty-eight to thirty-four fathom water, with a black fandy bottom. At day-break the next moming, we found ourfelves between two and three leagues from the land, which began to have a better appearance, rifing in gentle flopes, and being covered with trees and herbage. We faw a fmoke and a few houfes, but it appeared to be but thinly inhabited. At feven o'clock, we fteered S. by E. and afterwards S . by W . the land lying in that direction. At nine, we were abreaft of a point which rifes with an eafy afcent from the fea to a confiderable height: this point, which lies in latitude $37^{\circ} 43^{\prime}$, I named Woody Head. About eleven miles from this Head, in the direction of S. W. $\frac{1}{2} \mathrm{~W}$. lies a very fmall ifland, upon which we faw a great number of gannets, and which we therefore called Gannet Island. At noon, a high craggy point bore E.N.E. diftant about a league and a half, to which I gave the name of Albetross Point: it lies in latitude $38^{\circ} 4^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $184^{\circ} 42^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.; and is diftant feven leagues in the direction of S. 17 W . from Woody Head. On the north fide of this point the fhore forms a bay, in which there appears to be anchorage and fhelter for flipping. Our courfe and diftance for the laft twentyfour hours was S. 37 E. fixty-nine miles ; and at noon this day Cape Maria bore N. 30 W. diftant eighty-two leagues. Between twelve and one, the wind fhifted at once from N. N.E. to S.S.W. with which we flood to the weftward till four o'clock in the afternoon; and then tacked, and ftood again in fhore till feven; when we tacked again and food to the weftward, having but little wind. At this time, Albetrofs Point bore N.E. diflant near two leagues, and the fouthermoft land in fight bore S.S. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. being a very high mountain, and in appearance greatly refembling the Pike of Teneriffe. In this fituation we had thirty fathom water, and
having but little wind all night, we tacked about four in the morning, and ftood in for the fhore. Soon after, it fell calm; and being in forty-two fathom water, the people caught a few fea-bream. At eleven, a light breeze fprung up from the weft, and we made fail to the fouthward. We continued to fteer S. by W. and S. S. W. along the fhore, at the diftance of about four leagues with gentle breezes from between N. W. and N. N. E. At feven in the evening, we faw the top of the Peak to the fouthward, above the clouds which concealed it below. And at this time, the fouthermoft land in fight bore $S$. by W. the variation, by feveral azimuths which were taken both in the morning and the evening, appeared to be $14^{\circ} 15^{\prime}$ eafterly.

At noon on the 12 th, we were diftant about three leagues from the thore which lies under the Peak, but the Peak itfelf was wholly concealed by clouds: we judged it to bear about S.S.E.; and fome very remarkable peaked iflands, which lay under the ihore, bore E.S. E. diftant three or four leagues. At feven in the evening we founded, and had forty-two fathom, being diftant from the fhore between two and three leagues: we judged the Peak to bear eaft; and after it was dark, we faw fires upon the fhore.

At five o'clock in the morning we faw, for a few minutes, the fummit of the Peak, towering above the clouds, and covered with. fnow. It now bore N.E.; it lies in latitude $39^{\circ} 16^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $185^{\circ} 15^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.; and I named it Mount Egmont, in honour of the Earl. It feems to have a large bafe, and to rife with a gradual afcent; it lies near the fea, and is furrounded by a flat country, of a pleafant appearance, being clothed with verdure and wood, which renders it the more confpicuous, and the fhore under it forms a large cape, which I have named Cape Egmont. It lies.
1770. January.
Thurday 1s.

## Friday:zo

 S.S.UW.
## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1770. S.S.W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. twenty-feven leagues diflant from Albetrofs Point, $\underbrace{\text { January. }}_{\text {Saturday } 13 .}$ and on the north fide of it are two fimall iflands, which lie near a remarkable point on the main, that rifes to a confiderable height in the form of a fugar-loaf. To the fouthward of the Cape, the land trends away S.E. by E. and S.S.E. and feems to be every where a bold fhore. At noon, Cape Egmont bore about N.E.; and in this direction, at about four leagues from the fhore, we had forty fathom of water. The wind during the reft of the day was from W. to N.W. by W. and we continued to fteer along the fhore S.S. E. and S. E. by E. keeping at the diftance of between two and three leagues. At half an hour after feven, we had another tranfient view of

## Sgmont

Sunday 14. Mount Edgcombe, which bore N. 17 W. diftant about ten leagues.

At five the next morning, we feered S. E. by S. the coaft inclining more foutherly; and in about half an hour, we faw land bearing S.W. by S. for which we hauled up. At noon the north welt extremity of the land in fight bore S. 63 W . and fome high land, which had the appearance of an ifland lying under the main, bore S.S.E. diftant five leagues. We were now in a bay, the bottom of which bearing fouth we could not fee, though it was clear in that quarter. Our latitude by obfervation was $40^{\circ} 27^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $184^{\circ} 39^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. At eight in the evening, we were within two leagues of the land which we had difcovered in the morning, having run ten leagues fince noon: the land which then bore S. 63 W . now bore N. 59 W . at the diftance of feven or eight leagues, and had the appearance of an ifland. Between this land and Cape Egmont lies the bay, the weit fide of which was our fituation at this time, and the land here is of a confiderable height, and diverfified by hill and valley.


## C H A P. VI.

Tranfactions in Queen Cbarlotte's Sound: Paffage tbrough the Streight which divides the two IJlands, and back to Cape Turnagain: Horrid Cufom of the Inbabitants: Remarkable Melody of Birds: AVijt to a Heppah, and many other Particulars.

THE fhore at this place feemed to form feveral bays, into one of which I propofed to carry the fhip, which was become very foul, in order to careen her, and at the fame time repair fome defects, and recruit our wood and water.

With this view, I kept plying on and off all night, having: from eighty to fixty-three fathom. At day-break the next morning, I food for an inlet which runs in S. W.; and at Munday $1_{5}$. eight I got within the entrance, which may be known by a reef of rocks, ftretching from the north weft point, and fome rocky iflands which lie off the fouth eaft point. At nine o'clock, there being little wind, and what there was being variable, we were carried by the tide or current within two cables' length of the north weft fhore, where we had fifty-four fathom water, but by the help of our boats we got clear. Juft at this time we faw a fea-lion rife twice near the fhore, the head of which exactly refembled that of the male which has been defcribed in the Account of Lorl Anfon's Voyage. We alfo faw fome of the natives in a canoe crofs the bay, and a village fituated upon the point of an ifland which lies feven or eight miles within the entrance. At noon, we were the length of this ifland, but there being little wind, the boats Vol. II.
1770. January. Sunday_14.


## C H A P. VI.

Tranfactions in शueen Cbarlotte's Sound: Paffage througb the Streigbt wbich divides the two Iflands, and back to Cape Turnagain: Horrid Cufom of the Inbabitants: Remarkable Melody of Birds: A Vifit to a Heppah, and many other Particulars.

THE fhore at this place feemed to form feveral bays, into
one of which I propofed to carry the fhip, which was become very foul, in order to careen her, and at the fame
${ }^{1770} 0$. $\underbrace{\text { January. }}$ Sunday. 14 . time repair fome defects, and recruit our wood and water.

With this view, I kept plying on and off all night, having: from eighty to fixty-three fathom. At day-break the next morning, I food for an inlet which runs in S. W.; and at Monday $\mathrm{I}_{5}$. eight I got within the entrance, which may be known by a reef of rocks, ftretching from the north weft point, and fome rocky iflands which lie off the fouth eaft point. At nine o'elock, there being little wind, and what there was being variable, we were carried by the tide or current within two cables' length of the north weft fhore, where we had fifty-four fathom water, but by the help of our boats we got clear. Juft at this time we faw a fea-lion rife twice near the fhore, the head of which exactly refembled that of the male which has been defcribed in the Account of Lord Anfon's Voyage. We alfo faw fome of the natives in a canoe crofs the bay, and a village fituated upon the point of an ifland which lies feven or eight miles within the entrance. At noon, we were the length of this illand, but there being little wind, the boats

Vol. II. 3 D were
1770. were ordered ahead to tow. About one o'clock, we hauled January. Monday 15. clofe round the fouth weft end of the ifland ; and the inhabitants of the village which was built upon it, were immediately up in arms. About two, we anchored in a very fafe and convenient cove, on the north weft fide of the bay, and facing the fouth weft end of the ifland, in eleven fathom water, with foft ground, and moored with the flecam anchor.
We were about four long cannon fhot diftant from the the village or Heppah, from which four canoes were immediately difpatched, as we imagined to reconnoitre, and if they fhould find themfelves able, to take us. The men were all well armed, and dreffed nearly as they are reprefented in the figure publifhed by Tafman; two corners of the cloth which they wrapped round the body were paffed over the fhoulders from behind, and being brought down to the upper edge of it before, were made faft to it juft under the breaft; but few, or none, had feathers in their hair. They rowed round the fhip feveral times, with their ufual tokens of menace and defiance, and at laft began the affault by throwing fome fones: Tupia expoftulated with them, but apparently to very little purpofe; and we began to fear that they would oblige us to fire at them, when a very old man in one of the boats expreffed a defire of coming on board. We gladly encouraged him in his defign, a rope was thrown into his canoe, and the was immediately alongfide of the fhip: the old man rofe up, and prepared to come up the fhip's fide, upon which all the ref cxpoftulated with great vehemence againt the attempt, and at laft haid hold of him, and held him back : he adbered however to his purpofe with a calm but feady perfeverance, and having at lengrla difengaged himfelf, he came on board. We received him with all pollible expreftions of friendhip and kindnefs, and

## ROUND THE WORLD.

after fome time difmiffed him, with many prefents to his companions. As foon as he was returned on board his canoe, the people in all the reft began to dance, but whether as a token of enmity or friendfhip we could not certainly determine, for we had feen them dance in a difpofition both for peace and war. In a fhort time, however, they retired to their fort, and foon after I went on fhore, with moft of the gentlemen, at the bottom of the cove, a-breaft of the thip.

We found a fine fream of excellent water, and wood in the greateft plenty, for the land here was one foreft, of vait cxtent. As we brought the feine with us, we hauled it once or twice, and with fuch fuccefs that we caught near three hundred weight of fifh of different forts, which was equally diftributed among the fhip's company.

At day-break, while we were bufy in careening the íhip, Tuefday 16. three canoes came off to us, having on board above a hundred men, befides feveral of their women, which we were pleafed to fee, as in general it is a fign of peace; but they foon afterwards became very troublefome, and gave us reafon to apprehend fome mifchief from them to the people that were in our boats alongfide the fhip. While we were in this fituation, the long-boat was fent afhore with fome water calks, and fome of the canocs attempting to follow her, we found it neceffary to intimidate them by firing fome fmall fhot: we were at fuch a diftance that it was impoffible to hurt them, yet our reproof had its effect, and they defifted from the purfuit. They had fome fifh in their cenoes which they now offered to fell, and which, though it flunk, we confented to buy: for this purpofe a man in a fmall boat was fent among them, and they traded for fome time very fairly. At length, however, one of them watching his opportunity,

[^10]1770. January. Tuefday 16 .
fnatched at fome paper which our market-man held in his hand, and miffing it, immediately put himfelf in a pofture of defence, flourifhing his patoo-patoo, and making fhow as if he was about to ftrike; fome fmall hot were then fired at him from the fhip, a few of which ftruck him upon the knee: this put an end to our trade, but the Indians ftill continued near the fhip, rowing round her many times, and converfing with Tupia, chiefly concerning the traditions they had among them with refpect to the antiquities of their country. To this fubject they were led by the enquiries which Tupia had been directed to make, whether they had ever feen fuch a veffel as ours, or had ever heard that any fuch had been upon their coaft. Thefe enquiries were all anfwered in the negative, fo that tradition has preferved among them no memorial of Tafman; though, by an obfervation made this day, we find that we are only fifteen miles fouth of Murderer's bay, our latitude being $41^{\circ} 5^{\prime} 32^{\prime \prime}$, and Murderer's bay, according to his account, being $40^{\circ} 50^{\prime}$.

The women in thefe canoes, and fome of the men, had a head-drefș which we had not before feen. It confifted of a bunch of black feathers, made up in a round form, and tied upon the top of the head, which it intirely covered, and made it twice as high, to appearance, as it was in reality.

After dinner, I went in the pinnace with Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Tupia, and fome others, into another cove, about two miles diftant from that in which the fhip lay: in our way we faw fomething floating upon the water, which we took for a dead feal, but upon rowing up to it, found it to be the body of a woman, which to all appearance had been dead fome days. We proceeded to our cove, where we went on fhore, and found a fmall family of Indians, who appeared to be greatly terrified at our approach, and all ran
away except one. A converfation between this perfon and Tupia foon brought back the reft, except an old man and a child, who ftill kept aloof, but flood pecping at us from the woods. Of thefe people, our curiofity naturally led us to enquire after the body of the woman which we had feen floating upon the water: and they acquainted us, by Tupia, that the was a relation, who had died a natural death; and that, according to their cuftom, they had tied a flone to the body, and thrown it into the fea, which ftone, they fuppofed, had by fome accident been difengaged.

This family, when we came on fhore, was employed in dreffing fome provifions: the body of a dog was at this time buried in their oven, and many provifion bafkets food near it. Having caft our eyes carelefsly into one of thefe, as we paffed it, we faw two bones pretty cleanly picked, which did not feem to be the bones of a dog, and which, upon a nearer examination, we difcovered to be thofe of a human body. At this fight we were ftruck with horror, though it was only a confirmation of what we had heard many times fince we arrived upon this coaft. As we could have no doubt but the bones were human, neither could we have any doubt but that the flefh which covered them had been eaten. They were found in a provifion bafket; the flefh that remained appeared manifeftly to have been dreffed by fire, and in the griftles at the end, were the marks of the teeth which had gnawed them: to put an end however to conjecture, founded upon circumftances and appearances, we directed Tupia to afk what bones they were; and the Indians, without the leaft hefitation, anfwered, the bones of a man: they were then afked what was become of the flefl, and they replied that they had eaten it; but, faid Tupia, why did you not eat the body of the woman which we faw floating upon the water: the woman, faid they, died of difeafe; befides, fhe

## LIEUTENANT COOK*s VOYAGE

$-1770$. January. Teefday 16 .
was our relation, and we eat only the bodies of our enemies, who are killed in battle. Upon enquiry who the man was whofe bones we had found, they told us, that about five days before, a boat belonging to their enemies came into the bay, with many perfons on board, and that this man was one of feven whom they had killed. Though ftronger evidence of this horrid practice prevailing among the inhabitants of this coaft will fcarcely be required, we have ftill ftronger to give. One of us alked if they had any human bones with the flefh remaining upon them, and upon their anfwering us that all had been eaten, we affected to difbelieve that the bones were human, and faid that they were the bones of a dog; upon which one of the Indians with fome eagernefs took hold of his own forc-arm, and thrufting it towards us, faid, that the bone which Mr. Banks held in his hand had belonged to that part of a human body; at the fame time, to convince us that the flefh had been eaten, he took hold of his own arm with his tecth, and made fhew of eating: he alfo bit and gnawed the bone which Mr. Banks had taken, drawing it through his mouth, and fhewing, by figns, that it had afforded a delicious repaft; the bone was then returned to Mr. Banks, and he brought it away with him. Among the perfons of this family, there was a woman who had her arms, legs, and thighs frightfully cut in feveral places; and we were told that fhe had inflicted the wounds upon herfelf, in token of her grief for the lofs of her hufband, who had been lately killed and eaten by their enemies, who had come from fome place to the eaftward, towards which the Indians pointed.

The flip lay at the diftance of fomewhat lefs than a quarWednef. 17. ter of a mile from the fhore, and in the morning we were awakened by the finging of the birds: the number was incredible, and they feemed to frain their throats in emulation

## ROUNDTHE WORLD.

of each other. This wild melody was infinitely fuperior to any that we had ever heard of the fame kind; it feemed to be like fmall bells, moft exquifitely tuned, and perhaps the diftance, and the water between, might be no fmall advantage to the found. Upon enquiry, we were informed that the birds here always began to fing about two hours after midnight, and continuing their mufick till fun-rife, were, like our nightingales, filent the reft of the day. In the forenoon, a fmall canoe came off from the Indian village to the nhip, and among thofe that were in it, was the old man who lad firtt come on board at our arrival in the bay. As foon as it came alongfide, Tupia renewed the converfation, that had paffed the day before, concerning their practice of eating human flefh, during which they repeated what they had told us already: but, faid Tupia, where are the heads? do you cat them too? Of the heads, faid the old man, we cat only the brains, and the next time I come I will bring fome of them to convince you that what we have told you is truth. After fome farther converfation between thefe people and Tupia, they told him that they expected their enemies to come very fhortly, to revenge the dath of the feven men whom they had killed and caten.

On the 8 8th, the Indians were more quiet than ufual, no canoc came near the fhip, nor did we fee one of them moring on the fhore, their fifhing, and other ufual occupations being totally fufpended. We thought they expected an attack on this day, and therefore attended more diligently to what pafied on fiore; but we faw nothing to gratify cu: curiofty.

After breakfaft, we went out in the pimace, to take a view of the bat, which was of valt extent, and confited of numberlefs fmall harbours and coves, in every dircction : we
1770. confined onr excurfion, however, to the weftern fide, and the country being an impenetrable foreft where we landed, we could fee' nothing worthy of notice: we killed, however, a good number of thaggs, which we faw fitting upon their nefls in the trees, and which, whether roafted or flewed, we confidered as very good provifion. As we were returning, we faw a fingle man in a canoe fifhing; we rowed up to him, and to our great furprize he took not the leaft notice of us, but even when we were alongfide of him, continued to follow his occupation, without adverting to us any more than if we had been invifible. He did not, however, appear to be either fullen or ftupid: we requefled him to draw up his net, that we might examine it, and he readily complied: it was of a circular form, extended by two hoops, and about feven or eight feet in diameter: the top was open, and feaears were faftened to the bottom as a bait: this he let down fo as to lie upon the ground, and when he thought filh enough were affembled over it, he drew it up by a very gentle and even motion, fo that the fifh rofe with it, fcarcely fenfible that they were lifted, till they came very rear the furface of the water, and then were brought out in the net by a fudden jerk. By this fimple method he had caught abundance of fifh, and indeed they are fo plenty in this bay, that the catching them requires neither much labour nor art.
This day, fome of our people found in the fkirts of the wood, near a hole or oven, three human hip-bones, which they brought on board; a farther proof that thefe people eat human flefh: Mr. Monkhoufe, our Surgeon, alfo brought on board, from a place where he faw many deferted houfes, the hair of a man's head, which he had found, among many other things, tied up to the branches of trees.

In the morning of the igth, we fet up the armourer's forge to repair the braces of the tiller, and other iron-work, all hands on board being ftill bufy in careening, and other neceffary operations about the veffel : this day, fome Indians came on board from another part of the bay, where they faid there was a town which we had not feen: they brought plenty of fifh, which they fold for nails, having now acquired fome notion of their ufe; and in this traffick no unfair practice was attempted.

In the morning of the 2oth, our old man kept his promife, and brought on board four of the heads of the feven people who had been fo much the fubject of our enquiries: the hair and flefh were entire, but we perceived that the brains had been extracted; the flefh was foft, but had by fome method been preferved from putrefaction, for it had no difagreeable fmell. Mr. Banks purchafed one of them, but they fold it with great reluctance, and could not by any means be prevailed upon to part with a fecond; probably they may be preferved as trophies, like the fcalps in America, and the jaw-bones in the iflands of the South Seas. Upon examining the head which had been bought by Mr. Banks, we perceived that it had received a blow upon the temples, which had fractured the fkull. This day we made another excurfion in the pinnace, to furvey the bay, but we found no flat large enough for a potatoe garden, nor could we difcover the leaft appearance of cultivation: we met not a fingle Indian, but found an excellent harbour; and about cight o'clock in the evening returned on board the fhip.

On the 2 ift, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went a fifhing seavas ar. with hook and line, and caught an immenfe quantity every where upon the rocks, in between four and five fathom water: the feine was hauled every night, and feldom failed

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1770. January. Sunday 21 .
to fupply the whole fhip's company with as much fifl as they could eat. This day all the people had leave to go on fhore at the watering-place, and divert themfelves as they fhould think proper.
Monday 22. In the morning of the 22d, I fet out again in the pinnace, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, with a defign. to examine the head of the inlet, but after rowing about four or five leagues without fo much as coming in fight of it, the wind being contrary, and the day half fpent, we went on fhore on the fouth eaft fide, to try what might be difcovered. from the hills.
Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander immediately employed themfelves in botanizing near the beach, and I , taking a feaman with me, afcended one of the hills: when I reached the fummit, I found a view of the inlet intercepted by hills, which in that direction rofe ftill higher, and which wererendered inacceffible by impenetrable woods; I was, however, abundantly compenfated for my labour, for I faw the fea on the eaftern fide of the country, and a paffage leading from it to that on the weft, a little to the eaftward of the entrance of the inlet where the fhip now lay. The main land which lay on the fouth eaft fide of this inlet, appeared to be a narrow ridge of very high hills, and to form part of the fouth weft fide of the freight ; the land on the oppofite fide. appeared to trend away eaf as far as the eye could reach; and to the fouth eaft there appeared to be an opening to the fea, which wafhed the eaftern coaft: on the eaft fide of the inlet alfo I faw fome iflands which I had before taken to be part of the main land. Having made this difcovery, I defcended the hill, and as foon as.we had taken fome refrefhment, we fet out on our return to the fhip. In our way, we csamined the harbours and coves which lie behind the
iflands that I had difcovered from the hill ; and in this rout we faw an old village, in which there were many houfes that feemed to have been long deferted: we alfo faw another village which was inhabited, but the day was too far fpent for us to vifit it, and we therefore made the beft of our way to the fhip, which we reached between eight and nine o'clock at night.
The $2_{3}$ d I employed in carrying on a furvey of the place; Tuefiay 23. and upon one of the iflands where I landed, I faw many houfes which feemed to have been long deferted, and no appearance of any inhabitant.

On the 24th, we went to vifit our friends at the Hippah or Wederer 2to village on the point of the ifland near the fhip's flation, who had come off to us on our firf arrival in the bay. They received us with the utmoft confidence and civility, fhewing us every part of their habitations, which were commodious and neat. The ifland or rock on which this town is fituated, is divided from the main by a breach or fiffure fo narrow, that a man might almoft leap from one to the other: the fides of it are every where fo fteep as to render the artificial fortification of thefe people almolt unneceffary: there was, however, one flight pallifade, and one fmall fighting-ftage, towards that part of the rock where accefs was leaft difficult.

The people here brought us out feveral human bones, the fleflh of which they had eaten, and offered them to fale; for the curiofity of thofe among us who had purchafed them as memorials of the horrid practice which many, notwithfanding the reports of travellers, have profeffed not to believe, had rendered them a kind of article of trade. In one part of this village we obferved, not without fome furprize, a crofs exactly like that of a crucifix; it was adorned with feathers,

$$
3 \mathrm{E}=\text { and }
$$

1270. and upon our enquiring for what purpofe it had been fet up; we were told that it was a monument for a man who was dead: we had before underftood that their dead were not buried, but thrown into the fea; but to our enquiry how the body of the man had been difpofed of, to whofe memory this crofs had been crected, they refufed to anfwer.

When we left thefe people, we went to the other end of the ifland, and there taking water, crofled over to the main, where we faw feveral houfes, but no inhabitants, except a few in fome flraggling canoes, that feemed to be fifhing. After viewing this place, we returned on board the fhip to dinner.

During our vifit to the Indians this day, Tupia being always of our party, they had been obferved to be continually talking of guns, and fhooting people: for this fubject of their converfation we could not at all account; and it had fo much engaged our attention, that we talked of it all the way back, and even after we got on board the fhip: we had perplexed ourfelves with various conjectures, which were all given up in their turn; but now we learnt, that on the oift one of our officers, upon pretence of going out to fifh, had rowed up to the Hippah, and that two or three canoes coming of towards his boat, his fears fuggefted that an attack was intended, in confequenee of which three mufkets were fired, one with fmall fhot, and two with ball, at the Indians, who retired with the utmoft precipitation, having probably come out with friendly intentions, for fuch their behaviour both before and afterwards expreffed, and having no reafon to expect fuch treatment from people who had always behaved to them not only. with humanity, but kindnefs, and to whom they were not confcious of having given offence.

On the 25 th, I made another excurfion along the coaft, in the pinnace, towards the mouth of the inlet, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, and going on fhore at a little cove, to fhoot fhaggs, we fell in with a large family of Indians, whofe cuflom it is to difperfe themfelves among the different creeks and coves, where fin $h_{1}$ is to be procured in the greatelt plenty, leaving a few only in the Hippah, to which the reft repair in times of danger. Some of thefe people came out a good way to meet us, and gave us an invitation to go with them to the reft of their party, which we readily accepted. We found a company of about thirty, men, women, and children; who received us with all poffible demonftrations of friendfhip: we diftributed among them a few ribands and beads, and in return, received the kiffes and embraces of both fexes, both young and old: they gave us alfo fome fifh, and after a little time we returned, much pleafed with our new acquaintance.

In the morning of the 26 th, I went again out in the boat; with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, and entered one of the bays, which lic on the eaft fide of the inlet, in order to get another fight of the ftreight, which paffed between the eaftern and weftern feas. For this purpofe, having landed at a convenient place, we climbed a hill of very confiderable height, from which we had a full view of it, with the land on the oppofite fhore, which we judged to be about four leagues diftant; but as it was hazey in the horizon, we could not fee far to the fouth eaft: I refolved however to fearch the paffage with the fhip, as foon as I fhould put to fea. Upon the top of this hill we found a parcel of loofe ftones, with which we erected a pyramid, and left in it fome mufket balls, fmall fhot, beads, and other things, which we happened to have about us, that were likely to fland the teft of time, and not being of Indian workmanfhip, would con-

Fiiday 25.
1770. vince any European who fhould come to the place and pull it down, that other natives of Europe had been there before him. When this was done, we defcended the hill, and made a comfortable neal of the fhaggs and filh which our guns and lines had procured us, and which were dreffed by the boat's crew in a place that we had appointed: in this place we found another Indian family, who received us, as ufual, with ftrong exprefiions of kindnefs and pleafure, fhewing us where to procure water, and doing us fuch other good offices as were in their power. From this place we went to the town, of which the Indians had told us, who vifited us on the igth: this, like that which we had feen before, was built upon a fmall ifland or rock, fo difficult of accefs, that we gratified our curiofity at the rifk of our necks. The Indians here alfo received us with open arms, carried us to every part of the place, and flewed us all that it contained: this town, like the other, confifted of between eighty and an hundred houfes, and had only one fighting-ftage. We happened to have with us a few nails and ribands, and fome paper, with which our guefts were fo gratified, that at our coming away they filled our boat with dried fifh, of which we perceived they had laid up great quantities.

Earurday 27 Surday 28.

Monday 29.

The 27 th and 28 th were fpent in refitting the fhip for the fea, fixing a tranfom for the tiller, getting ftones on board to put into the bottom of the bread-room, to bring the fhip more by the ftern, in repairing the cafks, and catching fifh.

On the 29th, we received a vifit from our old man, whofe name we found to be Topas, and three other natives, with whom Tupia had much converfation. The old man told us, that one of the men who had been fired upon by the officer who had vifited their Hippah, under pretence of fifhing, was dead ; but to my great comfort I afterwards difcovered that this report was not true, and that if Topà's difcourfes were
taken literally, they would frequently lead us into miftakes. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander were feveral times on fhore during the laft two or three days, not without fuccefs, but greatly circumfcribed in their walks by climbers of a moft luxuriant growth; which were fo interwoven together, as to fill up the fpace between the trees about which they grew, and render the woods altogether impaffable. This day alfo I went on thore again myfelf, upon the weftern point of the inlet, and from a hill of confiderable height, I had a view of the coaft to the N. W. The fartheft land I could fee in that quarter, was an ifland which has been mentioned before, at the diftance of about ten leagues, lying not far from the main: between this ifland and the place where I flood, I difcovered, clofe under the fhore, feveral other iflands, forming many bays, in which there appeared to be good anchorage for fhipping. After I had fet off the different points for my furvey, I erected another pile of fones, in which I left a piece of filver coin, with fome muket balls and beads, and a piece of an old pendant flying on the top. In my return to the fhip, I made a vifit to feveral of the natives, whom I faw along the fhore, and purchafed a fmall quantity of fifh.

On the $30 t h$, early in the morning, I fent a boat to one of Tuefday $y^{\circ} c_{0}$. the iflands for celery, and while the people were gathering it, about twenty of the natives, men, women, and children, landed near fome empty huts: as foon as they were on fhore, five or fix of the women fat down upon the ground together, and began to cut their legs, arms, and faces, with fhells, and fharp pieces of talc or jafper, in a terrible manner. Our people underfood that their hufbands had lately been killed by their enemies; but while they were performing this horrid ceremony, the men fet about repairing the luts, with the utmoft negligence and unconcern.
1770.

The carpenter having prepared two pofts to be left as me:morials of our laving vifited this place, I ordered them to be inferibed with the fhip's name, and the year and month; one of them I fet up at the watering-place, hoifting the Union flag upon the top of it; and the other I carried over to the ifland that lies nearef to the fea, called by the natives Motuara. I went firf to the village or Hippah, accompanied by Mr. Monkhoufe and Tupia, where I met with our old man, and told him and feveral others, by means of Tupia, that we were come to fet up a mark upon the ifland, in order to fhow to.any other fhip which fhould happen to come thither, that we lad been there before. To this they readily confented, and promifed that they never would pull it down : I then gave fomething to every one prefent; and to the old man I gave a filver threepence, dated $173^{6}$, and fome fpike nails, with the king's broad arrow cut deep upon them; things which I thought mof likely to remain long among them : I then took the poft to the higheft part of the ifland, and after fixing it firmly in the ground, I hoifted upon it the Union-flag, and honoured this inlet with the name of Quren Charlotte's Sound, at the fame time taking formal poffeffion of this and the adjacent country, in the name and for the ufe of his Majefty King George the Third. We then drank a bottle of wine to her Majefty's health, and gave the bottle to the old man who had attended us up the hill, and who was mightily delighted with his prefent.
While the poft was fetting up, we enquired of the old man concerning the paffage into the eaftern fea, the exiftence of which he confirmed; and then afked him about the land to the S. W. of the flreight, where we were then fituated: this land, he faid, confifed of two Whennuas or inlands, which might be circumnavigated in a few days, and which he called Toyy poemammos; the liecral tranflation of this word
is "the water of green talc:" and probably if we had underftood him better, we fhould have found that Tovy Poenammoo was the name of fome particular place where they got the green talc or ftone of which they make their ornaments and tools, and not a general name for the whole fouthern diftrict: he faid, there was alfo a third Whennua, on the eaft fide of the freight, the circumnavigation of which would take up many moons: this he called Eahelnomauwe; and to the land on the borders of the freight he gave the name of Tiera Witte. Having fet up our poft, and procured this intelligence, we returned on board the fhip, and brought the old man with us, who was attended by his canoe, in which, after dinner, he returned home.

On the 3 Ift , having completed our wooding, and filled all our water cafks, Ifent out two parties, one to cut and make brooms, and another to catch fifh. In the evening, we had a frong gale from the $\mathrm{N}_{\mathrm{L}} \mathrm{W}$. with fuch a heavy rain that our little wild muficians on fhore fufpended their fong, which till now we had conftantly heard during the night, with a pleafure which it was impoffible to lofe without regret.

On the ift, the gale increafed to a form, with heavy gufts February. Thurday 1. from the high land, one of which broke the hawfer, that we had fattened to the fhore, and obliged us to let go another anchor. Towards midnight, the gale became more moderate, but the rain continued with fuch vioience, that the brook which had fupplied us with water overflowed its banks, and carried away ten fmall carks which had been left there full of water, and notwithftanding we fearched the whole cove, we could never recover one of them.

On the 3 d , as I intended to fail the firft opportunity, I went Saturday ${ }_{3}$ : -ever to the Hippah on the eaft fide of the Sound, and purchafed a confiderable quantity of fplit and half-dried fifh, for VOL. II.

3 F
fca
1770. fea flores. The people here confirmed all that the old man had told us concerning the ftreight and the country, and about noon I took leave of them: fome of them feemed to be forry, and others glad, that we were going: the fifh which I had bought they fold freely, but there were fome who fherved manifeit figns of difapprobation. As we returned to the fhip, fome of us made an excurfion along the fhore to the northward, to traffick with the natives for a farther fupply of fifh; in which, however, they had no great fuccefs. In the evening, we got every thing off from the fhore, as I intended to fail in the morning, but the wind would not permit.

On the $4^{\text {th }}$, while we were waiting for a wind, we amufed ourfelves by fifhing, and gathering fhells and feeds of various Monday 5. kinds : and early in the morning of the 5 th, we caft off the hawfer, hove fhort on the bower, and carried the kedge anchor out in order to warp the fhip out of the ceve, which having done about two o'clock in the afternoon, we hove up the anchor and got under fail; but the wind foon failing, we were obliged to come to an anchor again a little above Motuara. When we were under fail, our old man Topāa came on board to take his leave of us, and as we were ftill defirous of making farther enquiries whether any memory of Tafman had been preferved among thefe people, Tupia was directed to afk him whether he had ever heard that fuch a veffel as ours had before vifited the country. To this he replied in the negative, but faid, that his anceftors had told him there had once come to this place a fmall veffel, from a diftant country, called Ulimaroa, in which were four men, who, upon their coming on fhore, were all killed: upon being afked where this diftant land lay, he pointed to the northward. Of Ulimaroa we had heard fomething before, from the people about the Bay of Iflands, who
faid that their anceftors had vifited it; and Tupia had alfo talked to us of Ulimaroa, concerning which he had fome confufed traditionary notions, not very different from thofe of our old man, fo that we could draw no certain conclufion from the accounts of either.
Soon after the fhip came to an anchor the fecond time, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went on fhore, to fee if any gleanings of natural knowlege remained, and by accident fell in with the moft agreeable Indian family they had feen, which afforded them a better opportunity of remarking the perfonal fubordination among thefe people, than had before offered. The principal perfons were a widow, and a pretty boy about ten years old: the widow was mourning for her hufband with tears of blood, according to their cuftom, and the child, by the death of its father, was become proprictor of the land where we had cut our wood. The mother and the fon were fitting upon matts, and the reft of the family, to the number of fixteen or feventeen, of both fexes, fat round them in the open air, for they did not appear to have any houfe, or other fhelter from the weather, the inclemencies of which, cuftom has probably enabled them to endure without any lafling inconvenience. Their whole behaviour was affable, obliging, and unfufpicious; they prefented each perfon with fifh, and a brand of fire to drefs it, and preffed them many times to ftay till the morning, which they would certainly have done if they had not expected the fhip to fail, greatly regretting that they had not become acquainted with them fooner, as they made no doubt but that more knowlege of the manners and difpofition of the inhabitants of this country would have been obtained from them in a day, than they had yet been able to acquire during our whole ftay upon the coaft.

## LIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1770. On the 6th, about fix o'clock in the morning, a light breeze fprung up at north, and we again got under fail, but the wind proving variable, we reached no farther than juft withcut Motuara; in the afternoon, however, a more fteady gale at N. by W. fet us clear of the Sound, which I fhall now: defcribe.

The entrance of Queen Charlotte's Sound is fituated in Iatitude $41^{\circ} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $184^{\circ} 45^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$. and near the middle of the fouth weft fide of the ftreight in which it lies. The land of the fouth eaft head of the Sound, called by the natives. Koamaroo, off which lie two fmall iflands and fome rocks, makes the narroweft part of the ftreight. From the north weft head a reef of rocks runs out about two miles, in the direction of N. E. by N. ; part of which is above the water; and part below. By this account of the heads, the Sound; will be fufficiently known: at the entrance, it is three leagues: broad, and lies in S.W. by S.S.W. and W.S.W. at leaft ten leagues, and is a collection of fome of the fineft harbours in the world, as will appear from the plan, which is laid down with all the accuracy that time and circumftances would admit. The land forming the harbour or cove in which we lay, is called by the natives Totarranue: the harbour itfelf, which I called Ship Cove, is not inferior to any in the Sound, either for convenience or fafety: it lies on the weft fide of. the Sound, and is the fouthermof of three coves, that are fituated within the illand of Motuara, which bears eaft of $\mathrm{it}_{\mathrm{o}}$. Ship Cove may be entered, either between Motuara and a long ifland, called by the natives Hamote, or between Motuara and the weftern fhore. In the laft of thefe channels, are two ledges of rocks, three fathom under water, which. may eafily be known by the fea-weed that grows upon them. In failing either in or out of the Sound, with little wind, at-
tention muft be had to the tides, which flow about nine or ten o'clock at the full and change of the moon, and rife and fall between feven and eight feet perpendicularly. The flood
1770. February-:
Tuerday 6. comes in through the freight from the S. E. and fets ftrongly over upon the north weft head, and the reef that lies off it : the ebb fets with ftill greater rapidity to the S. E. over upon the rocks and iflands that lie off the fouth eaft head. The variation of the compafs we found from good obfervation to: be $13^{\circ} 5^{\prime} \mathrm{E}$.

The land about this found, which is of fuch a height that we faw it at the diftance of twenty leagues, confifs wholly of high hills and deep vallies, well ftored with a variety of excellent timber, fit for all purpofes except mafts, for which it is too hard and heavy. The fea abounds with a varicty of fifh, fo that without going out of the cove where we lay, we caught every day, with the feine and hooks and lines, a quantity fufficient to ferve the whole fhip's company: and along the fhore we found plenty of fhags, and a few other fpecies of wild-fowl, which thofe who have long lived upon falt provifions will not think defpicable food.

The number of inhabitants fcarcely exceeds four hundred, and they live difperfed along the fhores, where their food, confifting of fifh and fern roots, is moft eafily procured; for we faw no cultivated ground. Upon any appearance of danger, they retire to their Hippahs, or forts; in this fituation we found them, and in this fituation they continued for fome time after our arrival. In comparifon of the inhabitants of other parts of this country, they are poor, and their canoes are without ornament: the little traffic we had with them: was wholly for fifh, and indecd they had fcarcely any thing elfe to difpofe of. They feemed, however, to have fome knowlege of iron, which the inhabitants of fome other parts hac

## IIEUTENANT COOK's VOYAGE

1770. Februaty. I weltay 6.
had not; for they willingly took nails for their fiff, and fometimes feemed to prefer it to every thing elfe that we could offer, which had not always been the cafe. They were at firft very fond of paper; but when they found that it was fpoiled by being wet, they would not take it: neither did they fet much value upon the cloth of Otaheite; but Englifh broad cloth, and red kerfey, were in high eftimation; which inewed that they had fenfe enough to appretiate the commodities which we offered by their ufe, which is more than could be faid of fome of their neighbours, who made a much better appearance. Their drefs has been mentioned alrcady, particularly their large round head-dreffes of fcathers, which were far from being unbecoming.

As foon as we got out of the Sound, I ftood over to the eaftward, in order to get the fireight well open before the tide of ebb came on. At feven in the evening, the two fmall iflands which lie off Cape Koamaroo, the fouth eaft head of Queen Cliarlote's Sound, bore eaft, diftant about four miles: at this time it was nearly calm, and the tide of ebb fetting out, we were, in a very fhort time, carried by the rapidity of the ftream clofe upon one of the iflands, which was a rock rifing almoft perpendicularly out of the fea: we perceived our danger increafe every moment, and had but one expedient to prevent our being dafhed to pieces, the fuccels of which a few minutes would determine. We were now within little more than a cable's length of the rock, and had more than feventy-five fathom water; but upon dropping an anchor, and veering about one hundred and fifty fathom of cable, the fhip was happily brought up: this, however, would not have faved us, if the tide which fet S. by E. had not, upon meeting with the ifland, changed its direction to S.E. and carried us beyond the firft point. In this fituation, we were not above two cables' length from the
rocks; and here we remained in the frength of the tide, which fet to the S. E. after the rate of at leaft five miles an hour, from a little after feven till near midnight, when the tide abated, and we began to heave. By three in the morning the anchor was at the bows, and having a light breeze at N. W. we made fail for the eaftern fhore; but the tide being againft us, we made but little way: the wind however afterwards frefhened, and came to N. and N. E. with which, and the tide of ebb, we were in a fhort time hurried through the narroweft part of the ftreight, and then ftood away for the fouthermoft land we had in fight, which bore from us S. by W. Over this land appeared a mountain of ftupendous height, which was covered with fnow.

The narroweft part of the freight, through which we had been driven with fuch rapidity, lies between Cape Tierawitte, on the coaft of Eahcinomauwe, and Cape Koamaroo: the diftance between them I judged to be between four or five leagues, and notwithftanding the tide, now its ftrength is known, may be paffed without much danger. It is however fafeft to keep on the north eaft fhore, for on that fide there appeared to be nothing to fear; but on the other fhore there are not only the iflands and rocks which lie off Cape Koamaroo, but a reef of rocks ftretching from thefe iflands fix or feven miles to the fouthward, at the diftance of two or three miles from the fhore, which I had difcovered from the hill when I took my fecond view of the ftreight from the eaft to the weftern fea. The length of the ftreight we had paffed I fhall not pretend to affign, but fome judgment may be formed of it from a view of the chart.

About nine leagues north from Cape Tierawitte, and under the fame fhore, is a high and remarkable ifland which may be diftinctly feen from Queen Charlotte's Sound, from which
1770. February. Wednef. 7 - which it is diftant about fix or feven leagues. This ifland; which was noticed when we paffed it on the 14th of January, I have called Entry isle.

On the eaft fide of Cape Tierawitte, the land trends away S.E. by E. about eight leagues, where it ends in a point, and is the fouthermof land on Eaheinomauwe. To this point I have given the name of Cape Palliser, in honour of my worthy friend Captain Pallifer. It lies in latitude $41^{\circ} 34^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. Iongitude $183^{\circ} 5^{\circ} \mathrm{W}$. and bore from us this day at noon S. 79 E . diftant about thirteen leagues, the fhip being then in the latitude of $41^{\circ} 27^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$.; Koamaroo at the fame time bearing $\mathrm{N} . \frac{1}{2}$ E. diftant feven or eight leagues. The fouthermoft land in fight bore S. 16 W . and the fnowy mountain S. W. At this time we were about three leagues from the fhore, and abreaft of a deep bay or inlet, to which I gave the name of Cloudy Bay, and at the bottom of which there appeared low land covered with tall trees.

At three ooclock in the afternoon we were abreaft of the fouthermof point of land that we had feen at noon, which I called Cape Campeel; it lies S. by W. diftant between twelve and thirteen leagues from Cape Koamaroo, in latitude $41^{\circ} 44^{\prime} \mathrm{S}$. longitude $183^{\circ} 45^{\prime} \mathrm{W}$.; and with Cape Pallifer forms the fouthern entrance of the ftreight, the diftance between them being between thirteen and fourteen leagues W. by S. and E. by N.

From this Cape we fteered along the fhore S.W. by S. till eight o'clock in the evening, when the wind died away. About half an hour afterwards, however, a frefh breeze fprung up at S.W. and I put the fhip right before it. My reafon for this, was a notion which fome of the officers had juft farted, that Eahicnomauwe was not an illand, and that the land might ftretch away to the S.E. from between Cape

Turnagain and Cape Pallifer, there being a face of between twelve and fifteen leagues that we had not feed. I had indeed the ftrongeft conviction that they were mintaken, not
1770. $\underbrace{\text { February. }}$ Wester. 7. only from what I had fee the find time I difcovered the freight, but from many other concurrent teftimonies that the land in queftion was an ifland; but being refolved to leave no poffibility of cloubt with refpect to an object of fuck importance, I took the opportunity of the wind's fhifting, to ftand caftward, and accordingly ftecred N. E. by E. all the night. At nine o'clock in the morning we were abreaft of Thurfay 8 . Cape Pallifer, and found the land trend away N. E. towards Cape Turnagain, which I reckoned to be diftant about twentyfix leagues: however, as the weather was hazy, fo as to prevent our feeing above four or five leagues, I fill kept ftanding to the N. E. with a light breeze at forth; and at noon Cape Pallifer bore N. 72 W . diftant about three leagues.

About three o'clock in the afternoon, three canoes came up to the hip with between thirty and forty people on board, who had been pulling after us with great labour and perfeverance for forme time: they appeared to be more cleanly, and a better class, than any we had met with fince we left the Bay of Inlands, and their canoes were also diftinguifhed by the fame ornaments which we had feed upon the northerly part of the coat. They came on board with very little invitation; and their behaviour was courteous and friendly: upon receiving prefents from us, they made us prefents in return, which had not been done by any of the natives that we had feen before. We foo perceived that our guefts had heard of us, for as foo as they came on board, they afked for Whom, the name by which nails were known among the people with whom we had trafficked: but though they had heard of nails, it was plain they had feen Vol. II.
$177^{\circ}$. February. Thurday 8. none; for when nails were given them, they afked Tupia what they were. The term Whow, indeed, conveyed to them the idea not of their quality, but only of their ufe; for it is the fame by which they diftinguifh a tool, commonly made of bone, which they ufe both as an augur and a chiffel. However, their knowing that we had Whow to fell, was a proof that their connections extended as far north as Cape Kidnappers, which was diftant no lefs than forty-five leagues; for that was the fouthermoft place on this fide the coaft where we had had any traffic with the natives. It is alfo probable, that the little knowlege which the inhabitants of Queen Charlotte's Sound had of iron, they obtained from their neighbours at Tierawitte; for we had no reafon to think that the inhabitants of any part of this coaft had the leaft knowlege of iron or its ufe before we came among them, efpecially as when it was firft offe ed they feemed to difregard it as of no value. We thousht it probable, that we were now once more in the territories of Teratu; but upon enquiring of thefe people, they faid that he was not their King. After a fhort time, they went away, much gratified with the prefents that we had made them; and we purfued our courfe along the fhore to the N. E. till eleven o'clock the next morning. About this time, the weather happening to clear up, we faw Cape Turnagain, bearing N. by E. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. at the diftance of about feven leagues: I then called the officers upon deck, and afked them, whether they were not now fatisfied, that Eahienomauwe was an ifland; they readily anfwered in the aflirmative, and all doubts being now removed, we hauled our wind to the eaftward.

## END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

Customer Name. The University of P.Hsourgh
SWOt\# 13182 Item \# 16

Title: Hawkesworth Voyages V. 2

## TREATMENT PERFORMED

Texjblock:
$\square$ Dry cleaned surface
Removed tape w.
Deacidified. $\square$ aqueous/ $\square$ non-aqueous w
$\square$ Encapsulated in polyester film
$\square$ Mended leaves/pages: Heat-Set tissue
$\square$ Lined with $\qquad$


Comments: $\qquad$
$\qquad$
$\qquad$
$\qquad$
$\qquad$
$\qquad$

Date: Apr. 1, 2004
Conservator Stefan Hobbick


[^0]:    * The celebrated navigator who difcovered this Streight was a native of Portugal, and his name, in the language of his country, was Fernando de Magalbaens; the Spaniards call him Hernando Magalbanes, and the French Magellan, which is the orthography that has been generally adopted: a Gentleman, the fifth in defcent from this great adventurer, is now living in or near London, and communicated the true name of his anceftor to Mr . Banks, with a requeft that it might be inferted in this work.

[^1]:    Vol. II.

[^2]:    Vol: II.
    Z
    While

[^3]:    Vol. II.

[^4]:    Vol. II.

[^5]:    Vol. II.

[^6]:    Vol. II.

[^7]:    Vot.. II.
    P P
    the

[^8]:    Vol. II.

[^9]:    Vol. II.
    X x
    dians

[^10]:    3 D 2
    fnatched

